

D-0  
Page 1

Eng 3.

*Medulla Historiae*  
**ANGLICANÆ.**  
Being a Comprehensive  
**HISTORY**  
OF THE  
**LIVES and REIGNS**  
OF THE  
**MONARCHS**  
OF  
**ENGLAND.**

From the Time of the Invasion thereof by  
**JULIUS CÆSAR**, to the Death  
of King **CHARLES II.**

With an Abstract of the *LIVES* of the Roman  
Emperors commanding in *BRITAIN*.

**The Third Edition**, to which is added, a Continuation  
from the Year 1678, to 1684.

**L O N D O N:**

Printed for *Abel Swalle*, at the *Unicorn*, at the West  
End of St. Paul's. 1687.



Printed for Abel Swalle at the unicorn at the west End of St Paul's.

INCHES

1    2    3    4    5    6    7    8    9    10    11    12    13    14    15

(313) 761-4700

**XEROX MICROFORMS SYSTEMS**

University Microfilms

Ann Arbor, Michigan 48106

# THE P R E F A C E.

**I**T is as natural to Man to desire Knowledge, as Bodily Sustenance ; the one being the Food of the Mind, as the other is of the Body : And the Appetites of both being homogeneous to the Principles from which they proceed ; their tendency to their several Objects, is as eager as the Faculty which produces it, is active ; so that though both flow from the Fountains of one and the same Nature ; yet the one resting in a Material Repletion, must be acknowledged more limited than the other, which admits of no bounds of Satiety.

But though Knowledge be Man's Natural Desire, and the Similary Nourishment of his better part, the Reasonable Soul ; yet it is not alike sought after by all ; nor in the same Degrees and Kind.

Some, whose Constitution has disposed them to a Habit of lascivious Sensuality, and others, whom continual Disappointments have baffled into a Neutrality and Indifference, as to

Action,

## The Preface.

Action, think it sufficient for Man to know, either how to live with Pleasure and Epicurean Ease, or to die with Affected Haughtiness and Stoical Apathy, neither of the Two regarding those Knowledges which delight Curiosity, or are useful to the Society of Mankind.

Others again, who are altogether refined into Spirit and Contemplation, think their time ill spent, unless they can be able so to anatomize Nature, as to give the Causes of Things, which either never did exist but in Appearance; or if they do, are far more profitably understood by their Effects than Principles: And these two extremes are the Preternatural Vices of Appetite; the one being the Stupidity and Defect, and the other, the Green Sickness, or Boulimia of the Desire.

They therefore whom Age, Learning, and Experience, have licentiated to be Physicians of the Mind, have taken some Latitude in prescribing Diets, according to the various Constitutions of reasonable Men; allowing those whom a Natural Disposition inclines to the light Food of Contemplation, such Studies as may nourish their Curiosity with the Airy Idea's of Philosophy and Speculative Mathematicks, and the nicer Learning of the Schools; judging that the most proper Nourishment

## The Preface.

Nourishment for Sedentary Humours, and Volatile Fancies, who covet no more, but to know for themselves, and to be guided by others: But to Men of a more Robust and Sociable Habit of Mind, who are desirous both to know and to do good to themselves, and by their quality and condition fitted for a station in the World, when Providence pleases to call them to it, they have always directed more Active and Useful Learning; such as Practical Mathematicks and History, the one for improving the Works and Inventions, and the other the Conduct and Actions of Men in Society: judging Idleness the Lethargy of the Mind, no ways to be fed, but to be cured by Discipline and Animadversion.

Now, Though Mathematicks, which tend to Operation, be of very great use in an Industrious and Flourishing State or Age; both for the glory and profit of a People; yet seeing they require a peculiar Talent of Mind to succeed in that Study, they cannot, nor ought not, be recommended to Universal Practice beyond that Mediocrity which renders Gentlemen fit, as in that, so in other parts of Arts and Sciences, to converse with Rational Company (it being impossible for one Man to be Master of all Humane Knowledges) leaving the more laborious Prosecution

## The Preface.

tion thereof to those whose Genius or Vocation invites them to that Affinity.

But of History it may be said, that  
Omne tulit punctum, nam miscuit  
utile dulcis.

it is so genuine and familiar to Men of all Estates, Age, Quality, Sex, and Condition, so agreeable to the Inclination, and suitable to the Humour of All: so delightful in the perusing, and profitable in the retention; affording Content to the Aged, Pleasure to the Young, and Experience to both: Comfort to the Disconsolate, Refreshment to the Weary, and Ease to discomposed Minds; solacing the tedious hours of Pensive Watchings; or otherwise charming anxious Thoughts, into a sweet and gentle repose; being never out of season whilst Men have Life, and the World a being; that amongst the many Elogies it hath received from the Learned Pieces of Ancient and Modern Writers; it may be justly accounted rather the Recreation than the Application of a Studious Man.

It is indeed that Telescope by which we see into distant Ages, and take up the Actions of our Forefathers, with as much evidence as the News of the last Gazette; it is the Mirror that represents the various Transactions of Times past, and shews us the Dress of Antiquity; according to which we may

## The Preface.

may rectify or adjust our present Fashions; it is the pandects of gentle and easie Institutions and Laws, which ought to oblige us as much, if not more strictly to a Conformity, than the Preceptive Sanctions of Princes; seeing the Authority of the one does but inculcate our Duty, and the other gives us innumerable Instances of the several Rewards of Virtue, and Punishments of Vice: It is, in a word, the last Will and Testament of our deceased Progenitors; which though it does not expressly leave every one of us a particular Legacy, yet it shews us how we may be possessed of their Inheritance; and according as we follow their Example, live in Reputation or Ignominy.

Inasmuch that the ruder Ages of the World, who were unacquainted with Letters, and consequently ignorant of refined Sciences, thought History, next to their Religion, the onely useful and proper Study of Mankind; And judging the forming of the Manners, and regulating the Actions of Man, to be the chief Duty and Care of Societies, they thought Documents, Precepts, and Laws too weak a Means to work so great effect, without they were confirmed and strengthened by the Examples of their Predecessors; to which prone Nature, even amongst the most Barbarous, does willingly render an implicite Veneration:

## The Preface.

tion: And therefore seeing their Libraries were their Memories, and Words their Characters, so Songs and rude Rhimes were the onely Books, whereby their Bards and Druids instructed their Children in the Histories of former Ages, making the Famous Actions of their Ancestors, so much the more the Pattern of their Conduct and Manners, as it was the Subject of their innocent Melody and Mirth: And this Custom is at this day in practice amongst the incultivated Heathens of Africa and America.

But when the kind Heavens was pleased to gratify the Industry of Man with the Invention of Letters; no Subject seemed to the Ancients, so worthy of the Prerogative of being transmitted to Posterity, as that of History; And indeed, the most Ancient that can be found of their Writings is of that kind: Whether it was that they knew no immortality, but that of Fame; or found no better way to provide with security for their Off-spring, in whom they were to live to Posterity, than by handing down to them the Methods and honest Courses, by which some attained to Honour, Wealth, and Command, whilst others by the contrary ways, lived and died in Obscurity, Poverty and Contempt.

And the desire of perpetuating the Memory, is such a glimmering glance of the Primitive,

## The Preface.

tive, but offuscated Light of Nature, that some think it a convincing Argument to prove the immortality of the Soul; it being a vain thing for any, but especially a reasonable Being, to desire that, to which it hath no natural capacity: And the rather, that the greater and more elevated Souls of all Ages have aspired as much to the perpetuating of their Fame, as they have to the purchasing of the same; Witness in Ancient times the great Alexander, who envied no man but Achilles, for the happiness he had in having Homer for his Historiographer: And since him Julius Cæsar, who notwithstanding he was tired out with the Fatigues of a continued and difficult War, yet as he thought no man able to do what he had done, so he judged none worthy to perpetuate his Memory, and to write as he Fought, but himself.

But what Satisfaction soever dying men may have in the Prospect of a lasting Name, it is certain, the living reap great benefit from the Register of their Actions; for would a Prince have Measures to govern, a Subject how to obey, a Statesman how to give Counsel, a Judge and Magistrate how to execute Justice, a Husband and Father how to Command and Cherish, a Wife and Child how to love, honour, and obey, and all Conditions of Men how to perform mutual good Offices

## The Preface.

*Offices in every kind of Society , History, and especially the trueſt and moſt Ancient of All, the Holy Scripture , is that Repository from whence they may draw the trueſt Maximes for all Duties, exemplified with the good or bad Succesſes of thoſe who have followed or transgrefſed the ſame. And thus much in ſhort of History in general.*

*But as all Histories are not of the ſame Nature, ſo neither are they of the ſame Uſe-fulneſs and Advantage : Not to mention the Ancient Poets , which are good in their way ; ſome are Fiſticious Romances, which beſides the Satisfaction they give the Author's Inventing Head , are of very little, if of any Uſe , unleſs it be to teach young Gallants to strut it in the phrase of Hero's, and Ladies to repart like a Play Book : And the Moralities, which we are told, are couched therein, are too frequently applied in Serenades, Love-Letters, and Aſſignations.*

*Others are Real Histories, or at leaſt intended to be ſuch ; and are either Ancient or Modern, Universal or Particular ; of King-doms, or of Private Families, Foreign or Do-mestick : and are all very profitable, according to the ſeveral Qualities and Capacities of the Readers ; which is a Point that needs no particular Diſcussion in this place.*

*In the writing of Histories, ſome Authors affect*

## The Preface.

*affect an exactneſs of recounting Matters with the minutest Circumstances that attend them, and of omitting nothing that can have any place in the Book ; which unleſs it be ſome conſpicuous and famous Transactions, looks like the Depoſitions of a Witneſs in a Tryal, or the Breviate of a Lawyer at the Bar, than the Annals or Chronicles of a Nation ; for it is enough for Posterity to know the memorabla Actions of a great King, or the Atchievements in a famous Battel ; with ſuch Circumstances as render them moſt conſiderable in themſelves, and ſig-nificant to the Reader ; though they be not told what kind of Beard the King wore on his Wed-ding-day, or to whom the Ground belonged, where the Battel was fought.*

*Many likewiſe puzzle both themſelves and their Readers, with a too nice inquiry into the firſt Original of Nations, and eſpecially by what new flight of Colonies, or transmi-gration of People, Islands, and Countries, discontinued from the Continent, became firſt inhabited ; and in this Search, ſo ſoon as they tranſgres the bounds of Authentick Records and Monuments of Antiquity, the reſt is no more History, but the Conjectures and Pro-babilities of the Authors. It is true, that ſince we are taught by our Religion, That all Mankind descended from Adam, and confe-quently*

## The Preface.

quently as they increased in number, by new Generations, so they successively enlarged their Habitations into remoter Regions, until the Habitable World was possest; it would be very curious for Men to know from what branch of the Stock they are descended, and not with the Ancients, who understood nothing of the Creation, believe those People, whose Original was unknown, to be Indigenæ, that is, started out of the Country they inhabited; but that being impossible to be attained to, since the Memory of Man cannot, and Letters were not invented, to preserve the Knowledge of the various Changes and Mutations of Elder Times; we should satisfy our selves (knowing that we are Men) with what we find in received Record concerning the Beginnings, Progress, and Changes of Kingdoms and States, without troubling our selves with our Ancient Relations, who were not one drop of Bloud in Kin to William the Conquerour.

The Design therefore of this little Manual of History, is not to amuse the Readers with the strange Romances of the First Peopling of this Island, nor to give a List of the Kings who reigned here, probably enough, even before Aneas, or his Son Alcanius; nor yet to burden their Memory with all the lesser Occurrences, that are fully and at large related

## The Preface.

ted in many ample Volumes of this kind; but only to serve as a Remembrancer to those who have already studied the History of England; that in a short View they may refresh and rub up their Memories, as to smaller Circumstances, by the general Heads and more remarkable Passages, which they shall here find faithfully digested in a succinct Method, both as to time and place; and for others, whose humour or leisure will not permit them to turn over larger Volumes, this small Pocket Book, if carefully and often perused, may acquaint them with as much as is necessary perhaps, for them to know of the State of this Kingdom, in relation to times past, for satisfying their own curiosity, and rendering them able to entertain others, who want the same advantages of Knowledge.

This Compend then presents the Reader with what has been most remarkable in the several Changes of Government that have happened in this Kingdom since the first Invading of the Island by Julius Cæsar; tracing down the Succession and Lives of the several Emperours, from that time till it was forsaken (because it could not be kept) by the Romans: With the several Races of the British, Saxon, Danish, and Norman Kings, till the Death of Charles the Second, our late most Gracious King. It gives likewise an Account of

### The Preface.

of all the Archbishops of Canterbury, since it was erected into a Metropolitain See : Of all the Mayors and Sheriffs of London since their First Creation, till this present year : And in a word, enough to let us see, how by the blessing of God, the prudence of Governours, and the unanimity and loyalty of the People, this Kingdom, though sometimes overclouded by home-bred Dissentions, yet has continued for many Ages, to be the Envy and Terror of its Neighbours; abounding in all the Worldly Enjoyments that were fit to be expected from a bountiful God, or to be desired by a virtuous People. To conclude, We may expect still the continuance of the same Blessings, unless our sins and wantonness bring upon us the same or worse Judgments than our Forefathers ever felt ; and instead of a delightful and fruitful Soil, turn our Land into a Barren Wilderness; and give us cause to say with the Poet,

*Infelix Iolium & steriles dominantur avenæ.*

T. N.

M E D U L -

## M E D U L L A Historiæ Anglicanæ.

### B R I T A I N.

**T**HIS most flourishing Island Britain, is bounded on the South with Normandy and France; on the East, with Germany and Denmark; upon the West, with Ireland, and the Atlantic Ocean; and on the North, with the Deucalidon Seas. The length thereof, from the Lizard-point Southward in Cornwall, to the Straith-head in Scotland, containeth 624 miles; the breadth, from the Lands-end in Cornwall in the West, unto the Island Tenet in the East, containeth 340 miles. It is sited under the 9th, and 13th Climates of the Northern temperate Zone; insomuch, that at the Summer Solstice, in the Northern parts of Scotland, there is no Night at all, but onely an obscure twilight. A Countrey it is for Air mild, for Soil fruitfull, and for length of Days pleasant and delightfull. In Winter the absence of the Sun is relieved with the warmth of its invironing Seas; and in Summer the heat is moderated by frequent showers and Sea-winds.

O happy Britain (said the old Panegyrist) and more blisfull than all other Regions! Nature hath enriched thee with all commodities of Heaven and Earth, wherein there is neither extreme cold in Winter, nor scorching heat in Summer; wherein there is such abundant plenty of Cogn, as may suffice

## B R I T A I N.

suffice both for Bread and Wine; wherein are Woods without Wild-beasts, and Fields without noisome Serpents: But infinite numbers of Milch-Cattel, and Sheep weighed down with Fleeces; and that which his most comfortable, long Days and light-some Nights. And as our English *Lucan* sings,

*The fairest Land that from her thrus't she rest,  
As if she car'd not for the World besides,  
A World within her self with wonders blest.*

This Queen of Islands was at the first called *Albion*, either from *Albion Mareoticus* who seated himself herein, or *ab albis rupibus*, from the White Rocks appearing towards the Coasts of *France*, or from *Olbion*, signifying rich or happy, in regard of its fertility, temperature and riches. Next, it was called *Britain*, either from the two British words *Pryd* and *Cain*, which signifie Beauty and White, or from the Greek word Μεταλλια signifying Metals, with which it aboundeth, or from the British word *Bryth*, that is, painted, stained, coloured (the Inhabitants of old using to dye their bodies with Woad) to which the Greeks added *Tania*, (that is, a Region) thence called *Britons-Land* or *Britanie*. At last, The Southern and best part of it (from the *Angle-Saxons* then inhabiting it) was called *Angle-Land*, now *England*, which said part of *Britain*, is bounded on the East with the *Germane*, on the West with the *Irish*, on the South with the *British Ocean*, on the North with the River *Tweed*, and a Line drawn from it, to the *Solway* Westward. The longest day in the Northern part of *England* is Seventeen hours and near Thirty minutes; and the shortest day in the most Southern part thereof, almost eight hours long. *Englands* dimension in length, from *Berwick* to the *Lands-End* is 386 miles, in breadth from *Sandwich* to the *Lands End* 279; in compass (by reason of the many Bays and Promontories) about 1300 miles.

*England*, in the *Romans* time, was divided into *Britannia prima*, containing the South part of *England*, *Britannia*

*Britannia secunda* containing the Western part, now called *Wales*; and *Maxinia Cesariensis* containing the Northern parts beyond *Trent*. The first of these in the *Britains* time belonged to the Arch-Bishoprick of *London*, the second to the Arch-Bishoprick of \* *Caerleon*, and the third to the Arch-Bishoprick of *York*.

\*Glamor-  
gan.

The *Britains*, or first Inhabitants of this Island were derived from the *Gauls*, as both their Speech, Laws, Customs and Buildings manifest. The story of *Brute* with his *Trojans* Conquering this Island in A. M. 2887, or whenever else, seems to be onely a Fable of *Geofry of Monmouth's* framing. Amongst the Ancient *Britains*, none save the better and more civil sort did wear any cloathing. They painted their bare bodies with sundry Pictures, representing all manner of living creatures, flowers, and the heavenly bodies, conceiting, that this made them appear the more terrible to their enemies. About their Waists and Necks they wore Chains of Iron, supposing them to be a goodly Ornament. The hair of their heads they wore long, which was naturally curled; all other parts they shaved, save the upper-lip. Of all the Provinces, the *Kentish* were the most civilized persons, by reason of their converse with other Nations in Trafficking, and Merchandizing. Their buildings were many, and like to those of the old *Gauls* (*French*) poor rude Cottages, yet did they give the name of Towns to certain cumbersome Woods, which they fortified with Rampiers and Ditches, whither they made their retreat and resort, to eschew the invasions of their enemies. The *Romans* first taught them to build their Houses of Stone.

Their Wives were many, Ten or Twelve apiece, which they held common among Parents and Brethren; yet was the Issue reputed his onely, who first Married the Mother when she was a Maid. The Children they brought up in common amongst them. Their diet was spare and mean, being Barks and Roots of Trees, and Milk, also a kind of food they had no bigger than a Bean, after the eating of which,

B 2

The Habits of the ancient Britaines



Printed for Abell in alle at the Unicorn, in the west end of Pauls.  
Page 3. 1687. J. H. H. sculp.

## B R I T A I N .

for a considerable time they did neither hunger nor thirst. They ate likewise Venison and Fruits. Their usual drink was made of Barley.

Their Religion was Paganish superstition. They had many Idol-gods, and used mans flesh in their Sacrifices. They had Priests and Instructours, the chief of which were *Druides*, who were the sacrificers, discussers and interpreters of Religious matters; they decided also as temporal judges almost all controversies in the civil State, and such as refused to stand to their judgment, they put under their Interdiction, which was accounted the most grievous punishment. These *Druides* were privileged from the Wars, and all other burthens, taxes and payments. Over all the rest of them there was one Primate. The main thing they laboured to persuade men was, That the Soul is immortal. They taught only by word of mouth.

The Merchandizing of the ancient Britains, consisted chiefly in Ivory Boxes, Sheers, Onches, Bits and Bridles, Wreaths and Chains, with other conceits made of Glass and Amber. And as their Merchandise was mean, so was their Shipping also, the Keels and Ribs whereof were of light Wood covered over with Leather.

Their Coin was either of Brass, or else Iron-Rings sized at a certain weight, which they used for their Money, but as times grew more civil, and Traffick more frequent, they stamped both Gold and Silver.

Their Armour were Shields and short Spears, in the lower end of which Spears was fastned a round Bell of Brass, which at the beginning of a fight they shook with a great courage, conceiting that such a ratling noise did dismay the enemy. In the beginning of a Battel they fought in Chariots, but when they had wound themselves in amongst their enemies, they fought on foot, upon occasion retiring to their Chariots, which in the mean space that they fought on foot, were drawn all together. They were so expert in managing their Chariot-Horses, that running

## B R I T A I N .

ning them forceably down a steep Hill, they could stop and turn them in the mid-way.

*Julius Cæsar* found the Island of Britain, not in a Monarchial estate under one King; but divided into several Provinces or petty Kingdoms. The Names of which Provinces were,

1. *Cantii*, the Inhabitants of Kent.
2. *Regni*, Sussex and Surrey.
3. *Durotriges*, Dorsetshire.
4. *Dannonii*, Devon and Cornwall.
5. *Belgæ*, Somerset, Wiltshire and Hampshire.
6. *Atrebati*, Berkshire.
7. *Dobuni*, Oxford and Gloucestershire.
8. *Catueblani*, Warwick, Bucks and Bedford.
9. *Trinobantes*, Hartford, Essex, Middlesex.
10. *Iceni*, Suffolk, Norfolk, Cambridge.
11. *Coritani*, Northampton, Lincoln, Leicester, Rutland, Derby, Nottingham.
12. *Cornavii*, Stafford, Worcester, Cheshire and Shropshire.
13. *Brigantes*, Parish, Lancashire, York, Richmond, Durham, Westmorland and Cumberland.
14. *Ordovices*, Flint, Denbigh, Merioneth, Carnarvan and Montgomery.
15. *Silures*, Hereford, Radnor, Brecknock, Monmouth and Glamorgan.
16. *Pembroke*, Cardigan, and Caermarden called *Dimeta*.
17. *Ottadini*, Northumberland, Teisdale, Tweedale, March and Louthien.
18. *Selgovai*, Lidesdale, Eusdale, Eskdale, Annandale and Niddisdale.
19. *Novantes*, Kile, Carick, Galloway and Cunningham.
20. *Fife*, Renfraw, Cluysdale, Lennox, Striveling, Menteith called *Damnii*.
21. *Caledonii*, Gadini, Perth, Stratberne, Albin, Argile and Lorne.
22. *Epidii*, Cantire.
23. *Vicemagi*, Murray.
24. *Venricones*, Merina, Anguis, Mar.
25. *Tæzali*, Buqubane.
26. *Cante*, Creones, Cerentes, Rose, Soutberland.
27. *Carnonaces*, Carini, Cornabii, Stratnavern.
28. *Simertæ*, Logi, Gaithnes.

B 3

The

*The most memorable Kings of the Britains, in the times of the Romans.*

**C**omius King of the *Attrebatii*.

*Cassibelan* King of the *Trinobantes*, who as the most worthy of British Kings, was chosen by general consent to withstand the *Roman* invasion, which he did with very great prowes, twice repulsing their Legions from the British Shore. His chief City was *Verolam*, near where *St. Albans* now standeth.

*Cingetorix, Caruill, Taximagul, and Segonax*, Kings reigning together in *Kent*.

*Mandubræc* a Prince of the *Trinobantes*, who after that he was beaten out of his Countrey by *Cassibelan*, fled unto *Cæsar* into *Gallia*, and was a great Incendiary against his native Land, persuading *Cæsar* to make a second expedition into *Britain*.

*Cunobelinc*, Grandson of King *Lud*, the chief City for whose residence was *Camalodunum*, now called *Malden* in *Essex*, which was the principal Seat of the Kingdom.

*Adminius, Catacratus and Togodamus* Sons of *Cunobelinc*, the last whereof made gallant resistance against the *Romans*.

*Cogidunus*, who received in pure gift at the hands of the *Romans* certain Cities, over which he peaceably reigned King.

*Caratatus*, a most renowned Prince of the *Silures*, who in nine years resistance waded through many adventures against the *Romans*, but at last was betrayed and carried to *Rome*, where being led in Triumph, was for the braveness of his Spirit, released of his bonds, and accepted into *Claudius Cæsar's* favour.

*Venutius* a famous King of the *Brigantes*.

*Boadicea, or Boadicea*, Queen to *Praefutagus*, after her Husband's death, receiving incivilities from the *Romans*, opposed her self against them, and in one Battel slew Eighty thousand of them. Those two strong Cities, *Verolamium*, and *Camalodunum*, she took and sacked. *Petilius* Lieutenant of the Ninth Legion she

she discomfited, *Catus* the Procuratour she forced to fly beyond the Seas. All feared the Heroick pro-  
wess of this Princess; but at length she was van-  
quished in Battel, when rather than live subje&t to  
her foes, she poysoned her self.

*Arviragus* stoutly withstood *Claudius*.

*Gulgacus* a right valiant Prince of the *Caledonians* in the time of *Domitian*.

These were the oppugners of the Roman Power for above an hundred years, nor were the Britains then subdued without themselves; for their own divisions made Way for the *Romans* to become their Masters, and to possess their Countrey.

About the year of the Worlds Creation 3913, and before the birth of Christ Fifty four years, the fortunate *Romans* under the conduct of *Julius Cæsar* first took footing in *Britain* about *Deal*; and so welcome was the news of *Cæsar's* landing in *Britain* to the *Roman* Senate, that they decreed unto his honour a general Thanksgiving for Twenty days, which was the first so great honour ever granted; the former greatest Victories having had but five, or at most but ten days assigned them.

*Emperours of Rome commanding in Britain:*

**C**aius Julius Cæsar was General of the *Roman* forces in *Gallia* when he invaded this *Island of Britain*; in short time after which, he assumed the Title and Authority of perpetual Dictatour, about A. M. 3925. He was very successfull in War, and of a most undaunted spirit upon all occasions. In Fifty several Battels by him fought, he always prevailed, one only excepted. Four times was he created Consul, and five times entred *Rome* in Triumph. Once entring into a Boat in tempestuous weather, and the Water-man afraid to put forth from Shore, he thus animated him, *Proceed courageously against the storms, for thou carriest Cæsar, and Cæsar's fortunes*. And when he was forewarn'd of the conspiracy made against him in the Senate-house; and dissuaded from going thither

Julius  
Cæsar, A.  
M. 3925.

thither at that time, he answered, *That he had rather dye, than admit fear into his breast*: So resolutely going to the place, was by Brutus, Cassius, and other Conspiratours murthered in the Senate-house, receiving in his Body Twenty three Wounds. He was bald-headed, therefore to cover it, he always wore the Triumphant Laurel-Garland. Some report that the Baths by the City of Bath were first found out by him; others say by an ancient British King called Bladus. For Twenty years after Cæsar's coming into Britain, the Britains retained their own Kings and Laws, having no Roman Prefects over them.

Augustus,  
A.M.  
3980.

**O**ctavian Augustus Cæsar was Julius Cæsar's Sisters Son, and his adopted and declared Heir. In the Forty second year of his reign the Prince of peace, Jesus Christ, was born, when was universal peace. This wise Emperour's Motto was, *Festina Lente*. And used to say, *That is speedily or soon enough done, that is well enough done; and that to get some small profit with great danger, is like those, that fishing with a Golden Hook, hazard more than the Fish is worth*. He dyed in the embraces of his Wife Livia, of whom he took this Farewell, *Livia, Nostri conjugii memor, vive, & vale*.

Tiberius,  
A.D.  
17.

**C**laudius Tiberius Nero was ordained by Augustus for his Successour. Such an impudent Letcher he was, that he caused naked Women and Maidens to bring in, and attend on him at Supper. Such a notorious Drunkard, that caused the people, instead of Cladius Tiberius Nero, to call him *Calpus Biberius Merito*, a Wine-bibber. In his time the worlds Saviour was crucified, about Five years after which time, the Gospel was planted in Britain, as saith old Gildas. This Emperour as is conjectured, was smothered to death by Caligula.

Caligula,  
A.D. 39.

**C**ain Caligula, Nephew to Tiberius, was at some times exceeding prodigal, at other times福德ly covetous, always cruel, proud and libidinous: He would force Rich men to make their Wills, and therein

therein to declare him their Heir, which when they had done, he would presently cause them to be poisoned, scoffing at them, and saying, *That when men had once made their Wills, it was fit they should dye*. His own Mother he defamed to be incestuously begot; his Grandmother he poisoned, his Brother Tiberius he murthered, his three natural Sisters incestuously polluted. He made himself a God, commanding that men should worship him as such, and ordained his great Horse for his Priest: but as Decius saith, *Truly a fit Priest for such a God, and a fit God for such a Priest*. Howbeit, though he would be a God, yet when the true God sent his Thunder, he would cover his eyes with his Hat, and hide himself under the Table. He was so exceeding hairy of body, that during his regality, it was next to High Treason, but to name a Goat. He often lamented that some rare and unusual disaster happened not in his time, whereby his Reign might be made memorable to posterity. He wished that all the people had but one Neck, that so he might have the glory of giving the bravest blow that ever was struck; but himself was murthered receiving Thirty wounds of the Conspiratours.

**C**laudius Drusus, the Grandson of Livia, Augustus's Claudius Wife, was by the Pretorian Band chosen Emperour contrary to the mind of the Senate, who 43. had determined to reduce the City into her ancient liberty, without admission of any Cæsar. He came into Britain, where for his clemency, the Britains erected a Temple and Altar in his name, giving him Divine honour. His first Wife Messalina, besides all her private Lecheries, went often to the common Stews to satiate her Lust; but she for her impudency being put to death, Claudio Married Julia Agrippina, who to make way for her Son Nero to the Empire, procured the disinheriting of Britannicus, the Emperour's Son, and by Poison tempered in a Mushroom, she ended Claudio's days.

Domitius

## Emperours of Rome

Nero,  
A.D. 56.

*First Per-  
secution.*

**D**omitius Nero, was elected Emperour by the Souldiers. His own Father he poysoned, upon his Mother he first committed incest, then murther ; he deflowered the Vestals, slew his Brother *Germanicus*, and Sister *Antonia*, his Wives *Poppea* and *Ottavia*, his Aunt *Domitia*, his Son-in-Law *Rufinus*, and his famous Tutor *Seneoa*, with many of the Roman Nobility, and raised the first Persecution against the Christians. He set the City of *Rome* on fire, charging the innocent Christians with the fact, and tormenting them for it. He caused St. Peter and St. Paul to be put to death, the first by crucifying, the other by beheading. But this Tyrant was grown so hated, that the Senate adjudged him to be shamefully whipt to death ; which he hearing of, run himself upon his own Sword. In the first five years of his Reign he was very compassionate, insomuch, as being requested, to sign a Writ for execution of a Malefactour, he said, *Would God I had never learnt to Write*. In the year of our Redemption, 67, Joseph of *Arimathea*, was sent by *Philip* the Apostle to plant the Gospel in *Britain*, who laid the foundation of the Christian Faith at a place then called *Avalon*, afterward *Iniswitre*, now *Glastenbury*, where he dyed and was buried. In Nero the progeny of the *Cæsars* ended.

Galba,  
A.D. 70.

**S**ergius *Sulpitius Galba* was elected Emperour by the Souldiers and Senate, who when he had Reigned onely Seven Months, was by the procurement of *Otho*, slain by a Troop of Horsemen.

Otho,  
A.D. 71.

**S**alvius *Otho* being chosen Emperour, *Vitellius* a Roman General marcheth against him, and at *Brixillium* won the day ; and to save the shedding of Roman Bloud, *Otho* refused to engage any farther with him, though much importuned by his Souldiers to reinforce the Battel ; but he thus answered them, " To hazard your virtues and valours for one man's estate, I hold it dangerous ; and needless it is that my life should be prised at so dear a rate. These

" Civil

commanding in Britain.

11

" Civil Wars *Vitellius* begun, which for my part I purpose not to continue. And hereby let posterity esteem of *Otho*, that others have kept the Empire longer ; but never any that left it more Valiantly. You for your parts would have dyed for my sake, but I to save your lives do dye voluntarily and unvanquished : I blame not the Gods, nor envy *I Vitellius* his rising glory ; sufficient to me it is, that my House hath touched the highest strain of honour, and my self to be left upon Record, the Sovereign Monarch of the World. And thereupon, with a solemn farewell to the whole Army, he went into his Tent, and with his Dagger gave himself his deaths-wound.

**A**ulus *Vitellius* was so gluttonous and prodigal, that *Vitellius*,  
A.D. 71, Two thousand Dishes of Fish, and Seven thousand of Fowl, were served to his Table at one Supper. In those few Months he reigned he wasted Seven millions, thirty one thousand two hundred and fifty pound Sterling ; but was ignominiously slain after the manner of a common Malefactour, when he had reigned onely eight Months and five days.

**F**lavius *Vespasian* was chosen Emperour by the *Me-* *Vespasi-*  
*an Legions*: He was a great enemy and scourge *an*, A.D.  
71, to the *Jews*, but a great favourer of Learning, valiant, just and wise, yet it may be too covetous ; for he imposed a Tax upon every Family, according to the quantity of Urine that was made in it ; which his Son *Titus* blaming him for, as dishonourable to so great an Emperour, he bad *Titus* smell to the Gold brought for Tribute-money, asking him what ill favour he found in it ? Adding, that the smell of gain is sweet out of any thing. He dyed of a Flux.

**T**itus *Vespasian* won the City of *Jerusalem*. For his humanity and native goodness he was stiled, *Titus*,  
*The Darling and delight of Mankind*. So tender he was of satisfying his People, that his usual saying was,  
A.D. 81.  
No

## Emperours of Rome

No man ought to go sad from his Presence. So inclined to gratifie the poor, that one day being passed from him, without any notable good done for them, in sorrow he said, *Perdidimus diem*, we have quite lost a day. He was a great enemy to Promoters, and extorters of penal Laws, whom he caused to be whipt and banished Rome. He would not receive any accusation against those that spake evil of him, saying, *So long as I doe nothing that deserves reproach, I value not lies.* But his Brother Domitian aspiring after the Empire, procured this good Emperour to be poisoned.

Domiti-  
an, A.D.  
83.

Second Per-  
secution.

Nerva,  
A.D. 98.

Trajan,  
A.D. 100.

Third Per-  
secution.

**F**lavius Domitian, instead of applying himself to many exercises, busied himself commonly in a private Gallery with catching of Flies, and prick-ing them through with a Bodkin. He caused his Statue to be made of Gold, and commanded, that himself should be called God. Upon small surmis-es he murthered the Senatours and Nobles. Many new tortures he invented. Confiscations and Banishments were favours from him. He raised the second Persecution against the Christians, Banished St. John into the Isle of Patmos; but himself was murthered, and his dead carcafs disgracefully abuse-d, his Scutcheons and Images defaced by order of the Senate.

**C**oceius Nerva recalled the banished Christians, permitting them to enjoy the free profession of their most holy Faith. Now St. John returned from Patmos to Ephesus. This Emperour dyed in a Cholerick passion, conceived against a Senatour.

**U**lpianus Trajan, when he invested any Pretour, in giving him the Sword, he would command him to use it against his own person, if he violated the Law. He raised the third Persecution. The Jews rebelling he put to death in such infinite numbers, that it was accounted the greatest slaughter that ever was made. He dyed of a Flux.

*Aelius*

## commanding in Britain.

**A**lius Hadrianus is said to have been of so excellent Hadrian-a-memory, that he never forgot any thing nus, A.D. which he either heard or read. The Britains rebel-119. ling, he came over and reduced them into obedi-ence, whereupon there was this addition upon his Coin, the Restorer of Britain. And to defend the Romans from the incursions of the wild Northern Bri-tains, he caused a wall of Stakes, turf and earth, to be made from the river Eden near Carlile unto the river Tine near Newcastle, 80 miles in length. Some write, that he onely repaired this Wall, and that Agricola's General first made it. He razed Je-rusalem even to the ground, built another City near where that stood, calling it Aelia, banished the Jews from thence, and upon the gate of the new City looking towards Jerusalem, he caused a picture of a Swine to be set, because that beast is an abomina-tion to the Jews. He prohibited the persecuting of Christians, and was minded to have built a Temple to Christ, but was dissuaded from it. He died of a Dropsic.

**A**ntoninus Pius published an Edict in favour of the Christians, ordaining that if any after that time should be found guilty of molesting them without just occasion, that then the Christian accused should be acquit, and his accuser should suffer that punishment he endeavoured to procure upon the Christian. He oft said, that he had rather save one subjects life, than kill a thousand enemies. So boun-tifull he was, that thereby he consumed his own private Estate, which his Empress repining at, he said, That when he undertook to be Emperour, he then laid aside the interest and proprieties of a private person. In farther praise of him, it is said, That in his youth he did nothing rashly, nor in his age negligently. He died of a Fever, aged seventy.

*Marcus*

Marcus **Aurelius**, **M**arcus *Aurelius Antoninus Philosophus*, chose to himself for his Associate in the Empire *Lucius Verus*, who A.D. 162. raised the fourth Persecution; when those two famous Christians *Polycarpus* Bishop of *Smyrna*, and *Iustin Martyr*, suffered Martyrdom, the like to which did many other Christians. But after nine years bloody Persecution, the Tyrant *Lucius* was cut off by an Apoplexy. *Marcus Aurelius* in his Wars against the *Quadi, Germans*, what with the pestilence raging in his Army, and what by want of water, was sorely distressed, but by the prayers of his Christian Soldiers, such a plenteous shower of rain fell, that therewith, after five days extremest drought and thirst, the whole Army was refreshed, and his enemies on the contrary by Thunder and Lightning were utterly dispersed and overthrown; whereupon this Emperour both mitigated the Persecution, and named that Legion of the Christians, *KeegwōcōλG*, the Lightning Legion. His Son *Commodus* procured the Physicians to destroy him.

**Commo-**  
**dus, A. D.**  
181.

**A**urelius *Commodus* would sometimes shew himself like Hercules in a Lions skin, sometimes wantonly clad in the habit of an Amazon. He kept three hundred Concubines, and amongst the rest his beloved *Martia*, whose painted picture he wore on the outside of his Garment; but through some displeasure having designed to put her and some other persons to death, they conspired against him, and with poison, stabs and strangling, murthered him. The news of whose death was most gratefull both to the Senate and People, who stiled him, *Hosťis humani generis*, the enemy of mankind. About the beginning of this Emperour's reign was the Christian Faith in Britain first professed by publick Authority, under King *Lucius* the first Christian King in the world. At which time *Eleutherius*, then Bishop of Rome, sent *Faganus* and *Damianus* to him, upon whose preaching the Heathenish Flamins and Arch-Flamins (twenty eight in number) were converted to so many

**King Lu-**  
**cious.**

many Bishops Sees, whereof *London, York* and *Caer-Theanus* upon *Uske* in Wales were made the Metropoli-  
tans of the Province. The first Arch-Bishop of London was *Theanus*.

**P**ublius *Helvius Pertinax* a petty Tradesman's Son was in his old age called to the Government of the Empire by the Senate, but the Praetorian Cohorts (whose licentious lives he restrained) shed his innocent blood when he had reigned little more than a Month.

**D**idius *Julianus* a Lawyer by profession, when the Empire was now exposed to sale by the Praetorian Soldiers, (being the Emperors Life-guard, the number Ten thousand) obtained the Diadem with larger promises than ever he performed. But *Severus* warring against him, and the Soldiers remaining unsatisfied of the covenanted promises, and withall hoping to purchase favour with *Severus*, they slew their Chapman *Didius* in his Palace, within a few days after that he had assumed the Government.

**S**eptimius *Severus* was by the Syrian Army elected Septimus Emperour; and he as soon as he came near to us *Rome*, gave strict command that the Praetorian Co- horts should attend him disarmed, which being done, he vehemently checkt them for their treason against *Pertinax*, depriving them both of the name, honour, and arms of Soldiers, and banished them an hundred miles from *Rome*; which act of his was highly gratefull to the Roman Citizens. This Emperour came over into Britain, where he fought many Battels, but ever with more difficulties to the Romans than Britains. *Clodius Albinus* the Roman Lieutenant in Britain made opposition against him, but he subdued him. *Hadrian's wall* he repaired. The Caledonians rebelling he commanded to be destroyed without exception. But *Severus* remaining in *York* (which place afterward grew to be one of the chiefest

## Emperours of Rome

Fifth Persecution.

Carac. &  
Geta, A.  
D. 212.

Elvanus  
Arch-Bi-  
shop of  
London.

chiefest for account among the *Brigantes* (as commonly the stations of the Roman Colonies were the Seed-plots of all our Cities and chief Towns) growing aged and sick, he died *Apr. 4 A.D. 212.* This Emperour having lain long sick of the Gout, and one of his Nobles telling him, That he wondred how he could rule so vast an Empire, being so lame and unwieldy ; he answered, That he ruled the Empire with his Brain, and not with his Feet. He raised the fifth Persecution against the Christians.

**B**assianus *Caracalla*, and his brother *Septimius Geta*, were declared Emperours by old *Severus* their Father, and both by him Surnamed *Antoninus* (a name then very gratiouſ in the esteem of the *Romans*.) These Emperours together with the Empress-Mother *Julia* transported the Funeral-ashes of the old Emperour in a Golden Urn to *Rome*, where they solemnly consecrated him a God ; the Ceremony being after this sort performed : His Image being lively pourtrayed in manner of a sick man was laid upon an Ivory Bedsted richly furnished in the porch of his Palace. The Princes and Senatours sat all on the left side thereof in black array, the Ladies on the right, clothed in white, the Physicians diligently visiting him. When seven days were ended, as if then just dead, the prime Nobles carried him in his Ivory-bed to the *Forum*, where all the Patrician Youth, and noble Virgins incompassed him with most dolefull Hymns and Ditties. From thence his Image was removed to *Mars's field*, where a four-square frame of Timber was erected of a very great height and compafs, the stories still mounting to the top with fundry ascents, richly beautified with Gold, purple Ornaments, and Images of great art and price. On the second of which ascents was placed the Emperour's bed and statue, with infinite store of most sweet Odours ; the young Nobles riding round about in a kind of dance, others who represented great Princes in their Coaches, and then his Successour first set fire on the Frame, and after him all the People

## commanding in Britain.

ple did the like on all sides, till the whole began to be in a flame, which done, an Eagle (secretly inclosed within) was let fly out of the top, the people following its flight with shouts and prayers, supposing that therewith *Severus* was mounted into Heaven. But in short time after this, *Caracalla* to gain the sole Sovereignty slew his brother *Geta* in his Mother *Julia's* arms, pretending that the innocent youth had sought his death. And because *Papinianus* the famous Civilian would not excuse the Murther in his Pleas at the Bar, he caused him to be slain, with many of the Nobility who favoured *Geta*. *Julia* his brother *Geta's* own Mother, and his Mother-in-Law, he took to Wife, reported on this occasion : *Julia* in his presence either casually or purposely let fall her Veil, thereby discovering her naked breasts and beauty, which he beholding, instantly said, Were it not unlawfull, I should not be unwilling : to which she replyed, That all things were lawfull to him who made Laws for others, but was himself subject to none. Whereupon he married her ; but a violent death prevented him from enjoying her long, and she hearing of his being murthered poisoned her self.

**O**pilius *Macrinus* from obscure Parentage, by election of the Souldiers obtained the Imperial Crown, but enjoyed it but a short time, for young *Heliogabalus* warring against him, overcame him, and put him to death, with *Diadumanus* his Son.

**B**assianus *Ant. Heliogabalus* the natural Son of *Caracalla* was incredibly luxurious. His Garments though exceeding costly he would not put on twice. His shoes were set with Pearls, seats strewed with Musk and Amber, his bed covered with Gold and Purple, and adorned with most costly Jewels, his Vessels (even of basest use) all Gold, his lamps burnt with the balms of *Arabia* and *India*, his way strewed with the powder of gold and silver, his diet so profuse that at every supper in his Court, was usually spent

Macri-  
nus, A.D.  
219.

Helioga-  
balus, A.  
D. 220.

## Emperours of Rome

spent 1000 pounds *sterling*. At a Feast of the chief Roman Citizens in his Court, he caused all the rooms to be fired with Saffron, saying, That such cattel deserved such litter. Near the Sea he would eat no fish, and in the inland no flesh. He had whole meals made of the tongues of singing birds and Peacocks, or of the brains of most costly creatures. At one supper he was served with 600 Ostriches. He built a stew in his Court, wherein himself in the attire of an harlot would make Orations to his whores, terming them his Fellow-souldiers, and giving them instructions how they should practise with the greatest variety their filthy lusts. In *Rome* he built a Chatterhouse for women to meet in, where they might determine of their attires. He brought his Mother *Semiamira* into the Senate, giving her a voice with the Senatours. But conscience accusing him, and he fearing the rage of the people for his crimes, therefore he prepared silken halters, golden knives, and built a stately tower, exceeding high, adorned with gold and gems, thinking when occasion should be, by some of these means to destroy himself, having these words oft in his mouth, That howsoever he died, yet his death should be pretious in the sight of all men. But he was mistaken, for the Praetorian band dragged him and his Mother, with Acclamations through *Rome*, saying, That the Bitch and her Whelp must go together: then slew them and threw them into *Tiber*. And the Senate approving of what was done, decreed that his Name should be blotted out of all Monuments in *Rome*, and never any *Antoninus* should again rule the Empire.

Alex. Se-  
verus, A.  
D. 224.

**A**urelius Alexander Severus was a great lover of the Liberal Arts, and a great favourer of the Christians, from whom he took to himself examples of life, and commended their precepts to others. This his kindness to the Christians is thought to have been procured by his Mother *Mammea*, whom *Origen* instructed, and whom St. *Hierom* styles a most holy woman. He was a great observer of justice, and

## commanding in Britain.

and therefore caused *Turinus* a Courtier (who had taken money of divers persons, with promise to procure the Emperour's favour in their suits) to be put to death by smoke, one the mean while proclaiming, That he had sold smoke, therefore with smoke should die. His Roman Souldiers grown far out of order by the ill Government of his Predecessours, he sought by severe courses to reduce; but they being backt by *Maximinus* (whom he had raised) murther'd him.

Cadau.  
Arch-Bishop  
of Lon-  
don.

**C**aius, Julius, Verus *Maximinus*, a Thracian by birth, Maximinus, A. D. 237. spent his youth in keeping of cattel, and was of a Gigantick stature, being eight foot and an half high by Geometrical measure. On his thumb he wore as a Ring, the bracelet which his Wife used to wear on her arm. And according to his limbs, so was his diet; for he daily devoured forty pound weight of flesh, and thereunto did drink six Gallons of Wine. For his admirable height he was admitted by *Severus* into the rank of a common Soldier, and shortly after to be one of his Guard, and at last the Souldiers elected him Emperour. But a Tyrant he proved, as well to the Roman State in general, as the Christians in special, against whom he raised the sixth Persecution. His conditions were so hatefull, that the Senate advanced one *Gordianus* to sway the Empire; but he proving unfortunate in his attempts against him, strangled himself. And *Maximinus* as he was drawing his forces towards *Rome* to revenge himself on the Senate, at the siege against *Aquileia* was slain in his Pavilion by his discontented Souldiers. The Citizens Wives in the time of this siege cut off the hair of their heads to make Bow-strings thereof.

Sixth Pe-  
secution.

**P**upienus Maximus, and Clodius Balbinus, were by the Peers and Princes constituted Emperours; the people extolling the Senate for their prudent choice of so wise men, contrary to the rash practice of such, who chose their Governors to fit their own fancies.

Pupienus  
and Balbi-  
nus, A. D.  
239.

## Emperours of Rome

But the Pretorian Souldiers taking this as a reflex upon them, and chiefly because German strangers were brought in to be of the Guard, as if themselves were not to be trusted; therefore turning their spleens against these Emperours, they assaulted them in their chambers, despoiled them of their Imperial Robes, haled them through the City like two Thieves, and lastly slew them, leaving their bodies to despightfull ignominy, in A.D. 241, in which year was so great an eclipse of the Sun, that the noon-day thereby became as dark as the mid-night.

Gordianus, A.D.  
241.

**A**ntonius Gordianus was by the Senate and Pretorian Band elected Emperour, when he was not yet full sixteen years of age. He caused the Temple of Janus at Rome, which had long stood shut, to be opened; a sure token that Wars were at hand: which with good success he prosecuted against the Persians, Goths, Sarmates and Germans. He was most noble and lovely conditioned, exceeding studious, and addicted unto learning, having in his Library no less than 62000 Books. But by his Prefect Philip he was deposed, Philip also usurping the Imperial Government, under whom for a time this deposed youth held an ordinary Captains place; but the Usurper judging himself not secure while Gordianus lived, commanded him to be slain.

Philip-  
pus, A.D.  
246.

**J**ulius Philippus Arabs hath the honour, according to some, of being the first Emperour baptized into the Christian faith, together with his Wife Severa, and Son Philip. Himself and Son were slain by the Souldiers. Of his Son it is reported, that he was of so admirable composedness, that in all his life he was never seen to laugh.

Trajanus, A.D. 253. **T**rajanus Decius swayed the Empire like a worthy Prince, saving his persecuting the Saints of God: for he it was that raised the Seventh Persecution against the Christian. Under him suffered Fabianus

commanding in Britain.

21

Fabianus and Cornelius, Bishops of Rome; St. Lawrence and many other good Christians he put to great tortures; amongst the rest, Origen, he caused to be scourged at an Iron-stake, and then lockt his feet in the stocks four paces asunder. But after that he had seen his two Sons Decius and Hostilianus slain before his face, himself was swallowed up in a Whirl-pool, never having other honour of burial.

**T**rebonianus Gallus, (whom Decius had appointed Trebonianus, A.D. from the invading Goths,) Governor of Mysia, and to keep the passages of Lontor; whereby Amilian grew so famous, and Gallus don. plottet with the Goths against the Roman Army, to the ruine of his Sovereign Lord; but thereby he attained the Empire he had lusted after. The Christians he banished. At which time so violent a Pestilence commenced, that no Province in the world was exempt from it. He made a dishonourable peace with the Goths, who notwithstanding continued their furies against the Romans, which his General Arch Bishop Amelianus Maurus revenged with a wonderfull slaughter; whereby Amilian grew so famous, and Gallus don. so contemptible, that the Souldiers proclaimed Amilian Emperour, who slew Gallus and his Son both in fight.

**J**ulius Amelianus, an African by birth, of base parentage, was elected Emperour onely by the Mysian Army, which election the Italian Bands opposed, in favour of their own Leader Valerianus, whom they sought to promote to the Empire, the Senate also inclining thereto. Therefore the Mysian Souldiers when they understood this, tumultuously murdered Amelianus, when he had reigned about four months.

**I**linius Valerianus in the beginning of his reign was very gracious and mild toward the Christians; but afterward (stirred up by an Egyptian Sorcerer) he began the Eighth Persecution with great cruelty. Many were the Martyrs, which with horrible tortures he

## Emperours of Rome

he caused to be put to death ; but the just revenging hand of God cut him off, by *Sapor* the savage King of *Perſia*, who in battel took him prisoner, and made his aged back his footſtool whilſt he mounted his horse, for the ſpace of ſeven years, and then cauſed him to be fey'd alive and ſalted.

Gallie-  
nus, A. D.  
268.

**L**icinius Gallienus, in whose time the Sun was clouded as under ſackcloſh, not being ſeen for many days together ; also great and fearfull earthquakes happened, which overthrew Cities and other Ediſces, shaking the ground ſo terribly, that vast caves, and hideous gaping bowels of the earth were thereby laid open, and great ſtreams of Salt water flowed out from them ; the earth roared, and ſeemed to thunder, when there was no voice heard in the air above. The Sea over-swelled her banks, and brake into many Continents, drowning countries, cities and people. And ſo violent a Pefilence raged, that in *Rome* no leſs than Five thouſand persons dyed thereof in a day. Which ſaid calamities ſomewhat moving this Emperour to remorse, he ſtayed the Perſecutions of the Christians, ſending out his edicts in favour of them. The *Roman* Souldiers now in diuers places of the Empire, ſet up no fewer than Thirty titular Emperours at once. But Gallienus, after that he had ſuffered the Empire to be rent in pieces, and uſurped by many barbarous nations, was murthered at *Milan* by three of his principal Captains.

Claudius.  
II. A. D.  
271.

**A**urelius, Flavius Claudius, was elected by the Souldiers before the Walls of *Milan*, and with much joy was confirmed Emperour by the Senate in *Rome*. He flew and took prisoners of the *Goths* (who had invaded *Italy*) in one battel three hundred thouſand fighting men ; two thouſand of their ſhips alſo, laden with warlike munition he took ; but died of a Fever before he had reigned full two years. His Statue of Gold the Senate cauſed to be ſet up in the Capitol, and his Target of the ſame metal to be hung up in the Senate-houſe.

Aurelius

Conan  
Arch-Biſhop  
of Lon-  
don.

commanding in Britain.

23

**A**urelius Quintilius, brother to *Claudius*, was pro- Quintili- claimed Emperour by the Souldiers of his Ar- nus, A. D. my, and was confirmed by the Senate : but the 272. Souldiers that had followed *Claudius*, thinking themſelves worthy of the firſt voice in the election, pro-claimed *Aurelianuſ* for Emperour ; and *Quintilius* knowing that he could not stand againſt him, chose rather by cutting his veins to bleed himſelf to death, after he had reigned onely ſeventeen days, than to hazard the chance of War, or to return to his private ſtate.

**V**alerius Aurelianuſ subdued the *Suevians* and *Sarmates*, Aurelia- and with great valour forced the *Germans* out of *Italy*. The Warlike Queen *Zenobia* he vanquished 272. and brought her in Triumph to *Rome*. But that which blemiſhes the luſtre of this Prince is, That he raised the Ninth Perſecution againſt the Ninth Per- Christians. He was slain by his own Servants. fectuſion.

**C**laudius Tacitus, after Eight Months *Interregnum*, Tacitus, with much imporſtunity took upon him the Go- A. D. 279. vernoſt of the Empire ; for all ſeemed now to decline this greatness, they ſaw it ſo hazardous. But this Prince reigning about Six Months, yielded to Deaths impartial ſtroke : Whether that was na- tural or violent is left uncertain.

**A**nnius Florianus, Brother to *Tacitus*, took upon him- Floria- himself the name and authority Imperial ; but nus, A. D. 297. hearing the news of *Probus* his Election, he bled himſelf to death, after he had for a very few days plea- ted himſelf with onely the shadow of Sovereignty.

**V**alerius Probus, was elected by the Eastern Army, Probus, and had his election confirmed by the Senate, A. D. 280, with these additions to his Title of *Augustus*, name- ly, The Father of his Countrey and highest Bishop. His first ſervice after he was Emperour, was in *Gal- lia*, againſt the *Germans* who had made themſelves Lords thereof, where in one Battel continuing two days,

C 4

Palladi-  
us, Arch-  
Bishop of  
London.

days, he slew 400000 of them, and recovered ou of their hands Seven Cities. He quieted the Provinces of *Muscovia, Russia and Polonia*, and likewise *Greece, Syria, Arabia, Palestina and Judæa*. Whence passing into *Persia*, he had honourable conditions of *Narses* their mighty King ; Whereupon issued so universal a peace, that no Wars were heard of in all the Provinces of the Empire. But this calm lasted but a short time ; for the *Egyptians*, and likewise *Beroëus* and *Proclus*, rebell against him ; all whom he subdued. Other defections and rebellions there were in the Eastern parts, which he prepared vigorously to correct, resolving, as he said, to bring matters to that pass, that the State should want no more Souldiers : which saying of his with, also his curbing the dissolute manners of the Souldiers, did so disgust them, that some of his Army conspired against him, and treacherously murther'd him. After which yet, they erected for him an honourable Sepulchre, wherein was engraven this Epitaph,

*Here lies the Emperour Probus, justly for his goodness called Probus : Of all the Barbarous Nations and Tyrants a Conquerour.*

Carus, A.  
D. 286.

**A**urelius Carus was chosen by the Souldiers, and confirmed by the Senate. The murtherers of his Predecessour *Probus* he severely punished. *Carinus* his eldest Son he made Governour of *Britain*, and the Western parts, and himself with his younger Son *Numerianus*, prepared for the East against the *Persians*; but in his journey thitherward, as he lay sick in his bed, a Thunder-bolt slew him, with many others then with him in his Tent. The terror whereof so disanimated his whole Army, that they desisted the intended design again *Persia*, and *Numerianus* took his Fathers death so heavily, that with continually weeping his eyes were so weakened, that he could not endure any light. From which disasters, *Arrius Aper*, in hopes of procuring the Empire to himself, took occasion to work the death of *Numerianus*.

*Dioclesianus,*

**D**ioclesianus, who at the first was a common Soul-Dioclesian, flew *Arrius Aper* ; which done, he was c. anus and elected Emperour, and confirmed by the senate. *Va-* Maximianus, for his good service in vanquishing *nus, A. D.* the *Gauls*, who troubled the peace of the Empire, 288. he made his Consort in the Government. These Emperours raised the Tenth Persecution, which continued for the term of ten years, so fierce, that within the space of one month Seventeen thousand Christians were put to death, besides infinite numbers of others cruelly handled, though suffered to escape with their lives. And as in other parts of the Empire, so in *Britain*, the Churches of the Christians were demolished, and their Bibles burned, and their bodies afflicted. St. *Alban* of the City *Verolamium*, was beheaded at *Holmurst*, now called St. *Albans*. His Instructour *Amphibolus* was brought to the same place, and whipped at a stake whereat his entrails were tyed ; so winding his entrails out of his body, was at last stoned to death. Sundry others were put to death in other places ; and in *Lichfield* so many, that the place became another *Golgotha* ; for which cause that City doth bear for their Seal of Arms, a Field charged with many Martyrs. But the chief cause of these miseries befalling the Christians, was from the Christians themselves : “ For (saith *Eusebius*) after that our conversation through too much liberty and licentiousness, was degenerated ; and holy discipline corrupted ; whiles every one of us did envy, bite, and back-bite each other wagging intestine Wars, and piercing one another with opprobrious words ; whilst nothing but hypocrisy was in the face, deceit in the heart, and guile on the tongue, whereby mischief was at the full height, then began the heavy hand of God to visit us, &c. Howbeit, when God had done using these his Rods of Correction, he cast them into the fire. These two Tyrants having renounced the Empire, and being again become private men, *Dioclesian* poisoned himself, and *Maximian* hanged himself.

*Constantius*

Constan- **C**onstantius Chlorus, and Galerius Maximinus (to whom  
tius,  
Chlorus,  
*A.D. 308.* the two former Emperours had voluntarily re-  
signed up their Sovereignties (divided the Empire  
into two parts, East and West; Galerius had the Go-  
vernment of the Eastern division, and Constantius of  
the Western. Constantius was wise, valiant, noble,  
and of a publick Spirit, wholly reigning to enrich  
his Subjects. He would commonly say, That it was  
more profitable for the state, that the whole wealth of the  
Land should be dispersed into the Commons hands, than to lye  
locked up into the Princes Coffers. He was so averse to  
superfluity, that upon extraordinary occasions, he  
was forced to borrow Plate of his Friends to fur-  
nish his Tables and Cup-boards. But the most ex-  
celling vertue was, his countenancing and protecting  
the late persecuted Christians, making his Court their  
Sanctuary. And to winnow the chaff from the  
Wheat, he used Jehu's policy commanding all his  
Officers to offer sacrifice to the Idol-Gods, pre-  
tending to discard all such as refused; but on the  
contrary, those that complied, he rejected with this  
reflect, That he who is disloyal to his God, will never be  
faithfull to his Prince. Whilst he served here in Britain  
under Aurelian, he married Helena (the Daughter of  
Cælius or Calius, a British Prince) who was the worker  
of his conversion, and on whom he begat Constantine  
the great in Britain. Whilst he swayed the Empire,  
being here in Britain and lately returned from his  
expedition against the Picts (which were Northern  
Britains, who continued to paint themselves after the  
Southern parts were brought to more civility) he  
fell sick at York, his Imperial seat. At which time his  
Son Constantine came thither to him, the sight of whom  
so rejoiced him, that setting himself upright in his  
Bed, he spake as followeth; It now sufficeth, and death is  
not fearfull, seeing I shall leave my unaccomplished actions to  
be performed by thee, my Son, in whose person I doubt not  
but that my memorial shall be retained, as in a monument of  
succeeding fame. What I had intended, but by this my fatal  
period leave undone, see thou doe it, that is, govern thy  
Empire

Stephen  
Arch Bishop  
of Lon-  
don.

pire with Justice, protect the Innocent, and wipe away all  
tears from the eyes of the Christians, for therein, above all  
other things, I have accounted my self happy: To thee there-  
fore I leave my Diadem, and their defence, taking my faults  
with me to the grave, there to be buried in everlasting Obliv-  
ion; and leaving my vertues (if ever I had any) to live  
and revive in thee. So ending his Speech, his life also  
ended.

Helena his Empress first Walled the City of London,  
so called from hun, or Longh & Dinas, a City of Trees  
or Ships.

**C**onstantine the Great, at his first entrance upon the Em- **C**onstan-  
pire persued the relicks of the War, which his Fa- tinus  
ther Constantius had begun against the Caledonians and o- Magnus,  
ther Picts. Then he undertook to tame the Tyrant *A.D. 310.*  
Maxentius; but being doubtfull what God he should call  
upon for aid in this his enterprise (for as yet he was  
not fully settled in the Christian Faith, nor Baptized)  
in his meditation, happening to cast up his eyes  
Eastward, he beheld in the Heavens the sign of a  
Cross, or the form of the first Greek Character of  
the Name of Christ presented to his sight, wherein  
were Stars (as Letters) so placed, that this Sen-  
tence in Greek might be read, *Iu hoc vince.* This miracu-  
lous Sign promising victory, was so comfortable to  
Constantine, that with great courage he advanced to-  
wards his enemy, bearing before him and his Army,  
in place of the Imperial Standard, the form of this  
Vision embroidered with Gold and pretious Stones.  
Maxentius had framed a deceitfull Bridge over Tyber,  
near unto Pons Milvius, with intent thereby to intrap  
Constantine; but the Armies joyning Battel, Maxenti-  
us was put to flight, when, through forgetfull haste,  
he took over the same Bridge, which suddenly falling  
under him, he with many more were drowned, and  
Constantine remained victor. And to the end that he  
might with the more facility restrain the turbulent  
Persians, he removed the Imperial Seat from Rome in-  
to the East, building at Bizantium a most magnificent  
City, naming it New Rome, and in imitation of the  
old

## Emperours of Rome

old one, he circulated Seven Hills. Herein was built the Palace of that publick Library, wherein were contained Twenty thousand of the choicest written Books, and in the midst thereof were the **Guts of a Dragon**, in length 120 feet, on which was admirably written in Letters of Gold, the *Iliads of Homer*. But this new City quickly lost its name of *New Rome*; for love to the Founder made it take name from him, that is, *Constantinople*. To this City *Constantine* drew his Legions out of *Germany*, *Gallia* and *Britannie*, which much weakened this part of the Empire, and made way for the *Picts* to infest the more civil parts of this Island. He called the Council of *Nice*, where himself sate President.

He died, May, 22. 337. whose body was interred at *Constantinople*, in the Church of the Apostles, which himself had founded.

This Christian Emperour would often kiss the hollow of old *Paphnutius* eye, which he had lost in the former times of Persecution, for the sake of Christ. He used such reverence and attention to the Word of God Preached, that many times he would stand up all Sermon time, and when some told him that it tended to his disparagement, he answered, *That it was in the service of the great God, who is no respecter of persons.* He was not Baptized till A. D. 318.

*Constantius, A.D.  
337.*

*Utur Arch-  
Bishop of  
London.*

**C**onstantinus, *Constans* and *Constantius*, were the three Sons of *Constantine the Great*, amongst whom he divided the Empire. But *Constantine* the eldest, whose part was *Britain*, *France*, *Spain* and part of *Germany*, thinking himself wronged in the division, sought to enlarge his own Dominions upon the frontiers of his Brother *Constans*; but was encountered and slain, when he had held his Territories the term of three years. Then *Constans* seized his Dominions, adding them to his own; but he living luxuriously, was slain by one of his Captains, and then *Constantius* became sole Emperour. In whose time *Gratianus* the Father of *Valentinian* the Emperour was general

## commanding in Britain.

neral of the Army in *Britain*, a man so strong of Limb, that no five men could pluck a Rope out of his hand by all their force, whence he was Sir-named *Funarius*, the Roper. *Constantius* died of a Fever declaring *Julian* his Heir.

**J**ulian the *Apostate*, was the Brothers Son of *Constantine the Great*. He was excellently Learned; and in his younger years so in love with the Christian Religion (at least in shew) that he took upon him the Office of a Deacon, Reading in publick to the People the Sacred Scriptures; but by the Rhetorick of *Libanius*, was seduced to Heathenism, and by degrees became a deadly enemy to the Church of Christ. His temperance was to admiration, both as to his Apparel, Lodging and Diet. He would often say, that it was the safety of his life, that he never had any War with his Belly. And doubtless he was a grand worldly Politician; for sometimes he would side with the *Catholicks* against the *Arians*, which were very numerous; yet still encouraging a distance betwixt them, that so they might not hurt him, being united. To the *Jews* he would make large promises, when he foresaw they might stand him in any stead. Whilst *Constantius* lived, he dissembled his Religion; but he dead, then he set open the Temples of the Pagan Gods, repaired their Altars, and defaced the Monuments of the Christians. That Brazen figure of Christ erected at *Cæsarea Philippi*, he caused to be broken down, instead thereof, placing his own Figure that it might be worshipped; but it was suddenly destroyed with Lightning.

The Christians he forbade the publick Schools and study of the Arts and Tongues, jesting away the reason of this injustice with scoffs, as he did the rest, saying, "That since *Plato*, *Aristotle* and *Isocrates* adored *Mercury* and the other Gods, he held it absurd, "that the Christians should learn from their Books, "whose Religion they condemned and loathed. When he at any time seized upon the Goods of the Christians, (which he oft-times did upon slight pretences)

*Julian A-  
postate,  
A.D. 361.*

tences) he would say, he did it that they might enter Heaven with the less difficulty. When he had disabled the Christians of all command, Civil or Martial he said he did it, because their Gospel had taken from them, *potestatem Gladii*, the power of the Sword. If any poor Christian desired the redress of any grievance, he would answer; That it was the duty of their profession to bear injuries. But Julian entring *Persia* with an Army Ten Miles in length, put the *Persians* to flight, whom persuing, as he lift up his hand in sign of victory, was in the very instant struck with a Javelin into the lower lappet of his Liver. From whose hand this Javelin came is uncertain, some say it was from the hand of a flying *Persian*, others say, from the hand of one of his own Souldiers. *Calistus* one of his own Guard, that wrote this Battel in Heroical Verse affirmeth, that some Wicked Fiend or Devil run him through with that Javelin. But be it by whomsoever, when the Apostate had pluck'd the Javelin out, he cast it into the Air, uttering this blasphemous Speech, *At length thou hast overcome me, O Galilean.* For so in contempt he used to call Christ.

Jovinia-  
nus, A. D.  
363.

**F**lavius Jovianus a Christian, was chosen Emperour by the Army, and because of the distress that his Host was in for want of provision, he made Peace with the *Persians* for thirty years, and so left their Countrey. In his time Blazing-Stars were seen at Noon-day. And the Statue of *Maximianus Cæsar* let fall the Globe out of its hand, no force moving it. Also horrible sounds and noises were heard in the Consistory. These were taken for ominous signs of those troublous accidents which befell the Army in their way homeward from *Persia*. Jovian died suddenly of the obstructions and stopping of the Lungs.

Flavius

Dedwin  
Arch-Bishop  
of Lon-  
don.

**F**lavius Valentinianus a Christian being elected Emperour, he made Valens, his Brother, his partner with him in the Empire. Into Britain Valentinian sent D. 364. Theodosius his Lieutenant, who recovered this Province out of the hands of their enemies the *Picts*, *Saxons* and *Scots* that had miserably infested it, re-edified the Cities, repairing the Garrison Castles, and fortifying the frontiers, naming *Britain Valentia* in honour of Valentinian the Emperour. Strange and dreadfull were the signs, that in the third year of this Emperour happened, as Earth-quakes, Inundations and the like, amongst which St. Hierom reports, That there rained Wool from Heaven so perfect good, that no better grew upon the Sheep. This Christian Emperour was so displeased with his Brother Valens an *Arian*, for persecuting the Orthodox Christians, that he denied to afford him help against the *Goths*, when they invaded his Dominions in the East, saying, "That it was an impious thing to strengthen the hands of a man, who had spent his days in warring against God and his Church. He died of an Apoplexy, or as some write, of the Plague. And Valens flying from the *Goths*, was in a house near Adrianople burnt to Ashes.

**F**lavius Gratianus the Son of Valentinian succeeded his Father, to whom was joyned for Consort in the Empire his Brother Valentinian, a Child about four years of Age. Whose advancement (though done without his allowance) he envied not, but regarded his Brother exceedingly, and brought him up with all tenderness, forgetting the wrong offered to himself, and his Mother *Severa*, for Valentinian's Mothers sake, whose name was *Justina*; a Damsel surpassing all other women so far, that the Empress her self became in love with her, and could not forbear extolling her beauty beyond compare, in the hearing of the Emperour her Husband, who provoked hereby, took her also to Wife, by whom he had this young Valentinian and three Daughters,

Theodore  
Arch-Bishop  
of Lon-  
don.

## Emperours of Rome

ters, albeit that his Wife *Severa* was yet living. In Britain, *Clemens Maximus* descended from *Constantine the Great*, had so won the affections of the Britains, through his good service done against the *Picts* and *Scots*, (which last were those people inhabiting the High-lands of *Scotland*, and came first out of *Ireland*, planting themselves on the North-side of *Cluid*) that they accepted him for their Sovereign; and his Souldiers by constraint forced him to assume the Imperial Style, and Purple Robe. And now *Maximus* hastes into *Gallia* with the chieffest flower and strength of the *British Forces*, against whom *Gratian* advanced; but after five days skirmishing, being forsaken of his Souldiers, he was forced to fly. After which he sent *Ambrose* Bishop of *Milan* to sue for peace with *Maximus*, unto which *Maximus* seemed to encline; withall causing Letters to be sent, and reports given out to soft Spirited *Gratian*, that his Empress was upon her journey to Visit him which the innocent Emperour credited. And accordingly set forward with joy to meet her, but when he opened the Letter, therein hoping to embrace her, was by Captain *Andragathius* and his Ruffians (sent in it on purpose) treacherously murthered near unto *Lions*. But *Theodosius* undertaking the Usurper *Maximus*, vanquished his forces, and slew him and his Son *Vigor*. Howbeit young *Valentinian* was not in safety; for by the Treason of Captain *Arbogastes*, and *Eugenius* a Grammarien he was strangled to death in his bed.

**Theodo-**  
**sius Mag-**  
**nus, A. D.** **F**lavius *Theodosius Magnus*, to revenge the death of the Emperour *Valentinian*, and also to oppose the proceedings of the Traytor *Eugenius*, who had usurped a part of the Empire, marched with his forces towards the confines of *Italy*, where, at the foot of the *Alpes*, he found the passages stopt, and his enemies powers far surmounting his, and likewise having so beset him about, that no victuals could be brought into his Camp, this good Emperour therefore, in this his distress, applied himself with fast-  
ing,

## commanding in Britain.

ing and tears unto the Lord of Hosts, who, to vindicate *Theodosius's* righteous Cause, sent such a violent tempest and raging wind upon the faces of his enemies, that when both Armies were engaged in fight, his adversaries own Darts were driven back upon themselves; whereby he obtained a most glorious Victory. In this Battel the Usurper *Eugenius* was taken, who whilst he was craving pardon at the Emperour's feet, had his head struck off by the Souldiers. And *Arbogastes* escaping by flight, two days after ran himself upon his own Sword.

*Theodosius* thus delivered, repaired to *Milan*, where he shortly after sickned unto death, constituting his Son *Honorius* Emperour of the West, and *Arcadius* of the East. His Humility and Piety was such, that St. *Ambrose* Bishop of *Milan* having forbid his entrance into the Church to Communicate with other Christians in their devotions, (because he had rashly punished the Inhabitants of *Thessalonica* for an offence committed by them) he accordingly submitted to this censure, acknowledging his offence, and for a future prevention of the like rashness, by the advice of St. *Ambrose*, he Enacted, That Thirty days should pass between the sentence of death, and execution of the Malefactor. He was wont to say, That he accounted it a greater honour to be a member of the Church of Christ, than to be head of the Roman Empire.

**H**onorius, because of his Non-age, was by his Father committed to the Government of *Stilicho*. **Honorius, A. D.** But this wretch aspiring after absolute Sovereignty, first sowed Sedition among the Lieutenants of the Provinces, then with disgrace cashier'd those *Goths*, that had served with good proof of their fidelity above Twenty years since their entertainment by *Theodosius*. These *Goths* therefore, to revenge their wrongs, chose for their Leader a violent *Goth* named *Alaricus*, who shortly proved the scourge of *Rome*. With him joyned the *Vandales*, *Alanes* and *Suevians*, all which, with great fury began to War in *Austria* and *Hungary*, increasing their powers with such multitudes,

## Emperours of Rome

Hillarie titudes, that the World was amazed and stood in fear. For unto these resorted Two hundred thousand Goths more, under the conduct of Radagassus their King, who with united Forces over-ran Thracia, Hungary, Austria, Sclavonia and Dalmatia, spoiling all in such manner, that Devils and not Men seemed to have pass'd that way. The Roman Empire thus declining, and the Armies in Britain fearing the fury of the Goths, to secure themselves the best way they could, elected an Emperour at home, one Marcus their Lieutenant; but he not fitting their humours, they in a short time murthered him. In whose stead they enthroned one Gratian a Briton, whom within four months they also murthered. At the death of him, they elected, for the names sake, one Constantine a common Souldier, and he passing beyond the Seas, was very prosperous for a while. His Imperial seat he placed at Arles, sent Letters excusatory unto Honorius, pretending that the Souldiers compelled him to doe what he did, which so pleased the Emperour, that he sent him a Purple Robe. But one Maximinus rising against him, he was taken Prisoner, sent to Rome, and there beheaded. From that time Britain renewed her obedience to Honorius; and Victorinus Lieutenant here, oft-times repressed the incursions of the Scots and Picts. Howbeit Rome was sore afflicted, and sacked by the Goths and Vandals. The Emperour Arcadius died in peace at Constantinople, and his Brother Honorius at Rome.

Theodosius and  
Valentian 2d.  
A.D. 423.

**T**Heodosius the Son of Arcadius was now Emperour when the Roman greatness was almost quite fallen. His Kinsman Valentinian he chose for his associate, making him Emperour of the West. At this time the Britains were sorely distressed by the continual disturbers of their Peace, the Scots and Picts; therefore they sent their Ambassadors to Rome, with their Garments rent, and dust upon their heads, bewailing their most miserable estate, and craving the Emperour's aid, who sent a Regiment of Souldiers into Britain under Gallio. Which Captain did some present

commanding in Britain.

present kindness for them; but in short time was called over with his Legion into Gallia, to secure the Countrey about Paris. At his departure he advised the Britains to stand upon their own guard, and for the future to provide for their own safety, and not to depend upon any succours from the Romans, who had their hands full of troubles near home.

Thus after about 500 years that the Romans had swayed in Britain, they took their final farewell of it, burying part of their treasures here in the earth. But during their stay in this Island, they had much dispeopled it of its Natives, having levied as many Companies, Cohorts and Ensigns of stout Britains from hence for the service of Armenia, Egypt, Illyricum their frontier Countries, as from any other of their Provinces whatsoever. Some of these British Souldiers, after they were wearied out in the Wars, had Armorica in France assigned them (by Constantine the Great) for their good service in the Wars, from whom, that Countrey of Armorica was called Little-Britain. Hither in the time of Gratian the Emperour, was Ursula the Daughter of Dinoth, Regent of Cornwall sent, with Eleven thousand Virgins in order to have been married with their Countrey-men; but all of them perished e'er they arrived, some being drowned in the Sea by tempest, the remainder put to the Sword by the barbarous Huns and Picts, because they refused to yield their chastities to their filthy Lusts.

The Romans made four famous High-ways in England, namely, Ikenild-street, or way, the Foss, Ermin-street, and Watling-street.

About A. D. 400. Pelagius a Briton brought up in the Monastery of Bangor, did much disturb the peace of the Church by his heretical Opinions.

Restitu-  
tus Arch-  
bishop of  
London:

## S A X O N S.

The Southern or more civilized Britains being now grown very low, and exceedingly weakened ( what with the Romans exporting their valiant Countrey-men to serve in foreign Countries, what with their own civil dissentions, the Romans forsaking them, and the Calamity of scarcity and Famine ) their veteran foes the *Scots*, *Picts* and *Irish*, hereupon take their opportunity so miserably to infest and trouble them, that not longer able to defend and secure themselves, they supplicate aid out of *Germany*, from the *Angles*, *Jutes* and *Saxons*, then inhabiting *Jutland*, *Holsten*, and the Sea-coasts along to the River *Rhene*. Of these, to the number of Nine thousand, under the command of the two Brethren *Hengist* and *Horsa*, entered Britain at *Ebs-fleet* in the Isle of *Tenet*, about 450 years after the birth of Christ. There they were received with great joy, and saluted with Songs after the accustomed manner of the *Britains*, who appointed them that Island for their habitation. And not long after, *Hengist* obtained of *Vortigern* King of the *Britains*, the property of so much ground as he could inclose with a Bull-hide, which cutting into Thongs, he there built the Castle, called from thence *Thong Castle*: To which place he invited *Vortigern*, who there fell in love with *Rowena* the Daughter, or Niece of *Hengist*, upon which match *Hengist* began to grow bold, and to think of making this Island his inheritance. In order to which, he sent for fresh forces to come over to him, which being arrived, they sought and made occasions of quarrels with the Natives, driving the Inhabitants before them from their wonted possessions, every several Captain, accounting that part of the Countrey his own, where he could overmatch the *Britains*, commanding in it as an absolute King:

## S A X O N S.

King : By which means the Land became burthened with Seven of them at the first, at one and the same time. But although the Land was divided into Seven several Kingdoms, and each of them bearing a Sovereign command within his own Limits ; yet one of them ever seemed to be supreme over the rest.

### *The Saxon Heptarchy.*

The Kingdom of Kent consisting of that County 1. Kent. Only, ( which *Vortigern* had given to *Hengist* in favour of *Rowena* ) was the first Dominion of the *Saxons* Seven-headed Kingdom, and began in, or near the year of our Lord 455, continuing 372 years. In it there Ruled Seventeen Kings successively ; the first of which was *Hengist* ; and the first Christian King thereof was *Ethelbert* surnamed *Pren*.

The South Saxons Kingdom containing the Counties of *Sussex* and *Surrey*, commenced in A.D. 488, continuing 113 years, *Ella* being the first King, and *Ethelwulf* the first Christian King thereof. 2. South Saxons.

The West Saxons Kingdom containing the Counties of *Cornwall*, *Devon*, *Dorset*, *Somerset*, *Wilts*, *Berks* and *Hantsire*, began in A.D. 519, continuing 300 years ; *Cherdick* being the first King, and *Hingils* the first Christian King thereof. 3. West Saxons.

The East Saxons Kingdom containing the Counties of 4. East *Esex*, *Middlesex*, and part of *Hartfordshire*, began in A.D. 527, continuing 281 years, *Erchenwin* being the first King thereof, and *Shebert* the first Christian King.

The Kingdom of Northumberland containing the Counties of *York*, *Durham*, *Lancaster*, *Westmoreland*, *Cumberland* and *Northumberland*, began in A.D. 527, continuing 379 years ; *Ella* and *Ida* the first Kings thereof, and *Edwin* the first Christian King. 5. North.

The Kingdom of Mercia containing the Counties of *Oxford*, *Glocester*, *Worcester*, *Salop*, *Cheshire*, *Stafford*, *Warwick*, *Buckingham*, *Bedford*, *Huntingdon*, part of *Hartfordshire*, *Northampton*, *Rutland*, *Lincoln*, *Leicester*, *Derby* and *Nottingham*, began in A.D. 582, continuing 202 years, *Creda* being the first King, and *Peada* first Christian King thereof. 6. Mer. cia.

## S A X O N S.

The Kingdom of the East-Angles containing the Counties of *Norfolk*, *Suffolk* and *Cambridge*, began in *A.D. 575*, continuing 353 years, *Uffa* being the first King, and *Redwald* the first Christian King thereof. Its last King was *Edmond*, whom the *Danes*, for his constant profession of the Christian Faith, most barbarously slew at a Village then called *Heglisdune*, where when the *Danes* were departed, his head and body were buried, and the Town, upon occasion thereof, called *St. Edmunds-Bury*. After the death of this *Edmond*, the Kingdom of the East Angles was possessed by the *Danes* till such time that *Edward*, surnamed the *Elder*, expulsed them, and joined it a Province to the *West Saxons*: But the *Britains*, during the time of the *Heptarchy*, stood still in the defence of their own rightfull inheritance, with great disdain, and valorous resistance, as much as in them lay, opposing the *Saxon* yoke.

British  
Princes.

Vorti-  
gern.

*The British Princes who contended with the Saxons to maintain their Countries rights, were these chiefly. First,*

*V*ortigern, at that time King, by the election of the *Britains*, when the *Saxons* were first invited into the Land. This *Vortigern* reigned first Sixteen years, and then deposed for his favours to the *Saxons*, was retained in durance all the Reign of *Vortimer* his Son, after whose death he was re-established; but oppressed by the *Saxons*, and pursued by *Aurelius*, he fled into *Wales*, where in a Castle which he built by *Melius* directions in the Mountains, he, with his Daughter whom he had taken to Wife, were burnt to Ashes.

Vorti-  
mer.

*V*ortimer for his Father's abuse of Government, was constituted King of the *Britains*. He gave unto the *Saxons* Four famous overthrows, almost to their utter expulsion. After his last Victory over them, he caused his Monument to be erected at the entrance into *Thanet*, whither he had driven the *Saxons*, even in that same place of the overthrow. Which Monument

## S A X O N S.

Monument was sometime called *Lapis Tituli*, now the British *Stoner*, wherein he commanded his Body to be buried, to the farther terror of the *Saxons*; that in beholding this his Trophy, their hearts might be daunted at the remembrance of their great overthrow. But *Roxena* procured his death by Poisou. He restored the Christian Religion, then sorely decayed, and rebuilt the Churches destroyed by the Pagan *Saxons*.

*A*urelius *Ambrosius* descended of that *Constantine*, who Ambrosius was elected here, onely in hope of his lucky us. name. He was very successfull against the *Saxons*; but, as some say, was poisoned by the procurement of *Pascenius* the youngest Son of *Vortigern*. Others report that he was slain in the Field by the *Saxons*, and that the *Britains* erected that famous Monument called *Stone-henge*, anciently *Chorea Gigantum*, over the place where he was slain and buried; though according to the saying of some, *Aurelius Ambrosius* caused the Monument of *Stone-henge* to be erected in memorial of the Massacre of 300 of the Nobility of the *Britains* by the *Saxons*, who were there buried. He built *Ambresbury* in *Wilts*.

*U*ter *Pendragon*, the Brother of *Ambrosius*, was in all his Wars against the *Saxons* most victorious and fortunate. He was surnamed *Pendragon*, either because at his birth there appeared a fiery Comet something resembling a Dragons-head, or because of his Serpentine-wisdom, or from his Royal Banner, wherein was pourtrayed a *Dragon* with a Golden head. When he had reigned Eighteen years, he died of poison put into a Well, whereof he usually drank.

*A*rbur, the Son of *Pendragon*, begotten upon the *Arthur*, Lady *Igren* Dutchels of *Cornwall*, was Crowned King of *Britain* at Fifteen years of Age, about *A.D. 516*. Twelve Battels he fought against the *Saxons* with great manhood and victory, the last of which

British  
Princes.

## S A X O N S.

was fought at Bath, or Bathan-Hill, where the Britains gave the Saxons a very great overthrow. But Mordred a Prince of the Picts, whose Mother was Pendragon's Sister, affecting the Crown, upon the pretence of Arthur's reputed Bastardy, gave many attempts against him, and lastly at Cambalu, now Camelford in Cornwall, encountering King Arthur, gave him his death-wound, and was himself slain by Arthur in the place. From which place this renowned King was carried to Glastenbury, where he died of his wounds in A.D. 542, whose body was there buried, and after 600 years was digged up by the command of Henry the Second. His bones of great bigness, and Skull, wherein was perceived Ten wounds, were found in the Trunk of a Tree; over him was a huge broad Stone, in which a leaden Cross was fastned, and therein this Inscription, *Hic jacet, &c.* Here lies King Arthur buried in the Isle of Avalonia. By him lay his Queen Guenaver, whose tresses of hair finely platted, of a golden colour, seemed perfect and entire, till but being touched they mouldred to dust. These relicks were reburied in the great Church.

Constantine, A.D.  
542.

**C**onstantine the Son of Cador Duke of Cornwall, and Cousin to King Arthur by Marriage, and his adopted Heir, was slain by Conanus, when he had been King Three years, and was buried at Stonehenge.

Conanus, A.D. 545.

**A**Urelius Conanus, King Arthur's Nephew, detained his Uncle in perpetual Imprisonment, and slew his two Cousins, because they had more right to the Crown than himself.

Vortigern, A.D.  
578.

**V**ortigern in many Battels vanquished the Saxons, and valiantly defended his Subjects; but otherwise very wicked.

Malgo, A.D. 581.

**M**algo Canopus, in Arms and Dominions, was stronger and greater than any other British Potentate, saith Gildas.

Careticus

## S A X O N S.

British  
Princes.

Careti-  
cus, A.D.  
586.

**C**areticus sowed civil Wars amongst his Subjects the Britains, which occasioned them to forsake him, and leave him to the mercy of the Saxons; who pursuing after him, he fled into Cyrencester for safety; but by the advice of his persuers, certain Sparrows being taken, and fire fastned to their feet, were let fly into the City, who lighting among Straw, set it on fire, whence the City was burnt to the ground; but Careticus escaped, and fled for safety unto the Mountains of Wales where he died.

**C**adwan maintained himself and Subjects in great honour and peace. His first affairs against the Saxons, were to revenge the deaths of his Britains, and harmless Monks of Bangor, slain by wild Ethelfrid the mighty King of Northumberland.

Cadwan,  
A.D. 635.

The Monastery of Bangor in North Wales was situated in the fruitfull valley now called the English Mailor, containing within it the quantity of a Mile and an half of ground. This Monastery, as faith Bernard Clarivalentius, was the Mother of all others in the World. Whose Monks distributed themselves into seven portions, every one numbring 300 Souls, and all of them living by the labour of their own hands. Many of these Monks assembled at \* Caer Legion, to assit their Brethren the Britains with their Prayers, against Ethelfrid surnamed the Wild, King of Northumberland, who with his Pagan Souldiers set up on the Britains, discomfited their host, and put to the Sword Twelve hundred of these Christian Monks.

\* Che-  
ster.

**C**adwallo, or Cadwallin, the Son of Cadwin, warred most valiantly against the Saxons, flew the Christian King Edwin of Northumberland, with his Son Osfride, in a great and bloody Battel at Heathfield. He died in peace, as the British Writers say, and was buried in St. Martins Church in London; his Image great and terrible, triumphantly riding on Horseback, being artificially cast in Brass, the Britains placed upon Ludgate, to the farther fear and terror of the Saxons.

Cad.

**Cadwallader.** **Cadwallader**, the Son of *Cadwallo*, with great valour fought against the *Saxons*; but his Nobles dissenting and warring among themselves, did much endamage his very hopefull undertakings. And by the All-disposing hand of Providence, so great a dearth befell, that Herbs and Roots were the Commons chiefest sustenance. Mortality and Pestilence likewise raging so sore, and so suddenly, that people in their eating, drinking, walking, and speaking, were surprised by death, and in such numbers, that the living were scarce sufficient to bury the dead. Which calamities lasted no less than Eleven years, whereby the Land became desolate, insomuch, that the King and many of his British Peers were forced to seek and eat their bread in foreign parts. But the destroying Angel, by God's appointment, having sheathed his devouring Sword, *Cadwallader* was minded to have returned into his native Countrey, with some aids which he had procured of his Cousin *Alan King of Little-Britain*, but was forbid by an Angel (as he thought) and commanded to go to *Rome*, and there take upon him the habit of Religion; which accordingly he did, and died at *Rome*, where, in *St. Peter's Church*, he was buried, being the last King of the *Britains* bloud, about A.D. 689.

**Gulielmus and Fastidius Archbishops of London.**

*The most powerfull Kings of the Saxon Heptarchy were*

**Hengist.** **H**engist, who about the 5th year after his arrival in *Britain* began his Kingdom in *Kent*, He (as also the Saxon Kings beside) doth derive his original from Prince *Woden*, and his Wife *Fria*, by *Wechia* the eldest of their Seven Sons, being the fifth in Issue from them. His Brother *Horfa* was slain in Battel by the *Britains*. According to some himself died in peace; others say, that he was slain when he had reigned Thirty four years.

*Ella*

**Ella** the first King of the South *Saxons*, in the Twenty third year of *Hengist's Reign*, brought a fresh supply of *Germans* to the relief of his Countreymen; who landing at *Shoreham in Sussex*, vanquished the *Britains* in those parts, after which he assumed the name of King of that Province.

**C**herdick the first King of the West *Saxons* arrived in the Western parts of this Island, in the Seventh year of *Ella's Reign*; where in his first Battel with the *Britains*, he slew a mighty King of theirs named *Natanleod*, or *Nazaleod*. This Battel was fought in *Hampshire*, near unto a Brook of Water, which from *Cherdick*, began to be called *Cherdick-ford*, where now a Town of the same name standeth; but by contraction called *Charford*.

**Vodinus and Theodorus A. Bishops of London.**

*Kenrick.*

**K**enrick the 2d King of the West *Saxons*, enlarged his confines upon the Territories of the *Britains*, giving them two great overthrows, the one at *Searbury* in *Wiltshire*, the other at *Banbury* in *Oxfordshire*.

**C**helwin, or *Cheuline*, the Son of *Kenrick*, and 3d King of the West *Saxons*, overcame the *Britains* in many fights; also set himself to enlarge his own Territories upon his Countrey-mens: For entring *Kent*, in a set Battel he defeated that King's Forces. He surprized the Cities of *Glocester*, *Bath* and *Cyrencester*; slew Three of the British Kings, named *Coimmagil*, *Candidan* and *Farimmagil*: But grown proud, through his many Victories, he tyrannized over his own Subjects, which moved them to take part with the *Britains* against him; and at *Wodnesbeath*, now *Wansditch* in *Wiltshire*, they vanquished and put him to flight, forcing him into Banishment, in which he died.

*Chelwin, A.D. 560.*

**E**thelbert the 5th King of *Kent*, was married to *Berta* the Daughter of *Chilperick King of France*, on these conditions, That the Lady should enjoy the profession of her Christian Faith, and the conversation

*on*

## S A X O N S.

on of *Luidhard* her learned Bishop. About this time it chanced that *Gregory the Great*, then Arch-deacon of *Rome*, saw certain Youths of this Island of *Britain*, brought to *Rome* to be sold, concerning whom he enquired, first of what Nation they were, and being answered that they were *Angles*; *Gregory* replied, and not without cause are they so named indeed, their resemblance is so Angelical; and fit it is that they be made inheritors with the Angels in Heaven. But of what Province are they in *Britain*, said he? and being answered of *Deira*; now great pity it is, said he, but that these people should be taken from *Deira*, the wrath of God. And being told that their King's name was *Ella*; he, by way of allusion, said, That *Alleluia* to the praise of God, should shortly be sung in that Prince's Dominions: to which end, when he had attained to be Bishop of *Rome*, he sent *Augustine* a Monk, with forty others his assistants, which landed in *Thanet*, about *An. Dom. 596*; finding at their coming Seven Bishops in the *British* Churches. These Roman Christians sent by *Gregory*, were by King *Ethelbert* freely permitted to Preach the Gospel, and in his chief City of *Canterbury* he allowed them fit places of residence, and to *Augustine* resigned his own Palace. In this City *Austin* laid the foundation of that great Church Dedicated to the Name and Service of Christ. And also at his cost built a most fair Monastery, wherein eight Kings of *Kent*, and ten Arch-Bishops were afterwards interred. But between the *British* Christians and *Austin* there was a great difference about the due time for celebrating the Feast of *Easter*. *Easter* was kept in *Britain* after the manner of the Eastern Church, on the fourteenth day after the Full Moon, whatsoever day of the week it happened on, and not on *Sunday*, as we at this day observe it; which made *Austin* in great displeasure against them, and they to dislike him for his pride. The *British* Bishops were consecrated by their own Archbishops, and they by their own Suffragans, making no profession of subjection to any other Church. And when *Augustine* the Monk required of the *British* Bishops

*the Monk  
Arch-bishop  
of Canterbury.*

## S A X O N S.

Bishops to profess subjection to the See of *Rome*, *Dionthus* Abbat of *Bangor*, made it appear by divers Arguments, that they owed him none; nor did they follow the Rites of *Rome*. But King *Ethelbert* being by *Augustine* converted to the Christian Faith, was the instrument of converting of *Sebert* King of the East *Saxons*, whom he assisted in the Building of St. *Paul's*, where had stood the Temple of *Diana*, as also the Church of St. *Peter's* at *Westminster*, then called *Thorney*, where the Temple of *Apollo* stood; and himself built the Cathedral Church at *Rochester*, dedicating it to St. *Andrew*. He brought the Laws of his Countrey into their own Mother-Tongue, and was very forward in advancing the Christian Religion. He died in or near *A.D. 616*. and was buried at *Canterbury*. *Augustine* the first Arch-bishop of *Canterbury* died, Laurentius during the Reign of *Ethelbert*, and was buried in the us A. B. of Northern Porch of the New Church in *Canterbury*, dedicated to St. *Peter* and *Paul*; and *Laurentius* succeeded him in that Bishoprick.

**R** *Edwald* 3d King of the East *Angles*, was Baptized *Redwald* in *Kent*; but returning into his own Countrey (through the persuasions of his Queen) he returned to his superstitions, and in one and the same Temple, erected an Altar for the service of Christ, and another for his Idols.

**E** *Ein* the Great, and 2d King of *Northumberland*, *Edwin*, subdued all the coasts of *Britany*, wheresoever any Provinces were inhabited, either by *Britains* or *Saxons*; which thing, no King of the *English* before him had done: And added the *Mevian Isles* or *Hibrides* unto his own Dominions. He was converted to the Christian Faith by *Paulinus*, and Baptized at *York* in St. *Peter's* Church then built of Wood, which he Rebuilt of Stone, making it the Cathedral Church; and *Paulinus* Arch-bishop of that See. \* He \* *Church of* suppressed Idolatry, established the Gospel in the Lincoln Northern parts, which daily spread into other Pro- founded by vinces, and with such fruit of Peace, that through- Bp. *Paulinus*.

out his Dominions, a weak Woman with her new-born Babe might have passed without danger or damage over all the Island, from Sea to Sea. And for the conveniency of way-faring men, he inclosed clear Springs by the ways sides, where he placed great Basins of Brass, both to wash and bathe in. But *Penda* the Mercian King, and *Cadwalla* the Britain confederated against him, and in fight slew him and his Son *Osfryd*. His Body was buried at *Streanshall*, now called *Whitby*.

**Oswald,**  
**A.D. 633.**

**O**swald the 5th King of *Deira*, the 9th of *Bernicia*, and 3d of *Northumberland*, having received the Christian Faith in *Scotland*, during his banishment there; at his return took such care for the salvation of his Subjects, that he sent into *Scotland* for *Aidan* a Christian Bishop, to instruct his *Northumbrians* in the Gospel of Truth. And because the Bishop could not speak their Language, the King himself would interpret his Sermons to the people. Which godly undertaking of the good King and Bishop was so successfull, that as is reported, in Seven days space, Fifteen thousand received Baptism. At this time the whole Island flourished with Peace and plenty, and acknowledged their subjection to *Oswald*. But *Penda* King of *Mercia* envying his flourishing estate, slew him in Battel, at a place called *Maserfield* in *Shropshire*; and then tore his body piece-meal: Whereupon, the said place of his death is called to this day *Oswald's-tree*. His dismembered Limbs were first buried in the Monastery of *Bradney* in *Lincolnshire*, afterwards removed to *Glocester*, and buried in the North-side of the upper end of the Quire in the Cathedral Church.

King *Oswald* being at Dinner on *Easter-day*, one brought him word, that there was a great company of poor people in the Streets which asked Alms of him; whereupon he commanded the Meat prepared for his own Table to be carried to them, and brake a Silver Platter to pieces and sent it amongst them.

In

In the year of Christ 636, *Honorius*, Arch-Bishop of *Honorius Canterbury* first divided *England* into Parishes. *Nor-* and *Deus* *thumberland* was sometime parted into two Kingdoms, dedit *A.* *Bishops of* *Canter-*  
*bury*.

**Osway** the 4th King of *Northumberland*, slew *Penda* in fight, with the discomfiture of all his *Mercian* power; and in the same Battel slew *Ethelbert* King of *Osway*, the *East Angles*, who sided with *Penda*; after which *A.D. 643.* victory he subdued the *Mercians*, and made the Northern part also wholly subject unto him. He founded the Cathedral Church in *Lichfield* for a Bishops See, died in *A.D. 670*, and was buried in St. Peter's Church in *Streanhalch*.

**Vulfhere** the 6th King of the *Mercians*, slew his two *Vulfhere* Sons *Vulfald* and *Rufin*, because they usually re-*A.D. 668.* sorted to reverend *Chad* for the profit of their Souls, and had received at his hands the Sacraments of Baptism. Their Martyred bodies, Queen *Erminbild* their Mother caused to be buried in a Sepulchre of Stone, and thereupon a fair Church to be erected; which by reason of the many Stones brought thither for the foundation, was ever after called *Stones*; and is now a fair Market-Town in *Staffordshire*. But *Vulfhere* repenting his most inhumane murther, and becoming a Christian, converted his Heathen Temples unto Churches and Monasteries, and finished *Medi-sham*, now *Peterborough* (his brother *Puda*'s Foundation) inriching it largely with Lands and Possessions. He died *A.D. 674*, and was buried at *Peterborough*.

Theodo-  
rus and  
Bertual-  
dus A.Bps.  
of Cant.

**Ethelred**, because of his Nephew *Kenred*'s minority, and disposition to a private life, was accepted of the *Mercians* for their King. His entrance was with War against the *Kentish* King *Lothair*, whose Countrey he miserably destroyed, sparing neither Religious, nor Secular place. But at length disquieted in mind, because of his cruelties, to expiate his crimes, he first built a goodly Monastery at *Beadney* in *Lincolnshire*, then resigning the Crown to *Kenred*, became

came there a Monk himself, living there a regular life the term of Twelve years, and died Abbat of the place, A.D. 716. In the 4th year of his Reign a fearfull Blazing-Star discovered it self, and for three Months together continued rising in the morning, and giving forth a blazing pile, very high, and of a glittering flame.

Tarninus  
and No-  
thelmus  
A. Bps. of  
Cant.  
~~~~~  
Kenred.

**K**enred the 8th King of Mercia, reigned in peace the term of four years; but affecting a private retired life, he appointed Chelred his Cousin to rule in his stead, and, accompanied with Offa, King of the East Saxons, and Edwin Bishop of Winchester, he went unto Rome, where himself and Offa became Monks, and there died.

**Chelred,**  
A.D. 709.

**C**helred the 9th King of the Mercians, was all along, during his seven years Reign engaged in Wars against Inas King of the West Saxons. Which Inas being in pilgrimage at Rome, in A.D. 720, gave a tribute to Rome called Peter-pence, being a penny for every house. At first it was called the King's Alms; it was also called Rome-scot. Inas built a College at Wells, and a stately Abby at Glastenbury, where formerly the old Cell of Joseph of Arimathea had been. He also built a Castle at Taunton.

King Chelred died A.D. 716, and was buried in the Cathedral Church at Lichfield.

Ethel-  
bald.

**E**thelbald the 10th King of the Mercians, spent the most part of his Reign in peace, and too much thereof in Luxury; for the which he was reproved by Boniface (an English man) Bishop of Mentre: Whose Epistle Redargutory had this influence upon the King, that in sign of repentance, he privileged the Church from all Tributes to himself, and founded the Abby of Croxland. About which time it was appointed by Arch-Bishop Cuthbert and his Clergy, in a Convocation held in his Province, (the King being present at the same Council with his Princes and Dukes) that the Sacred Scriptures should be

be read in their Monasteries, the Lord's Prayer and Cuthbert Creed taught in the English Tongue, A.D. 733. In January the Sun suffered so great an Eclipse, that the Earth seemed to be overshadowed, as with Sack-cloth. And A.D. 756, and in December, the Moon being in her full, appeared both dark and bloody; for a Star (though there be none lower than the Moon) seemed to follow her, and to deprive her of light, till it had got before her. But great Ethelbald fighting against Cuthred the West Saxon, was traiterously slain by the procurement of one of his own Captains, near Tamworth, and was buried at Repton in Derbyshire.

**O**ffa the 11th King of the Mercians, as is said, was Offa, A.D. born both lame, deaf and blind, continuing so unto his Mans estate. He was of such a stout and daring spirit, that he thought nothing impossible for him to attain unto. The first that felt his fury were the Kentish men, whose King Alrike he slew in fight with his own hands. From south to north he then marched, and beyond Humber made havock of all that opposed him. Whence returning in triumph, he vanquished Kenwolph and his West Saxons, with whom Marmadius, King of the Britains, sided. He caused a great ditch to be made between his and the Britains borders, that is, from Basnewark in Flintshire, and North Wales, not far from the mouth of Dee, running along the Mountains into the South, ending near Bristol at the fall of Wye. The tract whereof in many places is yet seen, being called Clawdha Offa, or Offa's Ditch. The Danes that had invaded England, he forced back to their ships, with the loss of all their booty, and many of their lives. Then making his son Egfryd Partner with him in the Kingdom, he went to Rome, where he made his Kingdom subject to a tribute called Peter-pence, and gave rich gifts to Pope Hadrian for canonizing Alban a Saint; in honour of whom, at his return, he built a magnificent Monastery over against Verolamium. Also in testimony of his repentance, for the blood he had

E

shed

## S A X O N S.

shed in his Wars, he gave the tenth part of his goods unto the Church-men and poor. At Bath he built a Monastery, and in Warwickshire a Church, where the adjoining Town from it and him beareth the name *Off-Church*. He died at Offley in A.D. 794, and was buried without the Town of Bedford, in a Chapel standing upon the bank of *Omse*, which long since was swallowed up by the same River.

In A.D. 755, was *Sigebert* King of West Saxons slain by a Swineherd; and in A.D. 760, *Kenwolph* King of West Saxons made Wells an Episcopal See.

Egfryd,  
A.D. 794.

**E**gfryd the Son of *Offa* restored to the Church her ancient privileges which his Father had deprived her of. He died in the first year of his Reign, and was buried in the Abby-Church of St. Albans.

Ken-  
wolph,  
A.D. 795.

**K**enwolph the 13th King of the *Mercians* was at home a president of peace, religion and justice, and abroad of temperance, humility and courtesie. In War stout and victorious, in Peace studious of enriching his Subjects. He vanquished the *Kentish* men, and carried away their King prisoner, detaining him captive, and giving his Kingdom to *Cuthred*. He built a fair Church at *Winchcomb* in *Gloucestershire*, where upon the dedication thereof, he led *Pren*, his captive King of *Kent*, up to the High Altar, and there, without either his entreaty, or any ransom, set him at full liberty. He died A.D. 819, and was buried at *Winchcomb*, where was buried also *Kenelm* his Son, murther'd by his Sister *Quendred*. Now lived that greatly learned *Englishman*, and of most fame in that Age, *Alcuine*, School-Master to *Charles the Great*. This learned man wrote against Image Worship.

## S A X O N M O N A R C H S.

Egbert,  
A.D. 819.

**E**gbert the 18th King of West Saxons, first warred against the *Cornish* and *Welsh*, a remnant of the old *Britains*, which for fourteen years held side against the King; which so enraged him, that he made it present death for any *Britain* to pass over *Offa's Ditch*

## S A X O N S.

Ditch into *England*. Their great *Caer-legion*, now *Westchester*, he took from them; and at *London* cast down the Image of their Prince *Cadwallo*. He subdued *Kent*, *East Saxons*, and *East Angles*, also the *Mercians*, and indeed all upon the North and South of *Humber* yielded him obedience. He was Crowned at *Winchester* absolute Monarch of the whole Island in A.D. 819, and caused the South of this Island to be called *England*. Three several times the *Danes* landed in *England* in his Reign, whom he expelled. He died in A.D. 836, and was buried at *Winchester*. But his bones were since taken up, and with others bestowed in Chests, set upon the Wall on each side the Quire of the Cathedral, with these Verses inscribed:

*Hic Rex Egbertus pausat cum Rege Kenulpho,*

*Nobis egregia munera uterque tulit.*

His issue were *Ethelwolph* and *Ethelstan*, and one Daughter named *Egdirh*, commonly called *St. Edith*, who was Governess of a Monastery of Ladies at *Polesworth* in *Warwickshire*.

**E**thelwolph was in his youth committed unto the care of *Helmestan* Bishop of *Winchester*, and by him unto learned *Swithun* the Monk. He took such a like unto the quiet and solitary life (enjoyed only by religious men, all other estates being molested to withstand the intruding *Danes*) that he took upon him the Monkish Vow and Profession, and was made Deacon; and shortly after, upon the death of *Helmestan*, he was elected, if not consecrated also Bishop of *Winchester*. But the death of his Father immediately following, by the intreaty of the Nobles, and constraint of the Clergy, he was made King, and absolved of his Vows by *Gregory the IVth*. His Bishoppick he bestowed on *Swithun*. This King, in great devotion, passed to *Rome*, where he rebuilt the School built by King *Offa* (lately fired) bearing the name of *Thomas the holy*, confirmed the grant of *Peter-pence*; and for his kind entertainment in the Popes Court, he covenanted to pay a hundred Marks to *St. Peter's Church*,

## S A X O N S.

Church, another to St. Paul's Light; and a third to his Holiness. In his return through France, he married fair Judith the Daughter of Charles the Bald, then Emperor, in honour of whom he ever placed her in his English Court in a Chair of State, with all other Majestical complements of a Queen, contrary to the Law of the West Saxons, formerly made for Ethelburga's offence, who, by accident, had poison'd her own Husband with the poison she had prepared for one of his Minions. Which respect of his to his Queen so displeased his Nobles, that they rose in Arms against him; but by mediation of Friends the difference was composed on these terms, *viz.* That the Land should be divided betwixt himself and Son Ethelbald, to whom the better part was allotted. He died at Stanbridge in A.D. 857, and was first buried where he deceased, but afterwards his body was removed to the Cathedral of Winchester. He had issue Ethelbald, Ethelbert, Ethelred, Elfred, and one Daughter named Ethelswith. It is said of this King, That by the advice of his Nobles he gave for ever to God and the Church, both the tythe of all Goods, and the tenth part of all the Lands of England, free from all peculiar service, taxations, or impositions whatsoever.

Ethelbald, A.D. 837. E *thelbald*, or *Ethelwald*, married Judith his Mother-in-law. Some say, that he married his own Mother, who was King *Ethelwulf*'s Concubine. But when he had reigned about two years and an half, he died in A.D. 860. His body was first buried at Sherbourn in Dorsetshire, (where at that time was the Cathedral Church and Episcopal See) but afterwards was removed to Salisbury.

Ethelbert, A.D. 860. E *thelbert* was disquieted by the *Danes* all the time of his Reign. First, they spoiled all before them to Winchester, also sacking and spoiling that City; howbeit in their return, the *Berkshire* men, under the conduct of Osryck Earl of Hampton, met with them, recovered the prey, and slew many of them. The

## S A X O N S.

The same year also the *Danes* with the *Normans* entered Thanet; but these the Kentish men repulsed, and made a great slaughter of them. Ethelbert died in A.D. 866, and was buried at Sherbourn.

E *thelred* was now King of England, when there arrived on the English Coasts an huge Army of A.D. 866. *Danes*, under the command of those strong and cruel Captains, *Inguar* and *Hubba*, who burnt down the City of York, and therein consumed with fire all thoe that had fled thither for security: Who entred Mercia, won the City of Nottingham, and therein wintered. Who with fire and sword laid all waste where they came, and spared neither sex nor age, religious or secular. Therefore to avoid their Barbarities, the Nuns of Coldingham deformed themselves, by cutting off their upper-lips and noses. King *Ethelred*, in one years time, fought no less than nine set-battels with these *Danes*; and at that battell fought at Essendon, not far from Reading, he obtained a great victory over them. But in a fight at Basung, the King received his mortal wound, whereof he died at Wittington in A.D. 872. He was buried at Winbourn in Dorsetshire with this Inscription:

*In hoc loco quiescit corpus Sancti Ethelredi Regis West-Saxonum, Martyris; qui A.D. 872, 23 die April. per manus Ducorum paganorum occubuit.*

His Issue were Elfred and Oswald, and one Daughter named Thyre.

E *lfred*, or *Alfred*, the fourth Son of King *Ethelwulf*, was in his young years and Father's life-time anointed King at Rome by Pope Leo; but after his brother *Ethelred*'s death was crowned at Winchester, and is by some styled the first absolute Monarch over the English. Within a Months time after his Coronation, he was forced into the field against the *Danes*, whom he fought at Wilton, where he was worsted. Then the *Danes* constrained the West Saxons to enter into league with them, then advanced to London, where they wintered; compelled the Mercians to com-

Ulfredus compound with them, banishing *Burhred* their King and *Tre-Iolegal-dus*, A. Bps. Cant. placing another in his stead of their own chusing. Their King *Halden* gained *Northumberland*, which he bestowed amongst his followers. In A.D. 876, *Rollo* a Noble-man of *Denmark* came over with a great Army of fresh Forces, making a miserable spoil where he came; but *Alfred* forced him out of the Land. Howbeit the *Danes* who had already seated themselves in *England*, bring the King many times to such extremities, that he was forc'd to hide himself out of sight, and with such small companies as he had, to live by fishing, fowling and hunting, having no more of his great Monarchy left him but *Wilt*, *Somerset* and *Hantsire*, nor them neither free from the incursions of the *Danes*. The solitary place of his most residency was an Island in *Somersetshire*, commonly called *Edelingsey*, where, in poor disguise, he was entertained into a Cowherds Cottage. This Cowherd, who succoured King *Alfred*, was named *Dunwulfus*, whom the King after set to Learning, and made Bishop of *Winchester*. Yet in these his distresses he would sometimes disguise himself in the habit of a common Minstrel, repairing to the *Danes* Camp, and by his excellent skill in Musick and Songs, would gain the opportunity of observing as well what their designments were, as their security, which he wisely improved. For seeing his time, he gathered what small Forces he could, and on the sudden surprized his careles enemies in their Camp, making a great slaughter of them, to the great terror of others of them in other parts of the Nation, who accounted the King dead long before. Shortly after this, the *Devonshire*-men joined Battel with King *Hubba*, whom they slew with a great number of his *Danes*, near unto a Castle then called *Kinwith*. The body of *Hubba* was there buried in the field, and thereof called *Hublestone*. In that fight the *English* took the *Danes* much-esteemed Banner, called *Reasau*, wherein a Raven pourtrayed was wrought in Needle-work by the three Sisters of *Hubba*. And now the *English* Fortunes seemed so advanced, that the *Danes* sent

sent to the King for Peace, which was condescended *Celneth unto*, and *Gormon*, or *Gurthrun* their King was Baptized; *Alfred* being his Godfather, and giving him the name of *Athelstone*, and withall bestowing on him, in free gift, *Gormonchester*, or *Godmonchester* near *Huntingdon*, with the adjoining Territories. Thirty of the chief *Danish* Nobility were likewise baptized, upon whom King *Alfred* bestowed many rich gifts. And that the limits of the *English* might be free from *Danish* Incursions, thus the confines of King *Alfred's* Kingdom were laid out. His Dominions were to stretch from the River *Thamisis*, and from thence to the Water of *Lea*, even unto the head of the same water, and so forth streight unto *Bedford*, and lastly, going along by the River *Ouse*, to end at *Watling-street*. But notwithstanding the agreement, the *Danes* were still unquiet, with whom one *Hastings*, a Noble-man of *Norway* joined, bringing a considerable force to their assistance. And in the year of Grace 901, this excellent King died much bewayl'd of his Subjects, whose body was first buried at *Winchester*, next removed into the Church of the new Monastery; and lastly, his Body, Monument, Church and Monastery, were all removed without the North-gate of the City, since called *Hide*. He was born at *Wanading*, now *Wantage* in *Berks*, where anciently was a Manor-House of the Kings of *England*.

*London* that had been destroyed and burnt by the *Danes* about A.D. 839, King *Alfred* repaired and made habitable again in A.D. 886. At *Edelingsey* he built a Monastery, at *Winchester* another, at *Shaftsbury* a Nunnery, where he made his Daughter *Ethelgeda* Abbess. The day and night consisting of 24 hours, did this virtuous Prince design equally (when State-busnes would permit such an order) to three special uses, and them he observed by the burning of a Taper set in his Oratory. Eight hours he spent in contemplation, reading and prayers, other eight hours for his repose and health, and the other eight in the affairs of State. His Kingdom he likewise divided into Shires, Hundreds and Tithings, for the better ad- mini-

ministration of Justice, and suppressing of Thieves; whereby he effected so great security to his Subjects, that honest men might travel without injury; and that bracelets of Gold being hanged in the High-ways, none durst be so bold as to take them away. He ordered all his Subjects possessing two Hides of Land, to bring up their Sons in Learning, till Fifteen years of Age at least; saying, *That he reputed a man free-born, and yet illiterate, no better than a Beast, a Brainless-body, and very Sot.* Nor would he admit any into Office in his Court, unless Learned. His Census or Tribute he divided into Six parts; the first part of which he gave to the poor; the 2d to the foundation of Churches; the 3d to Scholars at Oxford; the 4th to the Lights of the Church; the 5th to his Military men; the 6th to Labourers and Artificers. The best Laws for his Subjects good he rendred into English. The holy Gospel he rendred into the Saxon Tongue; and therein the Lord's Prayer after this manner,

*Fæder ure thu the Earth on Heafenum, si thin nama Gebal god,  
to be come thin Rice, Gewurthe thin willa on eorthan swa swa on  
heafnum, urne ge dæghwantican blaf syle us to dæg. And for-  
gyf us ure gyltas swa swa we forgivath urum gyltendum, And  
ne gelædde thu us on cosenung, ac Alyse us of yfel. [Si it  
swa.]*

Oxford  
University  
College.

He was a great protector of the Clergy, Widows and Orphans, devout in the Service of God. 'Tis also said of him, that he laid the Foundation of the University of Oxford, and of that College called

*University College.* Others say, that Oxford was built by one Memprilius a British King, and from him was at first named *Caer Mempric*; *Et crevit ibi posteris diebus no-  
bile studium generale, ab inclyta universitate de Greeklade deri-  
vatum.*

Baliol College was founded by John Baliol King of Scots, in A. D. 1263.

Merton Coll. founded by Walter de Merton, Lord Chancellor, and Bishop of Rochester, 1274.

Excester

*Excester Coll.* by Walter Stapleton, Bishop of Excester, and Lord Treasurer, 1316.

*Oriel Coll.* founded by King Edward the 2d, or by his Almoner Adam Brown, 1327.

*Queens Coll.* by Robert Eglesfield, Chaplain to Queen Philip Wife of Edward the 3d, 1340.

*New Coll.* by William of Wickham, Bishop of Winchester, 1379.

*Lincoln Coll.* first founded by Richard Fleming, Bishop of Lincoln, 1420. but finished by Thomas Rotheram, Bishop of the same See.

*All-souls* founded by Henry Chicheley Arch-bishop of Canterbury, 1437.

*Magdalen Coll.* by William Waniflet, Bishop of Winchester, 1459.

*Brazen-Nose Coll.* by William Smyth, Bishop of Lincoln, 1513. but finished by Richard Sutton.

*Corpus Christi Coll.* by Richard Fox, Lord Privy Seal, and Bishop of Winchester, 1516.

*Christ-Church* begun by Cardinal Wolsey, 1546. and by King Henry the 8th. ordained the Cathedral Church of the See of Oxford.

*Trinity Coll.* first founded by Thomas Hatfield, Bishop of Durham, by the name of *Durham Coll.* 1518. but after its suppression, Sir Thomas Pope restored it, and dedicated it to the holy *Trinity*, 1556.

*St. John's Coll.* founded by Henry Chicheley A. B. of Cant. by the name of *Bernard's College*, 1437. but after its suppression by Henry the 8th, Sir Thomas White Merchant-Taylor of London, rebuilt it to the honour of *St. John Baptist*, 1557.

*Jesus Coll.* by Dr. Hugh Price, 1562.

*Wadham Coll.* founded by Nicholas Wadham of Somersetshire, and Dorothy his Wife, 1613.

Some report that Cambridge was built by *Cantaber Cam-*  
*a Spaniard*, 375 years before the birth of Christ, bridge *u-*  
and that he founded the University there, and *niversity*.  
brought thither from *Athens* certain Philosophers, amonst whom *Anaximander* and *Anaxagoras*. Another Authour thus writeth, *Oxonii gymnasium institui Aluredus*  
(Alfred.) *hortante Neoto viro sanctissimo, unde, à tempore quo*  
*Cantabrigia*

*Cantabrigia sub Sigeberto, rege orientalium, & Oxonium sub Aluredo condita sunt, semper suere viri in Anglia doctissimi, a quibus Lutetia Parisiorum, Papia in Italia originem duxerunt. Cantabrigiae gymnasum praecepsit Oxonio annis 263, nam Sigebert, A. D. 630. Cantabrigiam erexit, & Alured Oxonium. A. D. 895. But as some contend, Cambridge began not to be an University, till such time that Hugh Balsham Bishop of Ely founded the*

*College of Peter-house, in A. D. 1256.*

*Clare-Hall, founded by Elizabeth de Burgo Countess of Clare, Widow of John de Burgo Earl of Ulster, in A. D. 1347.*

*Pembroke-Hall founded by Mary de St. Paul, Widow of Adomarius de Valentia Earl of Pembroke, 1347. First named Aula de Valence Maria.*

*Corpus Christi, commonly called Bennet College, was founded by the Alderman and Brethren of Corpus Christi Guild, and the Brethren of our Lady Guild in Cambridge, 1351.*

*Trinity-Hall was of old time an Hostel, or House of study, wherein Students lived at their own charge; but Dr. William Bateman founded it a College, 1353.*

*Gonvil and Caius Coll. first founded by Edmond de Gonvil, Rector of Terrington and Bushworth in Norfolk, 1353; and was repaired by John Caius Dr. of Physick, 1557.*

*King's Coll. by King Henry the 6th, 1441.*

*Queens Coll. by Margaret Andegravensis, Wife to King Henry the 6th, 1441; but finished by Elizabeth Wife to King Edward the 4th. 1465.*

*Katharine-Hall founded by Robert Woodlark Provost of King's-College, 1475.*

*Iesu's-College, from a desolate Nunnery, was converted into a College, by John Alcock Bishop of Ely, 1497.*

*Plemin-dus, A. B. Cant. Chrift's College founded by Margaret Countess of Derby (the Mother of King Henry the 7th.) in the place where the College of God's-house stood, 1505.*

*St. John's Coll. was erected upon the ruins of an ancient Hospital of regular Canons by the said Margaret Countess of Derby, 1508.*

*Magdalen*

*Magdalen Coll. first an Hall, wherein Monks of divers Monasteries studied; but in the year 1542, Thomas Audley Lord Chancellour of England, founded there a new College in honour of St. Mary Magdalene.*

*Trinity Coll. founded by King Henry the 8th, in A. D. 1546.*

*Emmanuel Coll. founded by Sir Walter Mildmay, 1584.*

*Sidney Sussex Coll. was founded by Frances Countess of Sussex, the Daughter of Sir William Sidney, A. D. 1598.*

**E**dward, surnamed the Elder, the eldest Son of Alfred, was Crowned at Kingstone upon Thames. At Wodnesfield, near Wolfrune Hampton, he obtained a great Victory over the Danes; for two of their Kings were slain, many of their Nobles, and an innumerable company of their Commons, which caused him both to be feared and loved. His Sister Elfreda had very hard travail of her first Child, therefore ever after she forbore the Nuptial embraces, alledging it to be an over-foolish pleasure, which brought with it so great pains. And listing her self under Mars, she, in person, assisted her Brother against the Danes, performing many manly feats. King Edward died at Farringdon, and was buried in the new Monastery of Winchester, in A. D. 924. His Issue were Ethelstan, Elfred, Elward, Edwin, Edmund, Edred, and nine Daughters. He built a Castle at Stafford, in A. D. 914. He likewise built a Castle at Huntingdon, in A. D. 917. which Henry the 2d afterward demolished, as some say. He also built Hereford out of the ruins of old Aviconium. Manchester in Lancashire, anciently Mancunium, having been destroyed in the British Wars, this King caused to be built again; because the Inhabitants had behaved themselves manfully against the Danes.

King Edward the elder built a new Town over against Nottingham, and made a Bridge over the River betwixt the two Towns.

*Ethelstan*

Ethelstan *Eþelstan* was Crowned at *Kingstone* by *Atholme* Arch-Bishop of *Canterbury*. This Prince, by the evil suggestions of his Cup-bearer, became suspicious of some Treason to be wrought against him by his Brother *Edwin*, therefore caused him to be put in a small Vessel without Tackle and Oars, and so to be exposed to the mercy of the waters; whence the young Prince, overcome with grief, cast himself headlong into the Sea: whose Ghost the King fought to pacifie by a Seven years voluntary penance, and building the two Monasteries of *Middleton* and *Michelness*. He also took revenge on his Cup-bearer by this occasion. On a festival-day, as his Cup-bearer was serving, one of his feet hapned to slip; but he recovered himself with the other, and thereupon pleasantly said, You see how one Brother helpeth another. Then the King, with grief, called to mind the death of his innocent Brother, and forthwith commanded Execution to be done upon his Cup-bearer, the procurer thereof. King Ethelstan, or *A-delstane* overcame in fight *Godfrey* the *Danish* King of *Northumberland*, *Constantine* King of *Scots*, and *Howell*, or *Ludwall* King of *Wales*, constraining them to submit unto his pleasure, which done, he presently restored them to their former estates, saying, That it was more honour to make a King than to be a King. He enlarged his dominions beyond any of his predecessors, and was in the greatest reputation with all foreign Princes, who sought his friendship both by alliance and rare presents. *Hugh* King of *France*, (besides some inestimable Jewels) sent him the Sword of *Constantine* the Great, in the Hilt whereof, all covered with Gold, was one of the Nails, as 'twas said, which fastned Christ to the Cross. He sent likewise the Spear of *charles* the Great, reputed to be the same which pierced the side of our Saviour; also a part of the Cross whereon he suffered, and a piece of the Crown of Thorns, and also the Banner of St. *Maurice*. And from *Otho* the Emperour, who had Married his Sister, was sent a vessel of pretious Stones, artificially

artificially made, wherein were Landships with Vines, *Ulfelinus*, Corn, Men, all seeming so naturally to move, as if or Wol-they had been really the things themselves. And stane, A.B. the King of Norway sent him a famous and rich Ship. *Cant.* Some of these Relicks he gave unto *Swithun's Abby* in *Winchester*, and the rest to the Monastery in *Malmsbury*. He beautified the City of *Excester*, founded *St. Germans* in *Cornwall*, *St. Petrocus* at *Bodman*, the Priory of *Pilton*, and enriched every famous Abby in the Land, either with new Buildings, Jewels, Books, or Revenues, as also he did certain Cities with the Mintage of his Money. Whereof in *London* were Eight Houses, at *Winchester* Six, *Lewis* Two, *Hastings* Two, *Hampton* Two, *Warham* Two, *Chichester* One, *Rochester* Three, two for the King, and one for the Bishop; *Canterbury* seven, four for the King, two for the A. Bishop, and one for the Abbat. He caused the Holy Bible to be translated into the *Saxon* Tongue. He died at *Glocester*, called by the *Britains* *Caer-Gloue*, i. e. Fair City, in A. D. 940, and was buried at *Malmsbury* in *Wilts*, first built by *Malmutius* a King of the *Britains*. About this King Ethelstan's time (if ever) lived that famous *Guy* Earl of *Warwick*. Now flourished that learned Abbat, named *Ælfrick*, who in an Epistle to *Wolstane*, then Arch-Bishop of *Canterbury*, thus writeth, ————— “The Lord which hallowed Houses (the Sacramental Bread and Wine) before his suffering, and saith, that the Bread was his own Body, and the Wine was truly his Bloud, he halloweth daily by the hands of the Priest, Bread to his Body, and Wine to his Bloud in ghostly mystery, as we reade in Books; and yet that lively Bread is not bodily so notwithstanding, not the self-same Body that Christ suffered in. Nor that holy Wine is the Saviour's Bloud which was shed for us in bodily thing, but in ghostly understanding. Both be truly that Bread his Body, and that Wine also his Bloud, as was the heavenly Bread, which we call Manna, that fed forty years God's people. And the clear Water Which did then run from the Stone in the Wil- dernes,

"dernes, was truly his Bloud, as *Paul* wrote in one of his Epistles. All our Fathers ate in the Wildernes the same ghostly meat, and drank the same ghostly drink. They drank of that ghostly stone, and that stone was Christ. The Apostle hath said as you now have heard, That they did all eat the same ghostly meat, and they all did drink the same ghostly drink. And he saith, not bodily, but ghostly. And Christ was not yet born, nor his bloud shed, when that the people of *Israel* ate that meat, and drank of that stone. And the stone was not bodily Christ though he so said. It was the same mystery in the old Law, and they did ghostly signify that ghostly housel of our Saviour's Body which we consecrate now. And in other Epistles of the said *Ælfric*'s, we reade it thus enjoined to Priests : The Priest shall say unto the People on Sundays and Holy-days the sense of the Gospel in *English*, and so also touching the Lord's Prayer and the Creed, so oft as he may to mens contrition, that they may know their belief, and keep sure their Christianity.

**Edmond, A.D. 940.** *E*dmond the 5th Son of King *Edward*, was Crowned at *Kingston*. He obtained many signal victories over the *Danes* in divers parts of the Land, recovering out of their hands several Counties and Cities ; but at his Manor of *Puckle kerks*, in the County of *Glocester*, whilst he was interposing himself between his Sewer and another to part a fray, he was, with a thrust through the body, wounded to death, in A.D. 946. and was buried at *Glastenbury*. His Issue was *Edwy* and *Edgar*.

**Edred, A.D. 946.** *E*dred was the Sixth Son of King *Edward*, and succeeded his Brother in the Non-age of his Sons. *Wolstane* Arch-Bishop of *Canterbury*, for some misdemeanours, he committed to custody ; but afterwards, in reverence to his Office, discharged him. So devout he was in the Religion of those times, that he suffered his Royal body to be chastised at the will and

and direction of *Dunstan* Abbat of *Glastenbury*, unto *Otho*, A. whose keeping he also committed the greatest part B. Cant. of his treasures and richest Jewels. The stately Abby of *Mich at Abingdon*, built by King *Inas*, but destroyed by the *Danes*, he repaired, and most richly endowed it, confirming the Charters with Seals of Gold. St. *Germans* he ordained a Bishops See, which there continued, till by *canutus* it was annexed to the Bishoprick of *Kynton* in *Devon*, both which Sees were by *Edward* the Confessour translated to *Excester*. He died in the year of Grace 955, and was interred in the old Minster or Monastery of *Winchester*. His Issue were *Elfrid* and *Bertfrid*.

**E**dwie, A.D. 955. *E*dry the eldest Son of King *Edmund* was Crowned at *Kingstone*, and on the day of his Coronation, as some Monks say, he, in sight of his Nobles, as they sate in Council, abused the body of a great Lady his near Kinswoman, and not long after slew her Husband, that he might the more freely injoy his incestuous pleasure. A great enemy he was to the Monks Order, expelling them from some of their Monasteries, and placing Married Priests in their vacancies. *Dunstan* the Saint he expelled the Realm, either for his bold reprehensions of him, or for detaining the Treasure his Uncle had committed to his keeping, or both ; but the People, having conceiting *Dunstan* to be a very holy man, they turned their affections from him, and sware their fealty to *Edgar* ; for very grief whereof he pined away and died, A.D. 959. and was buried in the Church of the New Abby at *Winchester*.

**E**dgard furname the Peaceable, was Crowned at *Edgar, A. Kingston* by *Otho* Arch-bishop of *Canterbury*. To D. 959. rid the Land of Wolves, which then were very plenty, instead of the Tribute imposed on the Prince of *Wales* by King *Athelstan*, he appointed *Ludwall* Prince of *Wales*, to pay yearly 300 Wolves. His Navy-Royal consisting of 3600 Ships, he employed in

in securing the Coasts from Pirates and foreign enemies, wherein himself would sail every Summer. And in the Winter he would circuit the Countrey, taking an account of the administration of his Laws, and demeanour of his great men, especially his Judges, whom he would punish severely, if he found them to have been guilty of bribery, or partiality, insomuch that there was never less robbery, deceit or oppression than in the reign of this King. His State was so flourishing in peace and prosperity, that caused divers Kings to bind themselves in League with him. Wars he had none in all his Reign, save a little towards the latter end thereof by the Welsh, whom he quickly curbed. But that which darkned his glory, was his lasciviousness. For he deflowered a certain Nun called *Wolfchild*, on whom he begat St. *Edyth*; after her another named *Ethelhede*, on whom he begat his Son *Edward*. And after this, happening to hear a Western Dukes Daughter extolled for her beauty, he came to her Fathers house, commanding her to his bed. But her Mother, tender of her honour, instead of her Virgin-daughter, brought her servant-maid in the dark to the King; who well enough pleas'd him that night; though in the morning when he understood the deceit, he checked the Lady, yet entertain'd this Servant for his Concubine, keeping to her bed alone till he married his lawfull Wife *Elfrida*, Earl *Ordgarus* daughter: The fame of whose excelling beauty coming to his Ear, he employed Earl *Ethelwold*, his Favourite, to go to visit her, and if he found her beauty suiting, then to court and secure her for the King. But *Ethelwold* liked her so well when he saw her, that he courted her for himself, and at his return to Court, pretended to the King, that her beauty was far short of what it was famed to be; therefore besought the King, in respect she was a great Heires, that he would solicite her Father to bestow her upon him to Wife; Which the credulous King did: But the Duke had not been long married with fair *Elfrida*, e'er a fresh commendation of

her

her beauty founded in the King's ears: Whereupon *Elsius* and he resolved to make his own eyes the Witnesses, Dunstane which accordingly he did: And upon sight of her *A. Bps. of Ethelwold* at the advantage, as they were hunting together, he ran him through with his Javelin, then took *Elfreda* to be his Wife, who was very willing to embrace the honour.

*Edgar*, at the instigation of *Dunstane*, now Archbishop of *Canterbury*, displaced the Married Priests, and possessed their vacancies with Monks of single life. To repress Drunkenness, which the *Danes* had brought in, he ordained a fine, by certain Pins in the Pot, with penalty to any that presumed to drink deeper than the Mark. He died, A.D. 975, and was buried in the Abby of *Glastenbury*.

His Issue were, *Edward*, *Edmond* and *Ethelred*.

*Ordolph* the Son of *Ordgare* Earl of *Devonshire*, in A.D. 961, built a famous Abby at *Tavistoke* in *Devon*. *Ethelwold* Bishop of *Winchester*, about A.D. 963, and in the reign of King *Edgar*, in a great Famine sold away all the sacred Vessels of his Church for to relieve the poor, saying, That there was no reason that the sensless Temples of God should abound in riches, and lively Temples of the Holy Ghost to want them.

*Edward*, surnamed the *Martyr*, was much opposed Edw. II. by his Mother-in-law Queen *Elfreda*, and many of the Nobles, as being illegitimate; but by the procurement of *Dunstane* and the Clergy, he was admitted to be King, and was Crowned at *Kingstone* in A.D. 975. The beginning of whose Reign was attended with a miserable barrenness of the ground, and Murrain amongst Cattel. A dreadfull Comet also appeared. These many men thought to be signs and judgments sent from Heaven, for the sins committed against the Married Clergy, who were expulsed from their ancient possessions. In favour of whom the Duke of *Mercia* destroyed the Monasteries in his Province, cast out the Monks, restoring

¶

¶

Ethelgar to the Priests and their Wives their ancient revenues. On the contrary, Duke *Edelwin* in East *Saxia* and Elfrick A.B. grievously oppressed the married Priests. To put an end therefore to these troubles, and to prevent the dangers that might ensue, the case was referred to be heard in Council at *Winchester*; where the business was debated so long, till the Monks were in hazard of losing the day. Whereupon it was persuaded to be referred to the Rood, placed where the Council sat; which Oracle (after devout prayers made unto it) thus spake, *God forbid it should be so, God forbid it should be so: you judged well once; and to change that again is not good.* Upon which words the married Priests went down the wind. But they disclosing to the people that this was but a trick of the Monks, in placing a man behind the wall, who, through a trunk, uttered these words in the mouth of the Rood: it was therefore instantly desired, that the case might be once more scanned, which was granted; and at *Cleves* in *Wiltshire*, the Prelates, Peers and Commons assembled, where, being set in Consultation, the Chamber-floor, being over-preferred with the weight of People, broke, and fell down, hurting many, and killing others; onely Saint *Dunstane*, by a Miracle, remained without any hurt, the post, whereon his Chair stood, standing still firm. This is the story. And now the secular married Priests were left to take care without any Cure. But King *Edward*, as he hunted near *Corf-Castle*, where *Elfreda* and her Son *Ethelred* resided, either on purpose, or by chance, parted from his company, and came to the Castle to visit his Brother-in-law; where, as he sat on Horse-back at the gate, dis coursing with *Elfreda* and *Ethelred*, and whilst he was drinking a cup of Wine, a knife was struck into his back, by a Servant whom *Elfreda* had appointed thereunto. Whereupon the King, setting spurs to his Horse, rode away; but fainting, through the loss of much blood, he fell from his Horse, and with one foot in the stirrup was drag'd up and down the woods and grounds, till in the end his body was left

left dead at *Corfe's Gate*; and was first buried at *War-* Siricus *bam*, afterwards removed to the Minster of *Shaftsbury*. and *Elfreda* his Mother-in-law, sore repenting the fact, phegus, to expiate her guilt, and pacifie his crying blood (as A.B.Cant. she thought) founded the Monasteries of *Almsbury* and *Worwell*, in the last whereof she died and was buried.

**E**thelred, for his flowness, surnamed *The unready*, was Ethelred, Crowned at *Kingstone*. Upon his Coronation a Cloud was seen through *England*, one half like blood, 978. the other half like fire: And in the third year of his Reign the *Danes* arrived in sundry places of the Land, and did much spoil. And about the same time a great part of *London* was consumed by fire. He payed tribute 4000*l.* yearly (called *Dane gilt*) to the *Danes*. His Reign was much molested with *Danish* Invasions in divers parts of the Land. And so low were the *English* at that time, by the intruding *Danes*, that they were forced to till and sow the ground, while the *Danes* sate idle in their houses, and ate that which they toiled for. Also abusing their Daughters and Wives, and having all at their command, the *English*, for very fear, calling them *Lord Danes*. Hence we call a lazy Lubber a *Lurdane*. In this the *English* distressed estate, the King, at last, sent forth a secret Commission into every City within his Dominions, That upon the Thirteenth day of November they should Massacre all the *Danes* which were amongst them. This Command of the Kings the people put in execution with extreme rigour, in A.D. 1002. But to revenge this great destruction of the *Danes*, *Swein* King of *Denmark* prepared a very great Navy, and arrived in the West of *England*, and shortly after *Canutus* brought 200 sail of ships, well furnished, to his assistance. And in A.D. 1016, King *Ethelred* died, and was buried at *St. Pauls*.

His Issue were *Ethelstan*, *Egbert*, *Edmond*, *Edred*, *Edwy*, *Edgar*, *Edward*, *Elfred*, and four Daughters.

Livingus A. B. ~~s~~ In the year of our Lord 991, was Ipswich in Suffolke sacked by the Danes. And in A.D. 1004, Thetford in Norfolk, anciently called *Sitomagus*, was sack'd by the Danes; for the recovery whereof, Bishop *Arfast* removed his Episcopal See from Elmham thither. Norwich was fired by the Danes; its Castle was afterward re-edified by *Hugh Bigod Earl of Norfolk*.

**E**dmond Ironside, the eldest son that Ethelred had living at his death, was Crowned at Kingstone by *Livingus* Archbishop of Canterbury, A.D. 1016. At which time the Danes were so powerfull in England, that *Canute* was accepted King at Southampton by many of the Clergy and Laity, who sware fealty to him. But the City of London stood most firm for *Edmond*, and bravely withstood *Canute* besieging it, till such time that King *Edmond* came and relieved them. At Penham near Gillingham King *Edmond* engaged with the Danes, where he put many of them to the sword, and the rest to flight. And not long after, his and the Danish Host met nigh to Shrewsbury in *Worcestershire*, where the battel was, for the first day, fought with equal success; but on the next day, when the English were in forwardness and probability of the victory, the Traytour *Edrick* on purpose disanimated them, by cutting off the head of a dead Souldier, putting it on his sword point, then crying to the English Host, *Fly ye wretches, fly, and get you away, for your King is slain; behold, here is his head; seek therefore now to save your own lives.* By which means the fight ended on even hands. And the next night following *Canute* stole away toward London, whom *Ironside* followed, first raising the siege that *Canutus* had laid against London, and then marching after him to Brentwood, where he gave the Danes a great overthrow. Then near unto Otesford in Kent, the two Armies met again, and fought in furious manner, till at last the day fell to the English, who slew Four thousand five hundred men, with the loss but of Six hundred, and put the rest to flight, whom the King had pursued to their utter confusion,

sion, had not his Brother-in-law *Edrick* play'd the Traytour again, dissuading him from the chase of them, under the pretence of danger of ambushments, and the English Souldiers over-weariedness. Whereupon *Canute* had the opportunity of passing over into Essex, where his scattered Forces rallied, and fresh supplies came in to them. After whom *Edmond* advanced, and at Ashdon by Saffron Walden, the Armies joined battel, when a bloody slaughter ensued, with the hopes of Victory on the English side; which the ever-trayterous *Edrick* perceiving, he withdrew his strength to the Danes, the enemy thereby regaining the day. Of King *Edmond's* Nobles were slain, Duke *Alfred*, Duke *Godwin*, Duke *Athelward*, Duke *Ethelwin*, Earl *Urcel*, with *Cadnoth* Bishop of Lincoln, and *Wolsey* Abbat of Ramsey, and others of the Clergy that were come thither to pray for good success to the English. The Memorial of this Battel is still retained by certain small hills there remaining where the dead were buried. From hence King *Edmond* marched to Gloucester with a very small Army, which he there encrreated. After him *Canute* followed, and at Dearhurst, near Severn, both Hosts met, and were ready to join battel; when by the motion of a certain Captain, *Edmond* and *Canute* undertook by single Combat to end the difference. So entring into a small Island called Alney, adjoining to Gloucester, there they valiantly fought, till *Canute* having received a dangerous wound, and finding *Edmond* to over-match him in strength, he thus spake to the English King: "What necessity should move us, most valiant Prince, that for the obtaining of a Title, we should thus endanger our lives? Better it were to lay Malice and Weapons aside, and to condescend to a loving Agreement. Let us now therefore become sworn Brothers, and divide the Kingdom betwixt us, and in such league of amity, that each of us may use the others as his own: So shall this Land be peaceably governed, and we jointly assist each other's necessity."

Which words ended, they both casting down their Swords, embrace as friends, with the great joy and shouting of both Armies. And according to *ca-nute's* proposal, the Kingdom was divided betwixt them, *Edmond* having that part that lay coasting upon *France*, *Canute* the rest. But the *Traytour Duke Edrick*, with design to work himself farther into *Canutus's* favour, procured *Edmond* to be thrust into the body as he was easing nature. Then cutting off his head, he presented *Canute* therewith, saying, *All hail, thou now sole Monarch of England, for behold here the head of thy Co-partner, which for thy sake I have adventured to cut off.* To whom *Canute*, like a worthy King, replyed, That in regard of that service, the bringer's own head should be advanced above all the Peers of his Kingdom; A while after performing this his promise, by causing *Edrick's* head to be cut off, and placed on the highest Gate of *London*. But some say that King *Edmond* died a natural death at *London*, when he had reigned seven Months, whose body was buried at *Glastenbury*.

His Issue were, *Edward* surnamed the *Out-law* (because he lived out of *England* during the reign of the *Danes*) and *Edmond*.

## D A N E S

71  
Livingus,  
A.B. Can-

## D A N E S.

**C**ANUTE the Dane, after the death of *Edmond*, *Canute*, seized upon the other half part of the Kingdom, the English Nobles owning him for their rightfull King, and swearing Allegiance to him. He was Crowned at *London* by *Livingus Elstane*, Arch-bishop of *Canterbury*, A.D. 1017.

A.D. 1017

And to establish the Crown more sure to himself, he banished *Edwin*(the son of King *Ethelred*,) who for his melancholy and regardless behaviour, was called, *The King of Churles*. He also sent away *Edward* and *Edmond*, the sons of *Edmond Ironside*. Next he espoused *Emma* the Widow of King *Ethelred*, and sister to the Duke of *Normandy*, on this condition, That the issue of her body by him should inherit the English Crown.

Then calling a Parliament of his Peers to *Oxford*, he there established these Laws following, viz. That all decent Ceremonies, tending to the increase of Reverence and Devotion in the Service of God, should be used as need required. That the Lord's Day should be kept holy. That a Clergy-man killing a Lay-man, or for any other notorious crime, should be deprived both of his Order and Dignity. That a married woman, convict of Adultery, should have her nose and ears cut off: And a Widow marrying within the space of twelve months after her Husbands decease, should lose her Joynture. And amongst many other good Laws he made in the time of his Princely Government, (faith my Authour) hath also this, "We admonish diligently all Christian men, that they do always love God with an inward heart, and be diligently obedient to Divine Teachers, and do subtilly search God's Learning and Laws, often and daily to the profit of them-

Egel-noth, A.B. "themselves. And we warn that all Christian men do learn to know, at the least-wife, the right Belief, and aright to understand, and learn the *Pater Noster* and the *Creed*. For that with the one every Christian man shall pray unto God, and with the other shew forth right belief. He went on Pilgrimage to *Rome*, where he complained against the excessive actions, and vast sums of money extorted by the Pope from the English Arch-bishops, at such times as they received their Palls from thence. Which the Pope engaged to redress for the future. The greatness and glory of this King was such, that some Court-Parasites sought to persuade him, that he possessed a more than humane power; but he, to demonstrate the contrary (being then at *Southampton*) caused a Chair to be set on the Shore, when the Sea began to flow, then sate himself in it, and in the presence of his many attendants, thus spake to the swelling waves; *Thou Sea art part of my dominion, don't therefore, on pain of punishment, presume so much as to wet the robes of thy Lord.* But the unruly Sea swelling on farther and farther, first wet his skirts, then thighs; so that the King suddenly started up, and retiring, said, *Let the inhabitants of the world know, that the power of Kings is but weak and vain; and that none is worthy the name of King, save he that keepeth Heaven, Earth and Sea in obedience to his own will.* After which time he would never wear his Crown, but therewith crowned the Picture of Christ on the Cross at *Winchester*, which became a prize to the Churchmen. He died in A.D. 1035, and was buried at *Winchester*. His Issue were, *Swein, Harold, Hardicanute, and two Daughters.*

In *Essex* he built the Church of *Afdon*, where he had the victory of King *Edmond*. In *Norfolk* he founded the Abby of *St. Benets*, and in *Suffolk* the Monastery of *St. Edmond*, which Saint he much dreaded. To the Church of *Winchester*, besides other rich Jewels, he gave a Cross, worth as much as the Revenue of *England* amounted to in one year. And unto *Coventry*, they say, he gave the Arm of *St. Augustine*, which

which at *Papia* cost him an Hundred Talents of Silver, and one of Gold.

Elnothus  
A.B. Can.

**H**arold, for his exceeding swiftness, surnamed *Hare-foot*, the base Son of King *Canute*, in the absence of *Hardicanute*, his Father's Son by Queen *Emma*, was admitted King by the Nobility, and Crowned at *Oxford* by *Elnothus* Archbishop of *Canterbury*. Which done, for the better securing of his Crown to himself, he sought means to gain *Edward* and *Alfred* (the two surviving Sons of King *Ethelred*) into his hands. In order whereunto, he sent to them into *Normandy* a Letter feigned in their Mother *Emma*'s name, inviting them over into *England* for the recovery of their right. But when Prince *Alfred* was accordingly arrived, Earl *Goodwin*, who pretended great kindness unto him, betrayed him and his small party brought over with him, into *Harold*'s hands, who at *Guildford* committed them to the slaughter, onely reserving every tenth man, either for service or sale. *Alfred* he sent prisoner into the *Ise of Ely*, where his eyes being put out, he, in short time after, died through grief and pain. Queen *Emma*'s Goods *Harold* confiscated, banished her out of the Realm, and oppressed the English people with great payments. He died at *Oxford*, A.D. 1040, and was buried at *Westminster*.

**H**ardicanute, upon the death of *Harold*, was, by the States of the Land, as well English as *Danes*, invited over from *Denmark*, to take upon him the Government of the Kingdom, which he accordingly did, and was Crowned at *London* by *Elnothus*, Archbishop of *Canterbury*. The dead body of his half-Brother King *Harold*, he caused to be taken up, and to be thrown into the River *Thames*, which being found by a Fisher-man, he buried it in the Church-yard of *St. Clements Danes*; so called, because the great Burial place of the *Danes*.

Hardicanute, A.D.  
1040.

*Hardicanute*, for the maintaining of his Fleet, imposed heavy tributes on the English, insomuch, that two

two of the Collectors thereof, named *Thurstan* and *Feader*, were slain by the Citizens of *Worcester*; for which fact their City was burnt, and their Bishop *Alfred* expulsed the See, till that with Money he had purchased his peace. Earl *Goodwin* presented to this King a Ship, whose Stern was of Gold, with Eighty Souldiers in her, all uniformly and richly suited: On their heads they all wore gilt Burghnets; and on their bodies a triple gilt Habergion; Swords with gilt hilts girded to their waists, a Battel-ax (after the manner of the *Danes*) on their left shoulders, a Target with gilt bosses born in their left hand, a Dart in the right hand, and their arms bound about with two Bracelets of Gold, of six ounces weight. But as *Hardicanute* was revelling and carousing at *Lambeth*, in a solemn Assembly and Banquet, he suddenly fell down dead. The day of whose death, instead of laments, was annually celebrated, amongst the common people, with open pastimes in the Streets. Which time (being the eighth of June) is called *Hoc tide*, or *Hacxtide*, signifying a time of scorn and contempt, which fell upon the *Danes* by his death. He was buried at *Winchester*, A. D. 1042.

About four years before the *Danes* first coming into *England* (which was near the year of our Lord 789) showers of bloud fell from Heaven, and bloody Crosses were therewith marked upon mens garments. 'Tis said also, that after the *Danes* had seated themselves in *England*, whilst the English were drinking, they would stab them, or cut their throats; to prevent which, when the English man drank, he requested the next sitter by to be his surety or pledge: Hence our custome of pledging one another, 'tis said.

## S A X O N S.

## S A X O N S.

**E**dward the Confessor, the Son of King *Ethelred* and Edward Queen *Emma*, was born at *Islip*; and after his Father's death, was, for his safety, sent unto the Duke of Normandy, his Mothers Brother; but upon the death of *Hardicanute*, the English Nobility (distraining all Danish subjection) invited *Edward* to return into *England*, and to execute the Kingly Office. He was Crowned at *Winchester* by Edsine Archbishop of *Canterbury*, A. D. 1042.

He remitted that heavy Tribute of Forty thousand pound yearly, gathered by the name of *Dane-gilt*, which had been paid for forty years continuance, out of the Lands of all, the Clergy excepted; Because (say our ancient Laws) the King reposed more confidence in the prayers of the holy Church, than in the power of Armies. Then from the divers Laws of the *Mercians*, *West Saxons*, *Danes*, and *Northumbrians*, he selected the best, and made them one body certain, and written in *Latine*. His Reign was more spent in peace, and works of piety, than in wars and bloud: Only some slight troubles hapned from the *Danes*, *Irish* and *Welsh*, and also from Earl *Goodwin* and his Sons, who being very powerfull and proud, caused some molestations in the State. But the sins of the people, which were then great, procured other Judgments instead of War: For in the month of *January* there fell a great snow, which covered the ground to the midst of *March*, whereby Cattel and Fowls in abundance perished. And on the next year following, a strange and terrible Earthquake hapned, and withall such Lightnings as burnt up the Corn growing in the fields, whereby an excessive Dearth ensued.

This

**Robert,** This King, by the instigation of the Archbishop of *Canterbury*, and *Goodwin* Earl of *Kent*, dealt too rigorously with his own Mother, depriving her of all her Jewels, and other substance, and committing her to safe custody in the Abbey of *Worwell*. And moreover, put her to undergo that over-hard Law, *Ordalium*, which was, to pass over nine Plowshare-irons red glowing hot, bare-foot and blind-fold. By which tryal she is said to have acquit her self; in somuch that having passed them over before she knew it, cryed and said, *O good Lord, when shall I come to the place of my purgation?* The King her Son hereupon received her into his favour again. And she, in memory of her deliverance from this fiery tryal, gave nine Manors (according to the number of the Plowshares) to the Minster of *Winchester* (wherein she had that tryal) and adorned the same with many rich ornaments. And the King, repenting the wrong he had done her, bestowed on the same place the Isle of *Portland*. The causes objected against Queen *Emma*, and for which she suffered the loss of her goods, were her marriage with *Canute*, the Capital enemy of *England*, and her neglecting to succour *Edward* and his Brother in their exile. The matter objected against her, for which she underwent the *Ordalium*, was incontinency of Body with *Alvis Bishop of Winchester*.

Of this King it is storied, that as he lay in his Bed, in an afternoon, with the curtains drawn about him, a certain pilfering Courtier came into his Chamber, where finding the Kings Casket open (which *Hugoline* his Chamberlain had forgot to shut) he took out as much Coin as he could conveniently carry, and went away. Did the like a second time. Came again the third time; when the King spake to him, and bad him speedily be packing whilst he was well, adding, that if *Hugoline* should come and take him there, he should not onely lose all he had gotten, but also stretch an halter. And when *Hugoline* came, and missing the money, was greatly troubled; the King wish'd him not to be griev'd: for (saith he)

he) the man that had it, bath more need of it than we have. Robert, When this devout King, lying on his death-bed, perceived those about him to weep and lament, he said unto them, If ye loved me ye would not weep, but rejoice, because I go to my Father, with whom I shall receive the joys promised to the faithfull, not through my Merits, but by the free Mercy of my Saviour, which sheweth mercy on whom he pleaseth. He died A.D. 1066. and with great laments was buried at *Westminster*. He is said to be the first King that cured that Disease commonly called the King's Evil. This King, of a little Monastery, dedicated to St. Peter at *Westminster*, made a most beautifull Church and large, and founded St. Margaret's Church standing by; and this he did for the discharge of his vowed Pilgrimage to *Jerusalem*. He founded also the College of St. Mary *Otery* in *Devon*. And removed the Bishop's See from *Cridlington* to *Excester*.

He married *Edith* the daughter of Earl *Goodwin*, which Earl took bread and eat it in witness that he was not guilty of the death of Prince *Alfred*; but as soon as he had received the bread, he was choaked at the Table before the King at *Windsor*.

**H**arold the Son of Earl *Goodwin*, notwithstanding that *Edgar Etheling*, the Grandson of *Ironside*, was the next rightfull heir, yet gained the English Crown to himself; Which he set upon his own head, without all ceremony and solemn celebration, none either greatly approving or disapproving his presumption, save onely for the omission of the manner and form of Coronation. But now *Harold*, to gain and retain the love of all, lightned the burthens of Custom and Tribute that his Predecessours had laid upon the people; was liberal to the Churchmen, repaired their Monasteries, new-built that at *Waltham* in *Essex*: He created young *Edgar Earl of Oxford*, and held him in special favour. And to all men was affable and kind, whence he much fasned the hearts of his subjects unto himself. But this tranquil estate was quickly disturb'd by the *Norman Duke*, who first sent his Embassage, claiming Right to the Kingdom

A.B.Cant.

Kingdom of *England* by the promise of King *Edward*, and his ratifying the same with the consent of the State, and by *Harold's* own Oath given to the Duke, for keeping the Kingdom on his behalf; and then (upon *Harold's* slighting the Embassie) he made preparation for gaining of *England* by force. But ere Duke *William*, with his *Normans*, are arrived on the English shore, *Harfager*, King of *Denmark*, invaded the Land (with whom *Tosse*, the cruel Earl of *Northumberland*, *Harold's* Brother, joined) against whom *Harold* marched, and at a Bridge called *Stamford* (where he was to pass over) one *Dane* made good, for a time, the Bridge against his whole Host, and with his Axe slew forty of his men, himself, at last, being slain with a dart. When the *English* had gain'd the Bridge, and were reduc'd into their ranks, *Harold*, most boldly, set upon the *Danes* in their Camp, vanquished them, and slew *Harfager* and *Tosse*, with many other persons of note, and gain'd an exceeding rich booty, both of gold and silver, then seized on their great Navy.

And now *William* the *Norman* being well furnished with a vast Fleet of Ships well Man'd, store of Money drawn from his people, the Pope's Benediction, who had sent him a consecrated Banner, an *Agnus Dei*, and one of the Hairs of St. *Peter*, with a Curse to all that should oppose him. Thus prepared, the Duke arrived at *Pevensey* in *Sussex*, Sep. 28. where when he came to Land, his foot chanced to slip, and he fell into the mud, and all mired his hands; which accident was presently construed for a lucky pre-fage: *For now* (said a Captain) *O Duke, thou hast taken possession, and holdest of that Land in thine hand, whereof shortly thou shalt become King.* But the Duke thus landed, he set fire on his Fleet, thereby to cut off all occasion or hope from his men of returning. And from *Pevensey* he marched to *Hastings*, divulging, as he went, the causes of his coming, which was, for the obtaining of his Kingdom; it being, as he said, his by donation from *Edward*; giving withall a severe charge to his Souldiers not to wrong any of their persons,

persons, who, in a short time after, were to become *Stigand*, his Subjects. To *Harold* he sent his Messenger, commanding the Kingdom, and *Harold's* subjection. But *Harold* returned him this answer by the same Messenger, *That unless he forthwith departed the Land, he would make him sensible of the strokes of his just displeasure.* And with a brave and undaunted mind the valiant *Harold* advanced his Forces into *Sussex*, pitching his Camp within seven miles of his Enemy. When the Armies were come near together, and ready to engage, the *Norman* Duke, to save the effusion of Christian bloud, as he said, sent a Monk, as a Mediatour for peace, with offers to *Harold* of these conditions; Either wholly to resign the Kingdom to him, or in sight of the Armies to try the quarrel with him in single combat, or to stand to the Arbitrement of the Pope. To whom *Harold* answered, That it should the next day be tryed with more Swords than one. The next day was the Fourteenth of *October*, which *Harold* ever accounted fortunate, because his birthday, and with hopefull assurance desired greatly the approach of the same. His Souldiers likewise, too confident of Victory, spent the night in revellings, The morning being come, they both Marshalled their Battels. The *Kentish* men *Harold* placed with their heavy Axes, or Halberts, in the Van (for by ancient custome they had the Front belonging to them:) Then the Battels joined, both parts bravely fighting; but the *Norman* perceiving that by true valour he could not vanquish the *English*, betook himself to a strategem, commanding his Men to retreat, yet withall to keep in good order; which the *English* seeing, supposed that they had fled, and thereupon pursued their Enemy so rashly, that they put themselves into disorder. Which opportunity *William* took hold of, so that facing about, and charging them fiercely, when disranked, he made a great slaughter of the *English*. Yet would not any of the remaining *English* flee the field, but mansfully fought it out, till such time that *Harold*, wounded into the brains with an Arrow, through the left eye, fell down

*A. B. Can.*

down dead. With *Harold* died his Brethren *Gyrb* and *Leofwine*, with most of the English Nobility. And of the Souldiers were slain Sixty seven thousand nine hundred seventy and four; some say an Hundred thousand. The Conquerour had three Horses slain under him, yet lost not a drop of blood by the Enemy. He wön this battel with the loss onely of 6013 Men. It was fought in *Sussex* seven miles from *Hastings*, upon Saturday the 14th of *October*, A.D. 1066. The English, after this loss, had designed to have made *Edgar Atheling* King, and to have took the field again against the Conquerour, but the Earls of *Yorkshire* and *Cheshire*, *Edwin* and *Morcar* the Queens Brothers, plotting secretly to get the Crown to themselves, hinder'd the design.

The Body of King *Harold* (despoiled of his Ornaments, and by a base Souldier mangled and hack'd in the leg (for which the Conquerour cashier'd him for ever,) after much search, was found among the dead bodies, and by the English Nobles conveyed to *Waltham* in *Essex*, where it was Solemnly and Royally interred.

A little before the fight a dreadfull Comet appeared.

*Tost* Earl of *Northumberland*, in spight to his Brother *Harold*, slew all *Harold's* Servants, and cutting them piece-meal, salted some of their limbs, and cast the rest into Vessels of Meath and Wine, sending his Brother word, that he had furnished him with powder'd meat against his return home.

This he did at *Harold's* House when he was absent.

*William the CONQUEROUR.*

Octo. 14.  
A.D. 1066

*William the Conquerour* was the base Son of *Robert Duke of Normandy*. His Mother *Arlotte* (a Skinners Daughter) when she was great with him, dreamed, that her bowels were extended and dilated all over *Normandy* and *Britain*. And as soon as he was born, being laid on the Chamber-floor, with both his hands he took up Rushes, and held them fast therein; which things were taken for presages of his future greatness. He began his Reign *October 14. A.D. 1066.* and was Crowned *December 25* in the same year, by *Aldred* Arch-Bishop of *York*, the English Bishops and Barons swearing Allegiance to him; and himself taking a solemn Oath to defend the rights of the Church, to establish good Laws, and to see Justice uprightly administred. After which, he applied himself to secure his new-obtained Kingdom; and the better to assure the South of the Land, he took his way toward *Dover*, that so he might command the Seas from Enemies arravage, and over-awe the *Kentish*, a most strong and populous Province. But *Stigand* Arch-Bishop of *Canterbury*, and *Eglefne* Abbat of *St. Augustines*, hearing of his coming, assembled the Commons of *Kent* to oppose him, who, about *Swancomb*, kept themselves secret in the Woods, waiting the coming of the Conquerour. All joyntly agreeing ( because no way lay open save onely a Front ) to carry in their hands great branches of Trees, wherewith they might keep themselves both from discovery, and, if need were, impede the passage of the *Normans*; Which said

G

Lanfrank  
A.B. Can.  
~~~~~

said device took so strong effect, that it daunted King *William*, even with the sight; who being, as he thought, free from the Enemy, was now, on the sudden, beset on all sides with Woods, some of which he saw to move, and the rest, for ought he knew, were of the like nature. At length, to put him out of all doubt, the *Kentish* men inclosing his Army about, displayed their Banners, cast down their Boughs, and with Bows bent were prepared for Battel. At which sight the Conquerour stood amazed. To whom *Stigand* and *Eglefisne* presented themselves, and in behalf of the *Kentish* men thus spake,

" Most noble Duke, behold here the Commons of Kent are come forth to meet, and receive you as their Sovereign, requiring your Peace, their own free condition of Estate, and ancient Laws. If these things be denied, they are here presently to abide the verdict of Battel, being fully resolved rather to die, than to part with their Laws, or to live servile in bondage. The Conquerour, in this strait, more wisely than willingly, granted their demands. Some of the English this *Norman* King banished, and most part of every man's Estate he seized into his own hands, bestowing the Lands of the Natives amongst his followers. He deprived Monasteries, Bishopricks, Cities and Corporations of their ancient Liberties and Privileges, putting them to redeem them at his own rate. And for default of lacking the weight of a Groat in the payment of 700 Marks by the Monks of *Ely*, for the restoring to their Abby the ancient possessions, they were constrained to pay 1000 Marks more. The Clergy he charged with maintenance for his Wars, bereaved the Religious Houses of their Treasures, Chalices and rich Shrines; abrogated, for the most part, the ancient Laws of the Land, ordaining new in their stead, not so equal or easie to be kept; also causing them to be writ in the *Norman* Tongue. He ordained the four Law Terms, whereas before the causes of the Kingdom were determined in every Shire, or by the late Law of King *Edward* in their

Gemote,

*Gemote*, or Conventicle, held monthly in every Lanfrank, Hundred. He commanded every English Household to put out both Fire and Candle at eight of the Clock at Night. At which hour, in all Cities, Towns and Villages, he caused a Bell to be rung by the Normans, then called *Couvre-feu*, that is, Cover-fire, to prevent nightly Meetings. He laid great Subsidies upon the Land. And that the same might account to his greater benefit he caused an exact survey to be taken of the whole Kingdom, and of every particular part and Commodity thereof, causing all the people of England to be numbred, their names taken, and what every one might dispend by the year; their substance, Money and Bondmen recorded. How many yokes of Oxen and Plow-lands were in the Realm, and what services they owed him. Which done, he exacted Six Shillings to be paid him for every Hide of Land. The Book thus made of every several survey, by the English was called Doomsday Book. He permitted no English man to bear any office of trust and credit. He dispeopled 36 Parish Towns, laying the Churches and Towns flat with the earth, making thereof a Forest for pleasure, now called New-Forest. To strengthen himself against revolts and rebellions, he fortified such places as he thought most convenient for his purpose, and built the Tower of London, the Castles of York, Lincoln, Nottingham and Hastings. He was the first that brought the Jews to inhabit England. His Son Robert rebelled against him in Normandy, and, in fight, dismounted him; but then knowing his voice, desired his pardon, and remounted him. Odo Bishop of Bayeux, and Earl of Kent, his Brother by the Mother, for secretly siding with the King of France, he committed to Prison, not as Bishop, but as he was Earl, and seized his Estate. Some of whose Gold, ground into powder, was found hidden in the bottom of Rivers. The Conquerour going to War against the King of France, in Normandy fell sick, when keeping his Bed beyond his wont, and the French King hearing that the Disease was in his Belly, scoffingly

*William the Conquerour.*

dingly said of him, *Our Cousin William is laid now in Child-bed, Oh what a number of Candles must I offer at his going to Church!* surely, I think, an hundred thousand will not suffice. Which King William hearing of, said, Well, I trust our Cousin of France shall be at no such cost, but after this my Child-birth, at my going to Church (Swearing by the Resurrection and Brightness of God) I will find him a thousand Candles, and light them myself. And accordingly not long after, he entred France with a great Army, spoiling all where he came, and setting the City *Mauntz* on fire: But he came to near the flames, that with the heat of his harness he got a sickness which increased with a leap of his Horse, that burst the inward rim of his Belly) cost him his life. He died at *Roan in Normandy*, A. D. 1087. And forsaken of all his Courtiers, his body was left unburied, till that one *Harluims*, a poor Country Knight, at his own charge, conveyed it to *Caen*. Where, when it should have been buried, a certain Man, in God's Name, forbade the Interment in that place; which, said he, was his and his Ancestours right, taken from them violently by the said Duke. Whereupon they were forced to compound with him e'er they Interr'd the Corps.

His Wife *Maud* was the Daughter of *Baldwin* the 5th Earl of Flanders. His Issue, *Robert*, surnamed *curthoise*, or *Short-boots*; *William*, surnamed *Miser*, who died 1128. *Richard*, who after his Father had attained the Crown of England, came to a violent and sudden death, as he was hunting in *New-Forest*, a Stag goring out his Entrails. *William Rufus*; *Henry*, born at *Selby* in *Yorkshire*, 1070. *Cicely* vailed a Nun; *Constance*, Married to *Allain* Earl of *Britain*; *Alice* Married to *Stephen* Earl of *Bloys*, by whom she had *Stephen* Earl of *Mortain* and *Boleine*, King of England; *Gundred*, Married to *William* of *Warrein*, a Nobleman of Normandy, who was the first Earl of *Surrey*: *Ela*, who in her Childhood was contracted in Marriage to Duke *Harold*, afterwards King of England: *Margaret*, who in her Childhood was given in Marriage to the renowned *Alphonso*, King of *Gallicia* in *Spain*. His

base

*William the Conquerour.*

base Son, named *William Peverel*, was Earl of *Nottingham*.

By his last Will and Testament, he commanded all his Treasure to be distributed to Churches, God's Ministers, and the Poor, limiting to each their several portion. To the Church and Monks of St. Stephens at *Caen in Normandy*, he gave divers Manors in *England*, and great store of Land; yea, and his Crown and Regal Ornaments, which his Son *Henry* redeemed. To his Son *Robert* he had before given the Duke-dom of *Normandy*. *England* he left undisposed, onely wish'd his Son *William* might succeed him in it. And to *Henry* he gave Five thousand pound, presaging that all his Dominions should become *Henry's* in the end.

He did oft-times exhort his Children to the study of Learning, with this saying, *That an unlearned Prince is but a Crowned Ass*. He built a Religious House, called *Battel-Abby*, in the same place where King *Harold* was slain, dedicating it to the Holy Trinity and Saint *Martin*, That there the Monks might pray for the souls of *Harold* and the rest that were slain in that place, endowing it with many great privileges, and amongst the rest these two; That if any Murderer, or other Felon, for fear of death, fled thither, he should be freed from all punishment: And that it should be lawfull for the Abbat of that place to deliver any Thief or Robber from the Gallows, if he should chance to pass where any such execution was in hand. At *Selby in Yorkshire* he founded the Abby of St. *Germans*; at *Excester* the Priory of Saint *Nicholas*, and at *Caen in Normandy*, the Monastery of Saint *Stepbens*; and to the Church and College of Saint *Martins le grand* in *London*, he gave both large Privileges and much Land. In his time it was decreed at *Rome*, that the See of *York* should be stiled *Primas Angliae*; and the See of *Canterbury*, *Primas totius Angliae*. The setting Seals to Bonds and Writings was now first used in *England*, there being before onely Witnesses to them. *Stigand* Arch-Bishop of *Canterbury* was deposed by the Conquerour, and died in Prison. The Abbat of St. *Albans* told this King, that the reason why

## William the Conquerour.

why he gained *England* in one Battel, which the *Danes* could not doe in many, was, because the maine-  
nance of Martial men, with a part of the Lands Re-  
venues, was converted to maintain Religious men,  
and to Religious uses. In the time of this King's  
Reign befell a most fearfull Earth-quake, strange burn-  
ing Fevers very mortal, Murrains causing a great  
dearth among Cattel, extraordinary Rains, Water-  
floods incredible, which so softned the hills to the  
foundations, that some of them fell, and overwhel-  
med the Villages near them. Most of the principal  
Cities were indamaged by fire. So great a fire hap-  
pened in *London*, that it consumed Houses and Chur-  
ches all the way, from the West-gate to the East-  
gate. And 'tis said, that tame and domestick Fowls  
became wild, flying to the Woods.

## WILLIAM

## WILLIAM RUFUS.

**W**illiam surnamed *Rufus*, notwithstanding that *Ro-* Sept. 9 .4.  
*bert Courtoise*, his eldest Brother, was living; *D.* 1087.  
yet by the mediation and assistance of *Lanfrank* Arch-  
Bishop of *Canterbury*, and *Wolstane*, he gained the voices  
of the Council, and was Crowned, *A.D.* 1087. But  
*Odo* Bishop of *Bayeux* (to take revenge for his suffer-  
ings under the Conquerour) instigated Duke *Robert*  
to repair into *England*, and recover his right, which  
he promised should soon be effected. Now *Robert*,  
that Money, the sinews of War, might not be want-  
ing for the carrying on of this design, mortgaged  
the Province of *Constantine* to his Brother *Henry*; and  
with him many of the *English* sided. *William*, on the  
other hand, by fairly promising to abolish the over-  
hard Laws made by his Father, and to take off the  
Taxes and Impots, drew the people generally to  
stand in his defence; by whose aids he regained di-  
vers strong holds that the Nobles had seized for Duke  
*Robert*. He also besieged *Rochester*, wherein *Odo* was,  
from which siege he sent forth his Proclamation  
throughout the Land, commanding all men to re-  
pair thereto; and that whosoever would not, should  
be reputed a *Niding*. A word so disgracefull and  
hateful to the *English* (signifying a Coward or base-  
hearted fellow) that made multitudes haste with all  
speed to that service. Whereupon the Castle was  
yielded, and *Odo* banished, and his goods confisca-  
ted. But whilst these things were acting, *Robert*  
Duke of *Normandy* Landed at *Southampton*, and very  
shortly returned again into his own Territories, up-  
on his Brother *William*'s promise to pay him Three  
thousand Marks yearly, and to resign the Kingdom  
to him, or his heirs at his death. About this time  
*Lanfrank* Arch-Bishop of *Canterbury* died, and the King  
kepe

kept that See vacant above four years. So did he by many other Ecclesiastical promotions, and set to sale the rights of the Church, preferring those therein that would give the most; and yet his Exchequer became never the richer. He was wont to say, *That Christ's bread is sweet, dainty, and most delicate for Kings:* Howbeit, to his praise, let this be remembered of him, that when two Monks were at *Drys Bezantines* (then current gold) before him for an Abby, he spied a third Monk of their company standing in a corner, to whom King *William* said, *And what wilt thou give to be Abbat?* Not one farthing (answered he) for I renounced the world and riches, that I might serve God more sincerely. Then said the King, *Thou art worthy to be made Abbat, and the Abbey thou shalt have.* His Brother *Robert's* Territories in Normandy he invaded, taking divers strong holds and Castles, inforsing *Robert* to make a Peace with him. After which, these two Brothers unite their forces against their Brother *Henry*. But he fearing after-claps, had strongly fortified the Castle of Mount St. Michael in Normandy, wherein they besieged him. In which time of Siege, King *William's* life was in great hazard; for some of the besieged sallying forth, *William* more boldly than wisely rode against them, and a Knight encountering him, slew his Horse under him, and had slain him too, had he not made himself known by his voice. Whereupon the armed men, with great reverence, took him up, and brought him another Horse, when the King not staying for the stirrup, sprang into the Saddle, and with angry countenance, demanded who it was that overthrew him, and the Knight as boldly answered and shewed himself who he was. *By Luke's face, quoth the King, thou shalt be my Knight, and be inrolled in my Check, with a fee answerable to thy worth.*

Prince *Henry*, in the time of this siege, being sorely distressed for Water, sent to his Brother *Robert* (knowing him to be of the better temper) desiring him, that he might have that permitted him which

God

God had made common. Duke *Robert* commanded him to be supplied; wherat King *William* was wroth. To whom *Robert* said, *And dost thou esteem more of water which is every where to be got, than of a Brother, having no more but him and me?* In short time after these Three brethren were reconciled, and in short time after that, the two elder again disagreed. The Peace of England was also disturbed by *Malcolm* King of Scots; but by the Ambushment of *Mowbray* Earl of Northumberland, he was slain, with his Son *Edward*. Then *Mowbray*, grown proud, turns Rebel; but was taken and committed to *Windsor*.

Duke *Robert* preparing for the Holy Wars, mortgaged his Dukedom to his Brother *William*, for the sum of Six thousand six hundred sixty six pounds of Silver; for the making up of which sum, King *William* made the Religious Houses to ransack their Coffers. Normandy was therefore now the King's concern to keep as his own, wherefore ('a while after) hearing as he sate at meat, that *Main*, a City in Normandy, was straitly besieged, and his subjects sorely distressed, he swore his wonted Oath, *By St. Luke's Face, that he would not turn his back till he was with them.* And thereupon commanded the wall of the House to be broke down, that he might go forth the next way to Sea, leaving order for his Nobles straightway to follow him. But the winds being contrary, and Seas raging, his Pilot humbly desired him to stay a while, till the Wind and Seas were appeased. To whom the King said, *Hast thou ever heard that a King hath been drowned? Therefore hoise up the sails I charge thee, and be gone.* Which accordingly being done, the King making such haste, relieved the City before it was expected. Then settling his affairs in that Countrey, he returned into England, where, as he was Hunting in New-Forest, Sir *Walter Tyrrel*, a French Knight, shooting at a Stag, the Arrow glanced against a Tree, and struck the King into the breast, with which he immediately died, Aug. 1. A.D. 1100. His body laid in Collier's Cart, was drawn with one poor Jade, through a very dirty way, till the Cart broke,

### William Rufus.

broke, where, for a while, the Corps was left in the dirt; but afterwards was conveyed to Winchester, and there buried in the Cathedral Church. The bones since have been taken up, and laid into a Coffer with the bones of *Canutus*. At Westminster he laid new foundations of a most stately Palace, and finished that stately building, called the great Hall, which he found fault with because no bigger, accounting it scarce worthy the name of a Bed-chamber, in respect of that which he intended to build. He new built the City *Carlisle*, which 200 years before had been spoiled by the *Danes*, built the Church of St. *Saviours* in *Southwark*, and founded an Hospital in *York* to the Honour of St. *Peter*.

In this King's Reign the Bishop's See was translated from *Selsey* to *Chichester*, anciently called *Cissancester*.

In his Reign happened a most dreadfull Earthquake, and vehement Lightning leaving an intolerable stink behind it. An exceeding tempest of Wind, that in *London* drove down Sixty Houses, blew off the Roof of *Bow-Church*, with the Beams, Six of which, in their Fall, were driven Twenty-three foot deep into the ground (the Streets of the City lying then unpaved.) A Blazing Star appeared, and other Stars seemed to shoot Dartson against another. The Sea broke over its Banks, drowning abundance of people; and in *Kent* over-whelmed the Lands that sometime were Earl *Goodwins*, which now are called *Goodwin's Sands*, very dangerous for Navigators. A Well of Blood for fifteen days rose out of the ground at *Finchampstead*, near *Abingdon*. Pestilence and Scarcity.

*Robert of Gloucester* hath a pretty passage of King William in these Lines.

*As his Chamberlain him brought, as he rose on a day,  
A morrow for to wear, a pair of Hose of Say,  
He asked what they costned, three shillings he seid,  
Fie a dibles, quoth the King, who say so vile a deed,  
King to wear so vile a Cloth, but it costned more,  
Buy a pair for a Mark, or thou shalt ha cory fore.*

### William Rufus.

*A worse pair enough, the other swith him brought,  
And seyd they costned a Mark, and unneath he them bought.  
Aye bel-amy, quoth the King, these were well bought.  
In this manner serve me, or ne serve me not.*

A.D. 1096. and in the Reign of *William Rufus*, by reason of the Pestilence then raging, and the oppressions under which the English groaned, the tillage of the earth was neglected, whereby ensued great scarcity the year following throughout all *England*.

---

### HENRY

---

## HENRY BEAUCLERK.

Aug. 2.  
A.D. 1100.

**H**E N R Y, for his Learning styled Beauclerk, (whilst his Brother *Robert* was busied in the Holy War) promising many good things, was with the general liking of the people crowned at *Westminster* in A.D. 1100. Whose first business was the reforming of his own Court and Household, for a pattern to his Subjects. Next, he restored to the English the use of fire and lights at their own liberty, freed the Church from reservation of its possessions upon vacancies; made the Heirs of the Nobility free to possess their Fathers Lands without redemption from him, engaging the Nobles to doe the like by their Tenants. Allowing the Gentry to Marry their Daughters and Kinswomen without his licence, so it were not to his Enemy. Ordained that the Widow should enjoy her Joyniture, and be at liberty to Marry according to her own liking. That the Mother and next Kindred should be Guardians to Fatherless Children. That Coiners of false money should be punished with the loss of hand and genitals. He also appointed a Measure to the length of his arm, to be a standard of commerce amongst his people. He forgave all debts to the Crown before his time. And that which did the most content his subjects was, that he revived the Laws of *Edward the Confessor*: After which, he recall'd *Anselm* Arch-Bishop of *Canterbury*, who had been forced out of the Realm by *Rufus*, because he opposed him for keeping Church-Livings in his hands. And *Henry*, to settle himself the more deeply in the affections of the English, married *Maud*, daughter to the King of the *Scots* by *Margaret*, Sister to *Edgar Atheling*. But Duke *Robert* being returned with greatest honour from the *Holy Land*, claimed the

## HENRY. I.

the Kingdom of *England* as his rightfull inheritance; *Anselm*, landed an Army at *Portsmouth*, many of the English flocking to him. At length the difference between these two Brethren was reconciled on these terms; That *Henry* should enjoy the Crown during his life, paying to *Robert* in way of fealty three thousand Marks by the year. But this Sun-shine of Peace was shortly after withdrawn by the Rebellion of *Robert Beliasme* Earl of *Shrewsbury*, who in short time being vanquished, fled into *Normandy* for shelter. Arch-Bishop *Anselm* is also said to have disturbed the peace by standing too stiffly for the pretended Rights of the Church of *Rome*, against the King's real Rights and Prerogative, peremptorily depriving what Prelates he pleased of their promotions, and refusing to consecrate certain Bishops that the King had advanced. Moreover the King and his Brother *Robert* continued not long in amity, e'er *Henry* invading *Normandy*, takes his Brother in fight, whom he sent Prisoner to *Cardiff Castle* in *Wales*, where he had the liberty to walk in the King's Meadows, Forests and Parks; but endeavouring to make his escape, he was committed to a stricter durance, and also deprived the sight of both his eyes, and in few years after died, and was buried at *Glocester*, his Brother *Henry* not long surviving him.

Some troubles arose from the *Welsh*; but that People the King restrained, chiefly, by placing those *Flemings* among them, whose Lands the Seas had devoured some years before, and to whom King *Rufus* had granted that they should seat themselves in *Cumberland*. The poor Married Priests, *Anselm* sadly perplexed. And the King imposed heavy Taxes on the people, and reserved vacant Church-promotions to his own use, under pretence of keeping them for the most deserving. But how unworthily he disposed some of them, may be guessed by that pretty reproof which *Guymund* his Chaplain gave him. Who on *Rogation-Sunday* celebrating Service in the King's Chapel, being to read that Lesson out of

Radulphus,  
A.B.Can.  
of St. James, S. 17. It rained not on the earth, by the space of three years and six months, he purposely read, It rained not one, one, one years, and five one months. Which causing laughter or admiration in all that heard him, the King rebuked him for it, demanding the reason why he read so. Marry, quoth he, I see you beseech your Preferments on such as can read so. Wherewith the King touched, preferred him; and in the future was more cautious whom he raised to Preferments in the Church. The Estates both spiritual and temporal he caused to assemble at *Salisbury*, then reforming many abuses, and laying here the first foundation of our High Court of Parliament. About this time *Lewis* King of *France* invaded *Normandy*, whither King *Henry* passed and vanquished him. But as his Son Prince *William* was returning after him out of *Normandy*, he was cast away, and with him 160 persons of prime note and esteem, none of their bodies being found. The Mariners had too much Wine bestowed on them at their putting forth to Sea.

*Maud* or *Matilda* the Empress, after the death of the Emperour her Husband, King *Henry* her Father sent for over into *England*, where calling a Parliament, he caused *Stephen* his Sisters Son, with his Nobles, to swear Fealty to her, as to his lawfull, and now only Heir. But the King sailing again into *Normandy*, he there after his pleasure of Hunting, made a great repast of *Lampreys*, upon the eating of which, he fell exceeding sick, and after Seven days sickness died, A.D. 1135. at the Town of *St. Denis*. His Bowels and Brains, and Eyes were buried at *Rouen*. The Physician that took out the Brains was poysoned with the stench. His body sliced, powdred with Salt, and wrapped in a Bulls Hide, was conveyed to *Reading*, and there buried in the Abby which himself had founded. His Wives were first, *Maud* the Daughter of *Malcolm* the Third, surnamed *Cannoir* or Great-head, King of *Scotland*; his second Wife was *Adelicia* the Daughter of *Godfrey*, the first Duke of *Lorraine*. Besides his lawfull Issue *William* and *Maud*, he

he is said to have had fourteen illegitimate, some Radulphus,  
A.B.Can.  
flock in Oxfordshire. In a great dearth in his Countries of *Anjou* and *Main*, he fed every day with sufficient sustenance Ten thousand persons, from the beginning of April, till such time that new Corn was inned. He erected and endowed the Sees of *Carlisle* and *Ely*, and the Abbies of *Hide*, *Reading*, *Cyrencester*, and the Priory of *Dunstable*. His Queen *Maud* was so devout, that she would go to Church barefoot, and constantly exercise her self in works of Charity, insomuch, that when her Brother Prince *David* came out of *Scotland* to visit her, he found her in her Privy-Chamber, washing, wiping and kissing poor peoples feet; which he disliking, said, Verily, if the King your Husband knew this you should never kiss his lips. To which she replied, That the feet of the King of Heaven, are to be preferred before the lips of an Earthly King. 'Tis reported that when the King was preparing for his last passage into *Normandy*, there hapned a fearfull Earthquake, and that out of chinks in the Earth arose burning flames which could not be quenched.

In the year 1111. at *Dunmow* in *Essex*, the Lady *Inga* founded a Priory for Black Nuns, which afterwards became an House of Monks. Which Monks 'tis said, did allow a Gammon of Bacon to such Married couples, as repented not of their bargain within a year and a day after their Marriage, nor made any Nuptial transgression in word or deed. This they were to make a solemn Oath of. In or near the year 1115. and October the 10th. did the River of *Thames* so fail of water, that between the Tower of London and the Bridge, did people not onely pass over on Horse-back, but also great numbers both of Men and Children did wade over on foot.

William  
Curboil,  
A.B.Can.

Dec. I.  
A. D.  
1135.

## STEPHEN.

**S**TEPHEN Earl of Blois, Son to Adelicia, Daughter of the Conquerour, was admitted King by the workings of his Brother Henry Bishop of Winchester, and Roger Bishop of Sarum; but chiefly through the means of Hugh Bigot, who took his Oath that King Henry had on his death-bed (upon some distast taken against his Daughter) disinherited her, and appointed Stephen to succeed him. He was Crowned at Westminster on St. Stephen's day, in A. D. 1135. by William Corbell, A. B. of Canterbury, the Prelates swearing to obey him as their King, so long as he should preserve the Churches rights; and the Lay-Barons in like manner swore allegiance to him, so long as he should keep his Covenants to them, and preserve their rights. His right he owned to be by election. The Charter containing his Peoples Franchises, Liberties, and Immunities, which he bound himself to maintain, he Sealed at Oxford. Which was, that all Liberties, Customs and Possessions granted to the Church should be firm, and in force; That persons and causes Ecclesiastical, should apertain onely to Ecclesiastical jurisdiction. That the vacancies of Churches and Church mens goods, should be at the sole dispose of the Clergy. That all bad usages in the Land, touching Forests, Exactions, &c. should be extirpate, and that the ancient Laws should be restored. Many Castles he either caused, or suffered to be erected in the Land, which he intended for his own security against Maud; but they proved greatly to his own detriment. His entrance was very peaceable; but by little and little, civil discords increased to the miserable spoil of the Realm, besides the troubles arising from out-parts. Baldwin de Redners first began to break the peace, but him the King soon quieted.

## STEPHEN.

quieted. Then the Welshmen, who gave a great defeat to the English. Then David King of Scots (set on by some disaffected to Stephen) but in a short time peace was concluded with him. Then the Welsh again make inroads into the Land, carrying away great spoils. Next David King of Scots enters Northumberland, in the quarrel of the Empress, where his rude Soldiers dealt most barbarously with many of the Inhabitants, ripping up the Wombs of Women with Child, and tossing their Infants upon the points of their Spears, slaying the Priests at the Altar, and after an inhumane manner dismembering the slain bodies. After this the Peers of the Land conspire against the King, taking themselves to strong holds: a great cause whereof was, because the King shewed extraordinary favour to William de Ypre and his Flemings, following their counsels, and chiefly relying upon them. When David King of Scots taking opportunities from these inbred troubles, again entred Northumberland with a great Army, against whom the Northern Lords marched at the command of Thurstan Arch-bishop of York, the King's Lieutenant, who himself being then sick, appointed Ralph Bishop of Durham for his General. Which Bishop of Durham in the close of his invective Oration to his Army against the Scots, before the Battel, absolved from punishment of sin, all such of his side, that should die in the fight, whereby the English were made to fight the more desperately; so that in a short time they vanquished the Scots, driving the King of Scots and his Son out of the Field. King Stephen went on also very prosperously against his Barons, winning many Castles from them. Which done he proceeded against the Scots, with whom in short time a Peace was concluded. But that Stephen might be kept employed, the Empress Maud landed near to Arundel, with but 140 men. Whom Stephen hastened to meet, but she colouring her designs with the pretences of amity and peace, he over-credulous, caused her to be honourably conveyed to Bristol, where she remained two months, and

## S T E P H E N.

and then went to *Wallingford*; her base Brother, Earl *Robert*, in the mean time gathering aids for her. *Wallingford* King *Stephen* besieged, and his Brother the Bishop of *Winchester*, invited certain of the Nobles to his Palace, where he kept them as Prisoners, till he had gain'd them to resign their Castles to the King. *Worcester* Earl *Robert* subdued and spoiled. *Nottingham*, *Ralph Painel* burned in favour of the Empress. And she for her better security took into *Lincoln*, whither *Stephen* following her gain'd the City, the Empress making an escape. Shortly after which, Robert Earl of *Glocester*, with *Renulph* Earl of *Chester*, encountr'd the King near to *Lincoln*, where with equal success the fight was maintained a long time, till at length the King's Horsemen (not without suspicion of Treason) gave back and fled, and shortly after his Foot began also to faint and flee, leaving this valiant King almost alone, who with his Battel-Axe drove back whole Troops assailing him, maintaining the quarrel against his Foes with an undaunted courage, till his Battel-Axe broke; and after that till his Sword flew in pieces. When now weaponless he was struck down, taken and carried to the Empress at *Glocester*, from whence he was sent to *Bristol*. The Empress for a while ruling all, *London*, after much persuasion, received her with a royal procession; but in short time grew discontent, because she refused to remit some over-hard Laws made by her Father, and to restore those of King *Edward*. Many Nobles also repined, as conceiving themselves too much slighted by her. The Bishop of *Winchester* who a while before had accursed all that withstood her, now absolves them, under pretence that the Barons had kept Faith with her, she not with them. The discontented *Londoners* he solicited in his Brother *Stephen's* behalf. Divers Castles he stored with munition and men. In the mean time *Matilda* came to *Winchester*, where sending for the Bishop, (being then the Popes Legate) though he doubted some danger, yet not daring to send a flat denial,

## Stephen. Matilda.

denial, returned this equivocal answer, *Ego parabo me*, I will make ready, as though he had meant to follow the Messenger; whereas he addressed himself to work her downfall. For sending for his Brother's Queen, Prince *Eustace*, the *Londoners*, and *William Ypre*, he made strong his party for the King. Himself and friends abiding in the City, and the Empress keeping in the Castle, not daring to adventure forth for about the space of seven weeks. When, the Bishop to deceive *Matilda*, commanded peace to be proclaimed, and the City Gates to be set open. But the Empress and her Friends, now leaving the Castle to go to some other place, were pursued by the Bishop's forces, in which pursuit many of her party were wounded and slain, Earl *Robert* taken, and others flying into the Nunnery of *Warwell*, were burned, together with the place. And *Winchester* City, the Bishop caused to be fired, for the Citizens affections to the Empress. The Empress who had escaped to the Castle of the *Devizes*, and there in hazard to be surprized, caused her self to be put into a Coffin, as though dead, bound fast with Cords, and so as if it had been her dead Corps, she was carried in a Horse-liter to *Glocester*. King *Stephen*, and Earl *Robert* being exchanged one for another, the King now pursues *Matilda*, and in *Oxford* besieged her, wan the Suburbs thereof, and brought her to that strait, that for her escape in a great Frost and Snow, she was forced (in order to the deceiving of the Centinels eyes) to cloath her self with Linen Garments, and so on foot to run through Ice and Snow, Ditches and Vallies, till she came to *Abingdon*, where taking Horse, she got the same night to *Wallingford* Castle. After which, many bickerings hapned betwixt the two parties, with variable successes to and fro. Sometimes in one part of the Nation *Matilda's* side prevailed, in another part *Stephen's*, to the great ruin of the whole Realm. However, *Stephen* to assure the succession to his Son *Eustace*, called a Council at *London*, commanding *Theobald* Arch-Bishop of *Canterbury* to consecrate

Theo-  
bald,  
A.B. Can.

100

## STEPHEN.

Theo-  
bald,  
A.B. Can.

erate his Son King. Which he refusing to doe ( and that by the Pope's special Mandate ) was forced to fly into Normandy, the King seizing upon all his possessions. But Eustace shortly, after dying King Stephen inclined to peace, and was content to adopt Henry Fitz Empress for his Son and Successour. To whom the Nobles at Oxford did homage as to the undoubted Heir, and the Prince yielded Stephen the honour of a Father. But King Stephen being afflicted with the Iliack passion, together with his old Disease the Hemorrhoids, gave up the Ghost at Dover, A. D. 1154. and was buried at Faversham in Kent: Though his body afterward, for the Lead sake, wherein it was wrapped, was cast into the River. Maud the Wife of King Stephen, was the Daughter of Eustace Earl of Bulloigne, the Brother of Godfrey and Baldwin, Kings of Jerusalem. He had Issue Baldwin, Eustace, William, Maud, Mary, and two natural Sons; the younger named Gervas being made Abbat of Westminster. His Son Eustace in a rage set fire on the Corn-fields belonging to the Abby of Bury, because the Monks denied to help him to a sum of Money; but afterwards sitting down to Dinner, at the first morsel of Bread he put into his mouth, he fell into a fit of madness, and in that fit died. King Stephen erected the Abbeys of Cogshall in Essex, of Farness in Lancashire, the Nunneries at Carew and Higham, an Hospital at York, and Monastery at Faversham. About the beginning of his Reign, a Fire beginning at London-stone, consumed Eastward to Aldgate, and Westward to St. Paul's.

## HENRY.

## HENRY II.

**H**ENRY Plantagenet, the Son of Maud the Empress, ( who was the Daughter of King Henry I. 25. A. D. 1154. by Maud his first Wife, who was the Daughter of Malcolm King of Scotland, by St. Margaret, Daughter to Edward, Son of Edmund Ironside ) and Earl Geofry of Anjou, was Crowned at Westminster, by Theobald Arch-bishop of Canterbury. And Henry to settle the Realm in quiet, demolished certain Castles, and fortified others. Some Earls unduly created, he reduced into a private condition, purged the Realm of Foreign Souldiers, chiefly of the Flemings. Chose himself a Council out of the most eminent persons spiritual and temporal, and restrained the insolencies of some great personages, which made some of them discontented, especially, that arrogant Lord Hugh de Mortimer, who raised a Rebellion. Against whom the King went in Person, where in the siege of Bridg-North he had been shot with an Arrow, had not Hubert de St. Claro interposed and took the Arrow into his own bosome. The King having quieted the Rebels, he hasted into France, and there did homage to King Lewis for his French Provinces, Normandy, Aquitain, Anjou, Main and Loraine, which partly were his Patrimony, and partly the Inheritance of his Queen Eleanor; settled an accord between himself and Brother Geofry, and at his return into England entred into amity with Malcolm King of Scots, restoring to him the Earldom of Huntingdon. Then he advanced against the Welsh, with whom fighting, his Person was in great danger, his Standard royal cowardly abandoned; for the which Henry de Essex, Standard-bearer, was afterward accused by Robert de Montford, who in single combat within lists vanquished him at Reading, where the said Essex was shorn a Monk. But the King at length overcame

H 3

the

Thomas  
Becket,  
A.B. Can.

the *Welfs*, and returned with triumph into *England*; after which, himself and his Queen *Eleanor* were Crowned at *Worcester*, where they both at the Offer-tory laid their Crowns upon the high Altar, vowing never to wear them after. This now was the third time in which at three several places *Westminster*, *Lincoln* and *Worcester*, he had been Crowned.

Then the King crost the Seas into his Dukedom of *Normandy*, where he made seizure of some Cities into his hands, after his Brother *Geofry's* death, and settled some affairs, then returned. After which, and about the year 1163. began the famous Controversie betwixt the King and his Favourite *Becket*, whom in the beginning of his Reign he had advanced to be Lord Chancellour, and upon the death of *Theobald*, to be Arch-Bishop of *Canterbury*. Which Arch-bishoppick *Becket* at the Council of *Tours*, secretly delivered up to the Pope, and received it again from his hands. But the cause of the dissencion betwixt the King and this Bishop, was the remissness and neglect of *Becket's* curbing the disorders of the Church-men, which then were grown to a dangerous height; complaint having been made to the King, of above a hundred Murthers committed by the Clergy in his Reign. Which enormities, besides many others of other kinds, not being punished by Church-censure, the King exceedingly displeased, brought them under the Civil Power, ordering that Justice should be administred to all alike without partiality, as well Clergy as Laity, appointing Ministers of Justice through all parts of the Land to that purpose, against which *Becket* opposed himself, peremptorily defending the pretended Rights of the Clergy, and his See of *Canterbury*; yea so far, as that he challenged from the Crown the custody of *Rochester Castle*, and other Forts, which the King for securing his state had resumed into his own hands. Hereupon the King assembling his Bishops at *Westminster*, it was there agreed, That none should appeal to the See of *Rome* in any case, without the King's leave.

leave. That no Arch-bishop or Bishop upon the Thomas Pope's summons should go out of the Realm without the King's licence. That no Bishop should ex-communicate any holding of the King in chief, or put any of his Officers under interdict, without the King's licence. The Clerks criminous should be tryed before Secular Judges. Unto which Articles the King peremptorily urged *Becket* to yield, without any reservation of saving in all things his order and right of the Church. But *Becket* utterly refused, sending complaints thereupon to the Pope, who very desirous to keep the King's favour, required the Bishop to yield unto the King without any fal-lo's or exceptions. So *Becket*, though with much reluctance, at length did swear *in verbo Sacerdotali & de pleno*, that he would observe the Laws which the King intituled *Avitæ*, of his Grand-father, the like to which did all the other Bishops and Nobility. But notwithstanding *Becket* refused to set his seal to the Instrument wherein these Customs were comprehended, alledging that he did promise it onely to doe the King some honour in word onely, but not with intent to confirm the said Articles. Whereupon the King sent to Pope *Alexander* the third, thinking by his means to have subjected the Prelate. But he passing it by, the King undertook the case himself, and by his Peers and Bishops, had all *Becket's* moveable Goods condemned to his mercy; they all adjudging him guilty of perjury. The Bishops did by the mouth of the Bishop of *Chichester*, disclaim thenceforward all obedience to him as their Arch-bishop. And the next day, whilst they were consulting farther concerning him, the Bishop caused to be sung before him at the Altar; *The Princes sit and speak against me, and the ungodly persecute me, &c.* and forthwith taking his Silver Crosier in his hands, he entred therewith into the King's presence. But the King enraged at his boldness commanded his Peers to sit in judgment on him, and they adjudged him as a Traitor and perjured person, to be apprehended and cast into Prison. To prevent

Thomas  
Becket,  
A.B. Can.

prevent which, Becket fled into Flanders, the Pope now openly siding with him, and also Lewis the French King. But Henry to let the Servant of servants know that he was supreme in his own Kingdom, and that he liked not his taking part with a Subject against his Sovereign Lord, commanded the Sheriffs to attack such as did appeal to the Court of Rome, with the Relations of all such of the English Clergy as were with Becket, and to put them under Sureties: Also to seize their Revenues, Goods and Chattels. The King likewise seized all the Arch-bishop's Goods and Profits, banished his Kindred, prohibited his being publickly prayed for as Arch-bishop: Commanded his Justices to apprehend and secure all such as should bring any Interdict into England, till the King's pleasure was farther known. On the other hand, Becket in France, by special authority from the Pope, excommunicated the Bishop of London, and proceeded so far with others, that there was scarce found in the King's Chapel such as might perform the wonted Service. Hereupon the King sends again to the Pope, to send him Legates which might absolve his excommunicate Subjects, and settle a Peace. But the Pope's Legates, whom he sent, did not effect a reconciliation, by reason of Becket's perverseness. Some conjecture, that in contempt of Becket (whose Office it was as Arch-bishop of Canterbury, to Crown the King) King Henry caused his eldest Son Henry to be Crowned King of England by Roger Arch-bishop of York. At whose Coronation-feast the Father-King, himself carrying up the first dish of Meat, the Arch-bishop pleasantly said to the young King, *Rejoyce, my fair Son, for there is no Prince in the world that hath such a Servitour attending at his Table, as you have.* To whom the proud young King answered, *Why wonder you at that? My Father knows that he doth nothing unbecoming him, forasmuch as he is royal born on one side, but Our self are royal born both by Father and Mother.* Not long after this, by mediation of some friends, a reconciliation between the King and Becket was effected; and Becket was permitted to have the full use

of

of his Metropolitan See, and all the profits thereof, Richard with the Arrearages. Which he had not long re-pos-<sup>a Monk,</sup> fessed, e'er he published the Pope's Letters, by A.B. Can. which Roger Arch-bishop of York, and Hugh Bishop of Durham, were suspended from their Episcopal Function for Crowning the young King in prejudice of the See of Canterbury. And the Bishops of London, Sarum and Excester, cut off from the Church by Censure, for assisting therein; whom Becket would not absolve at the young King's request, but under conditions: Which the old King then in Normandy hearing of, let fall some words, intimating his high displeasure against the Arch-bishop, and desire to be rid of him. Whereupon Hugh Norvil, William Tracie, Hugh Brito, and Richard Fitz-Urse, Knights and Courtiers, hasted into England, and murther'd the Arch-bishop in the Cathedral Church of Canterbury, as he stood in the Evening-service-time before the Altar. Which done, the Paricides fled, and Thomas was reputed for a most Glorious Saint and Martyr; and strange Miracles (beyond my Creed) are reported to have been done by this dead Roman-Saint, and his bloud. Amongst other Epitaphs made on his death, this was one:

*Quis moritur? præsul. Cur? pro grege. Qualiter? ense.  
Quando? Natali. Quis locus? Ara Dei.*

But the news of this vile act coming to the ears of the old King, he was exceedingly troubled; and to take off the imputation of Guilt from himself, he protested that he would submit himself to the judgment of such Cardinal Legates as the Pope should send to enquire of the fact. And to claim his own perturbations, and avert mens thoughts from the consideration of that Tragedy, he undertook the conquest of Ireland, which he effected (being helped forward therein by the civil dissensions then amongst the Irish petty Kings.) Where having caused a reformation of the Irish Church, and settled affairs therein to his convenience, he returned into England,

Richard  
a Monk,  
A.B. Can.

*England*, and from thence posted into *Normandy*; where attended for his arrival two Cardinal-Legates (sent at his own request for his purgation concerning *Thomas a Becket's* death) by whom he was absolved: Having first given Oath, that he was no-way consenting to the fact, and declared his sorrow for having in his anger, given occasion by rash words for others to doe the deed, and ingaged to perform enjoyned penances. The conditions of his absolution were, That at his own charge he should maintain 200 Souldiers a whole year, for the defence of the *Holy Land*, That he should suffer Appeals to be made freely. That he should revoke all customs introduced to the prejudice of the Churches liberty. That he should restore and make up the possessions of the Church of *Canterbury*. That he should freely receive all such as were in banishment for *Becket's* cause, and besides these, the Legates enjoyned him some other secretly, which came not to our knowlege, saith the Authour of *Becket's Life*. And now this Cloud thus blown over, another succeeds in its place, for his unnatural Son young King *Henry*, (by the instigation of his Mother Queen *Eleanor*) conspired against him, having for his confederates the Kings of *France* and *Scotland*, his two Brothers *Richard* and *Geofry*, with many of the *English* Nobles. Against whom the Father with a bleeding heart, for his Son's ungraciousness, prepared himself, and was very successfull in *Little Britain*, where himself was in person; also in *England* by his faithfull Subjects. For *Humphrey de Bohun*, High Constable of the Realm, with other Nobles, vanquished *Robert Earl of Leicester*, and took him Prisoner, which moved *Lewis of France* to seek a Truce of him for six Months; whereunto King *Henry* yielded, then Ship'd for *England*, landing at the Port of *Hampton*. From whence he took his journey towards *Canterbury*, and being come within about three miles thereof, he went bare-footed, the hard stones so cutting his tender feet, that the ground was stained with his blood. And after he came

Baldwin,  
A.B. Can.

came to *Canterbury*, and was entred into the Chapter-house of the Monks, he most humbly prostrated himself on the ground, begged pardon, and by the instance of his own Petition, was by all the Brethren corrected with Rods. The number of lashes which he received on his bare flesh amounted to Fourscore. Likely this Penance was that, which the Legates enjoyned secretly. About this time *William King of Scots*, that had lately entred *England*, was taken Prisoner, and young King *Henry* was with storms driven back into *France*, and his Fleet scattered; shortly after which, Peace was concluded betwixt his Father and him. But yet again he sought his Father's ruin, though before he could effect it, he was prevented by the King of Terrors, Death, A.D. 1183. The following year *Heraclius Patriarch of Jerusalem* arrived in *England*, soliciting the King to undertake the Holy War in his own person, which by the advice of his Lords, he refused, yet yielded to aid the Cause with Money, and gave them leave to go that were disposed thereto. His Son *John*, (whom he exceedingly loved, and commonly in jest called *Sans terre*, without Land) he made Lord of *Ireland*, assuring unto him also Lands and Rents in *England* and *Normandy*, *Richard* and *Geofry* his Sons rebelled again against him. The younger of which in a Turnament at *Paris* was trod to death under the Horse feet, but the elder lived to the farther grief of his Father. For joyning himself with *Philip of France*, forced his Father out of the City of *Mantz* (the City where he was born, and loved above all others which madē King *Henry* to utter these words against him. *That since his Son Richard had taken from him that day, the thing which he most loved in the World, he would requite him; for after that day, he would deprive him of that thing, which in him should best please a Child, namely, his heart.* And afterwards finding his Son *John* first in the Catalogue of the Conspiratours against him in that action, he bitterly cursed the hour of his birth, laying God's curse and his upon his Sons, which he would never recall by any persuasions.

Baldwin, fusions. But coming to *Chiron*, he there fell desperately sick, and feeling death approach, caused himself to be born into the Church before the Altar, where after humble confession and sorrow for his sins, he yielded up his Soul, A. D. 1189. and was buried at *Font-Everard*.

His Wife *Eleanor* was the sole Heir of *William* the fifth of that name, Duke of *Aquitain*. She was first Married to *Lewis* King of *France*, and after his death to this King *Henry*: She died, 1204.

His Issue was *William*, who died 1156. *Henry*, *Richard*, *Jeffry*, *Philip*, who died very young, *John*, *Maud*, Married to *Henry*, surnamed the *Lion*, Duke of *Saxony*. *Eleanor*, Married to *Alphonso*, surnamed the *Good King of Castile*. *Joan* first Married to *William* King of *Sicily*, and afterwards to *Raimond*, the fourth Earl of *Tholouze*.

His base Issue *William*, surnamed *Longspur*, and *Jeffry* Arch-bishop of *York*. These two by fair *Rosamund*, and *Morgan* by another Woman. *Rosamund* his beloved Concubine, was the Daughter of the Lord *Clifford*, whom to keep safe from the envy of Queen *Eleanor*, he placed in a Labyrinth, which he built for her at *Woodstock*, with such windings and turnings, that none could come at her retiring Room, save the King, or whom he instructed. Howbeit the jealous eye of Queen *Eleanor* found her out by a clew of silk, which *Rosamund* let fall as she sat to take the Air. For she suddenly fleeing to escape being seen, the end of the silk fastned to her foot, and the clew still unwinding, which the Queen followed till she had found the lovely *Rosamund*, whom she so dealt with (giving her Poisón) that she ended her days, whose body was buried at *Godstow* with this Epitaph upon her Tomb.

*Hic jacet in Tumba Rosa mundi, non Rosa munda,  
Non redolet, sed olet, que redolere solet.*

King *Henry* divided *England* into Circuits, appointing that two of his judges should twice in the year, in each Circuit administer Justice. In

In the year 1164. he called an Assembly of the Baldwin, States at *Clarendon in Wilts*, where (amongst other AB. Can. matters) it was decreed, That all the Clergy should, *bona fide*, swear allegiance to the King, and should appeal but unto the Arch-bishop, or from him finally to the King, without particular licence.

In the beginning of his Reign, one *Nicholas Break-spear*, an English man, was elected Pope, by the name of *Adrian the fourth*, who in the fifth year of his Popedom was choaked with a Fly. He sent the Lords Prayer (in this manner) from *Rome*, to be taught the English people.

*Ure Fadyr in Heaven rich, Thy name be halye everlich,  
Thou bring us thy michel bliss, Als hit in Heaven y doe,  
Evar in yeart been it also. That haly bread that lasteth ay,  
Thou send it ous this ilke day, Forgive ous all that we have  
don, As we forgive urch other mon. Ne let ous fall into no  
founding, Ac shield ous fro the foul thing, Amen.*

In the Isle of *Wight* it rained bloud, the shower continuing for the space of two hours together. A great Earthquake in *Ely*, *Norfolk* and *Suffolk*, which made the Bells to ring in the Steeples. At St. *O-syphs* in *Essex* was seen a Dragon of marvellous bigness, which by moving burned Housles. Another great Earthquake which overthrew many buildings, and amongst the rest, rent in pieces *Lincoln Cathedral*. At *Oreford* in *Suffolk*, a certain hairy creature perfectly resembling man in all parts and proportions, was taken out of the Sea by Fishers in a Net, who after he had been kept a while, secretly slipt away into the Sea again.

A. D. 1174. By the King's command, was the City of *Leicester* set on Fire, the Walls and Castle razed, and the Inhabitants expulsed for their disobedience towards the King.

Baldwin,  
A. B. Can.

## RICHARD I.

July 6.  
A. D.  
1189.

**R**ICHARD from his exceeding valour surnamed *Ceur de Lion*, was crowned at Westminster by Baldwin Arch-bishop of Canterbury. At which time a great number of the *Jews* were in a tumultuous sort, slaughtered by the common people, for which many of them suffered death. The Coronation rights performed, Richard with all speed prepares for his Voyage into the *Holy-land*, appointing *William Longchamp* Bishop of *Ely*, his chief Justiciar, and *Lord Chancellour*, joining with him *Hugh Bishop of Durham* for the parts beyond *Humber*, associating to those Bishops, divers temporal Lords for the defence and preservation of Justice. And with the King of *Scots* he concluded firm friendship. Which done, with a Royal Navy he put out to Sea, and by the way to the *Holy-land*, he seized on the Island *Cyprus*, where he solemnly took to Wife his beloved Lady *Berengaria*. The Island he committed to the keeping of his own Deputies, permitting the Islanders to injoy all such Laws and Liberties, as they held in the time of *Immanuel* the Emperour. Farther in his way he conquered a mighty *Argosey*, called a *Dromond*, wherein were A-board a thousand five hundred *Saracens* (disguised under *French-flags*) furnished, besides all other provisions, with Fire-works, Barrels or Cages of venomous Serpents, for the use of the *Saracens* at *Ptolemais*, since called *Acon*. Of the *Saracens* he killed and drowned 1300, and then sailed safely to *Acon*; Before which lay these Christian Nations, the *Genoways* and *Florentines*, *Flemings*, *Almains*, *Danes*, *Dutch*, *Pisans*, *Frielanders*, *Lombards*, and the *English*, under *Hubert*, Bishop of *Sarum*. Besides the Knights Templars collected out of all Nations, and also the aids of the *Asians*. The King of *France* also came to the Siege.

Where

## RICHARD I.

Where whilst the Christians lay, *Sultan Saladin* cut off Baldwin, the heads of 1500 Christian Captives; in revenge *A.B. Can.* whereof, King Richard in sight of *Saladin's Host*, cut off above 2500 of the heads of *Turkish Slaves*. The Siege before *Acon* was so well plied, (notwithstanding sundry dissensions betwixt King Richard and *Philip King of France*, the two Competitors of glory in this Siege) that the City of *Acon* was surrendred upon Articles. Which done, the *French King*, envying the *English King's noble exploits*, (though contrary to the *French-men's will*) returned into *France*, having first given Oath to the King of *England*, that he would well and faithfully keep the Lands and Subjects of King Richard, and neither doe damage to them himself, nor suffer others to doe it till Richard's return. Howbeit whilst Richard was busied in the *Holy War*, the King of *France* after his return home, devised how to trouble and endamage his Dominion, but was hindred by his own Nobles. In *England* the Peers and people were much discontented at the incredible insolencies and intolerable tyrannies of the *Chancellour*, which though King Richard heard of, yet kept he himself employed in the War, wherein he performed many Heroick Acts. Within sight of *Jerusalem* he encountered *Saladin*, slew a great number of his *Souldiers*, took 3000 *Camels*, 4000 *Horses* and *Mules*, took his Carriage richly laden from *Babylon*, rescued *Joppa*, repulsing *Saladin* from thence. He also assayed to regain *Jerusalem*; but being in that Enterprize abandoned by the Duke of *Burgundy*, he was persuaded to accept *Saladin's offers* for a three years Truce. Which having concluded, and settled his affairs in the East, he set sail homeward; where in his passage his Ships were scattered by tempest, and driven hither and thither; but he happily gaining the shore, hoped in disguise as a Merchant to have free journeying through *Germany*. But he being by the way over-free in his expences, became suspected for another kind of man than a Merchant; and near to *Vienna* was discovered, and imprisoned by the *Arch-duke of Austria*, under pretence that he was

## RICHARD I.

Hubert, was guilty of the death of the Marques *Conrade* at A.B. Can. Tyre. Then the person of this famous King being thought too great a booty for the Duke, was gained into the Emperour's hands, whose usage towards him was very cruel, and the ransome required for him most unreasonable, being an hundred thousand Marks sterling to himself, and fifty thousand more to himself and the Duke, besides other conditions. All which being yielded unto, and engagement given for the performance, after fifteen months Imprisonment, he was set at liberty, to the great joy of many Princes in those parts, and to the unspeakable joy of his own Subjects in general, though not of his Brother John, who, with the King of France ('tis said) were some instruments for the procuring of his unhandsome usage. But *Ceur de Lion* (escaping the waylayings of the Emperour, who sent to re-take him after his release) safely landed at Sandwich, whither Hubert Arch-bishop of Canterbury, that had been with him in the *Holy-land*, came with a joyfull heart to meet him, whom when the King saw, he dismounted, bowed his knee, then fell upon the Earth. In like sort the Bishop lay upon the ground over against him, till at last both of them rising up, ran into each others arms, comforting themselves with mutual embraces, and weeping for joy. His Brother John, who had been false to him, upon his submission he freely forgave, calmly saying unto him, *Would that thy fault may so be forgotten of me, as that thy self may keep in memory what thou hast done.* And after this the King restored his forfeited Possessions to his Brother John, who from that time became faithfull to him, and did him very noble services, especially against the French, with whom Richard then warred. In which Wars, this John, Earl of Morton, and Markadey, Captain of the Routs, had made an incursion up to Beauvois, where the Bishop, (being also a Peer of the Royal Bloud) valiantly fighting, was taken in the skirmish, armed at all points, on whose behalf the Pope wrote somewhat earnestly to King Richard, to set his very dear Son (for so he called the Bishop) at liberty.

## RICHARD I.

liberty. The King in a kind of pleasant earnestness, caused the Habergeon and Curaces of the Bishop to be presented the Pope, with this question, *See whether this be thy Son's Coat or not?* Whereupon the Pope replied, *That he was neither his Son, nor the Son of the Church, and therefore shold be ransomed at the King's pleasure, because he was rather to be judged a Servitour of Mars, than a Soldier of Christ.* In this War with the French, the King amongst other Victories obtained one of fame; taking an hundred Knights and Servitours on Horseback, and Footmen without number, thirty men of Arms, also 200 great Horse, whereof 140 had Barbs and Caparisons armed with Iron. The King in his own Person did most nobly, for with one Spear, he threw to the earth *Matthes de Mummerancy, Alan de Rusci, and Fulk de Giservall*, and took them. So have we vanquished the King of France at Gysors, *höbeit we have not done it, but God and our right by us,* said the King in his Letter to the Bishop of Durham. But the fatal accident is at hand, which put an end to this renowned Warriour; for the Viscount of Limoges having found a great hoard of Silver and Gold, sent a great part thereof to King Richard, as chief Lord, with which the King being not contented, came with some Forces to the Castle of Chaluz belonging to the Viscount, where he supposed the riches were: The Garrison of which place offered to yield the same to him, and all therein, if onely their lives and limbs might be saved; but the King would accept of no Conditions, bidding them to defend themselves as they could, for he would enter by the Sword and hang them all. Whereupon an Arbalaster standing upon the Wall, and seeing his time, charged his Steel-bow with a Square Arrow, making first his Prayer to God, that he would direct that shot, and deliver the innocency of the besieged from oppression; then discharging it, as the King was taking a view of the Castle, mortally wounded him in the left Shoulder, the anguish and peril whereof, was extremely increased by the unskillfulness of the Chiurgeon. The Castle by continual assaults was taken.

ken, and by the King's command none left alive, save this too skilfull Archer, who neither denied, nor excused the fact; but alledged the necessity of his case, and the justice of God in it, for that the King, he said, had slain his Father, and two Brothers with his own hands. Yet did the magnanimous King forgive this *Bertram de Guidon* the fact, gave him an hundred Shillings, and set him at liberty: but Captain *Markadey* after the King was dead, took him, flead him alive, and then hang'd him. When *Ceur de Lion* perceived the certain approach of death, with contrition, confession and participation of the Sacrament, he prepared himself for another life, and died of his wounds, April 6. A. D. 1199. And according to his command, his Bowels were buried at *Charron* amongst the rebellious *Poitovins*, as thole, who had onely deserved his worst parts; his heart at *Roan*, as the City, which for her constant loyalty had merited the same; and his Corpse were inhumed at *Font-Everard*, at the feet of his Father, to whom he had sometime been disobedient.

He was contracted to *Alice* the Daughter of *Lewis VII. King of France*: He married *Berengaria*, the Daughter of *Sanches VI. King of Navarre*.

His natural Issue were *Philip* and *Isabel*.

This Prince is said to have been of such Prowels, that he was more feared and redoubted amongst the *Saracens*, than ever was any Christian Prince: Insomuch that when their little Children at any time began to cry, the Mothers to make them hold their peace would say to them, *King Richard cometh, and will have you*.

In the first year of his Reign (as some write) he appointed *Henry Fitz Alwin* to be Mayor of *London*, that honourable City having been formerly governed by *Portgraves*, or *Porteves*. He caused Money to be coined, (held in great request for its purity) by the *Easterlings*, a people of *Germany*, afterwards current Money, and called *Sterling*, from the *Easterlings*. When this King was in *France*, one *Fulk* a Priest told him, that he kept three Daughters, which if he did not dismiss,

dismiss, they would procure him God's wrath. Why, Hypocrite, said the King, all the World knows that I never had Child. Yea, said *Fulk*, you have three, and their names are *Pride*, *Covetousness*, and *Lechery*. Is it so, said the King? You shall see me presently dispose them. The Knights Templars shall have *Pride*, the White Monks *Covetousness*, and the Clergy *Lechery*; and there have you my three Daughters bestowed amongst you. Now lived *Robin Hood* an outlawed Noble, and *Little John*, who with an hundred stout fellows more, molested all Passengers by the way, yet onely robbed and made prey of the Rich, selling good penny-worths when they had done.

## J O H N.

April 6. JOHN (though that *Arthur* his Brother *Jeffry's* Son  
A. D. was living, yet) by the assistance of his Mother  
1199. *Eleanor* and other Noble Friends, was by the great  
Council of the Realm admitted King: To whom  
they then sware only a conditional Fealty, *viz.* To  
keep faith and peace to him, if he would render  
to every of them their rights. He was crowned at  
*Westminster* by *Hubert* Arch-bishop of *Canterbury*. His  
Reign throughout was attended with great troubles:  
For first, the King of *France* took upon him to es-  
tablish young *Arthur* in the Kingdom; though after a  
while for his own advantage he delivered the Prince  
into his Uncle's hands. Then the King of *Scots* procured  
some disturbances; but an accord was shortly made,  
the two Kings of *England* and *Scotland* swearing faithfull  
love to each other upon the Crosier of Arch-bishop  
*Hubert*. Presently after which, these two Kings with  
the King of *South-Wales* expressed their great humility,  
by helping to carry the Corpse of *Hugh* Bishop of *Lin-  
coln*, on their shoulders to the place of interment.  
Then the Clergy disturbed the peace, oppugning the  
King's Royal Title to a Benefice, locking the Church-  
doors against his Presentee, scorning his Princely  
Letters, fencing the Church with armed men against  
his Officers, assailing his Sheriff, moving the Pope  
to excommunicate all their opposers; yea, caused  
the King himself to be accused to the Pope for a Ty-  
rant. The whole *Cistercian* Order denied the payment  
of a subsidy granted the King. The Canons of *Lin-  
coln* refused to accept of him for their Bishop, whom  
the King had appointed in the place of him deceased.  
*Hubert* Arch-bishop called a General Council in his  
Province without the King's permission, and then  
distrained the King's prohibition thereof. The Lay-  
Peers

## J O H N.

Peers they came in also to act a part, and at a time  
when the King stood in need of their help against  
the *Poitouins* and *French*, refused to attend the King in  
his Wars against them. Howbeit King *John* put forth  
to Sea, arrived in *Normandy*, and in battel overthrew  
his Nephew *Arthur*, and by valour recovered all the  
Provinces which had revolted; Prince *Arthur*, and  
all the Peers of *Poitou*, above 200 *French* Knights and  
others of command, he took Prisoners. Not long  
after which, young *Arthur* died, not without suspi-  
cion of violence. Which gave fresh occasion to some  
of the disaffected Peers to bandy against the King,  
whom the King of *France* now cited as his Homager  
for the Dukedom of *Normandy*, to appear at a set day  
to be tryed by his Peers upon point of Murther and  
Treason. And King *John* not appearing at the ap-  
pointed time, was by the King and Peers of *France*  
disinherited and condemned, and according to the  
sentence they proceeded against him; and what by  
the King's remissness, the treachery of his people,  
and power of his Enemies, he lost a great part of his  
strongest Towns and Castles in the *French* Territories.  
But the Delinquent Peers and Barons King *John* put  
to their Fines; and for the carrying on of the Wars a-  
gainst *France*, had a Subsidy granted him, which mo-  
ved the people to think hardly of him. The King  
of *France*, who had been too successfull of late against  
the *English*, sent a braving Champion over into *England*,  
to justifie by Duel his proceeds in King *John's* *French*  
Dominions; with whom *John Curcy*, Earl of *Ulster*, un-  
dertook to combatte. This *Curcy* was a man of Giant-  
like limbs and strenght, and of some conditions not  
despicable, had they not been savaged with too much  
rudenes: Which appeared not onely in his wild  
speeches touching the King's misusage of his Nephew  
*Arthur*; but even then, when the King demanded of  
him whether he would combat in his quarrel: he an-  
swered, No, not in thy quarrel, nor for thy sake; yet  
for the Kingdom's right I will fight to the death.  
But this the *French* Champion never put him to; for  
hearing of the Earl's excessive feeding, and strength-

answerable thereto, the *Monsieur* sneakt away into *Spain*, as ashamed to shew his face again in *France*. Of Earl *Curcy* 'tis farther said, That when the two Kings of *France* and *England* met together upon a Truce in *France*, King *Philip* having heard of *Curcy*, and that he was in the *English* Camp, requested of King *John* that he might see some experiment of his so much feared and famed strength. Whereupon an Helmet of excellent proof, full farced with Mail, was set upon a wooden block; when the Earl first lowring rottnd about him with a dreadfull aspe&t, lift up his trusty Skeyn, and cleft so deep quite through the steely resistance, into the knotty wood, that none there present save himself could draw it out again, which he did with ease. Then being by the Kings asked, Why he frowned so angrily before he struck; he answered, That he purposed if he had fail'd of his blow, to have kill'd them all, both Kings, and the other Spectators. But for all this famous Champion, King *Philip* by degrees gain'd all in *Normandy*, even *Rouen* it self. *Main*, *Turain* and *Poitou*, revolted from King *John*; and *Angiers* was betrayed: All these losses happening through the default of some of the *English* Peers and Prelates. For when the King was in readiness to take shipping for *Normandy*, *Hubert* the Arch-bishop forbad him proceeding in the Voyage; the Peers also again refused to attend him: Wherfore the King put many of his Earls, Barons, and Knights, yea, and Clergy-men also, to a grievous pecuniary redemption; and *Hubert's* Wealth and Possessions (who died the same year) the King seized on. This *Hubert* was suspected of too familiar practising with the King of *France*. Upon the death of this Arch-bishop *Hubert*, the Monks of *Canterbury* made choice of *Reginald*, their Sub-Prior in his stead; and the King, after them, of *John Grey* Bishop of *Norwich*, a man of great wisdom. But the Pope neglecting both these, recommended *Stephen de Langton* to the Monks of *Canterbury*, and Bishops of that Province, to be presently chosen for their Primate. Which the Monks unwilling, and deferring to doe, alledging that no Canonical Election

Stephen  
Langton.  
A. D.  
1040.

lection could be made at *Rome*, where was no consent neither of King nor Covent; The Pope with choler replied, That he had plenitude of power over the Church of *Canterbury*; and moreover, that no consent of Princes used to be expected in Elections where the Pope was. He therefore commanded them under pain of his high curse, to accept him for their Primate: Which all accordingly did (though not without murmurations) save one *Elias de Brantford*. And to work the King into a compliance hereto, the Pope sent him four Gold Rings with four precious Stones, an Emerald, Saphire, Ruby and Topaz; signifying in his Letter sent with them, that the Rings roundness must remember him of Eternity; the quadrate number must mind him of Constancy, and the four Cardinal Vertues, Prudence, Justice, Temperance and Fortitude. The Gold's price, of Wisdom; the Emeralds greenness, of Faith; the Saphires brightness, of Hope; the Rubies redness, of Charity; and the Topaz's clearnes, of sanctity of life. But King *John* for all these fond toys and fine words, when he observed the Pope's arbitrariness, the dishonour arising to himself, in being frustrated of his choice; the prejudice to his Crown in having a Bishop thrust upon him without Sovereign consent; the hazard to the State in having a *French* Favourite over the *English*, with also the Monks disloyalty in yielding to the Pope's Election: He first of all proscribed the Monks as *Traytors*; and after that writ Letters to the Pope, wherein he alledged the wrongs done to himself, and made his exceptions against *Langton*, vowing immutably to stand for his own Ele&t, and to die in defence of the liberties of his Crown; likewise minding the Pope of his great profits he received from *England*, menacing withall, that if he were crossed in this, he wold then stop all from crossing the Seas to *Rome*. To which Letters of the King, the Pope answered very cominatory, and shortly after, viz. in A. D. 1208. because the King would be King in his own Dominions, this *Servus Servorum interdictio* the whole Kingdom, under

which it lay for the term of six years, and fourteen weeks, without God's service, or Sacraments, or Christian burial. The Lay-people were tumbled like Dogs into every Ditch. Howbeit the King to be even with the Pope, proscribed the disloyal Clergy, their Revenues he confiscated, their Bishopricks, Abbies and Priories he put into Lay-mens hands, and every-where they suffered wrong, without ordinary protection of justice. But some of the eminent Clergy detested the Pope's savage proceedings, as *Philip* Bishop of *Durham*, and his Successour. The Bishops of *Winchester* and *Norwich* they animated the King to contemn the Papal Curse, and the *Cistercian* Abbats (neglecting the Interdict) continued their Divine Service, till the Pope suspended them for their contempt. Moreover the Pope to revenge himself on the King, Anathematized him by name, which caused many to desert his service; for which he punished them by Fine. Yet at length, the better to secure himself and State, the King was very desirous to come to an atonement, and assured under his Seal, that Arch-bishop *Langton*, with the Bishops and Monks, and others, should be restored both to his favour and their possessions; that Holy Church should have all its Franchises, as in *Edward* the Confessour's time: But because he would not make full satisfaction to the Clergy, for all confiscations, and other emoluments received of them, the Pope's Nuncio's refused a peace with him. And the Pope was so mad, that he absolved all Kings and People, Poor and Rich, having dependence on him from all fealty and subjection to him; whereupon, Malecontents set themselves to work mischief. The Welsh fall off from the King, wherefore at *Nottingham* he hangs up their Hostages, 28 in number. His Nobles many of them held themselves discharged of their Allegiance, so rebell, inviting the French King to their assistance, and promising to settle the English Crown on his head; *Stephen Langton*, and other Bishops implore the Pope's help to support the Church of England, being at the point of ruine. His officious Holiness there-

thereupon decrees, That King *John* must be deposed, and that he would appoint one more worthy in his stead. To effectuate which, the Pope sent his Letters to *Philip* King of *France*, requiring him to undertake the affair of dethroning the King of *England*, and for his reward, he should have pardon of all his sins, besides the enjoying of the English Crown to him and his heirs for ever. Also transmitting his Letters general, to all Potentates, Souldiers, Men of War of all Nations, to sign themselves with the sign of the Cross, and to follow *Philip* in this design, assuring all that their assistance herein, whether in person or purse, should be no less meritorious, than if they visited our Saviour's Sepulchre. The King of *France* accepts the offer, and makes great preparation for the invading of *England*, and King *John* raises a Land-army, and prepares a Royal Navy to withstand him. But e'er the French make their attempts, *Pandulph* the Pope's Messenger arrives in *England*, and so wrought upon the King, what by representing the danger he was in, and what by flattering promises, that King *John* (not insensible of his desperate estate) sware in all things to submit to the judgment of the Church. And shortly after at the Knight-templars House in *Dover*, he surrendred his Crown into the hands of *Pandulph*, for the use of the Pope, laying at his feet his Sceptre, Robe, Sword and Ring, and subscribed to a Charter, whereby he resigned his Kingdom to the Pope: Professing he did it neither through fear or force, but of his own free-will, as having no other way to make satisfaction to God and the Church for his offence. And that from that time forward he would hold his Crown of the Pope, paying a pension annual of a thousand Marks, for the Kingdoms of *England* and *Ireland*. *Pandulph* now having gotten what he came for, haleins into *France*, there to dissuade *Philip* from proceeding against King *John*, as being become an obedient and reconciled Son to the Church. But *Philip*, who was of his holy Father's mind, not caring for King *John*'s repentance, but his Croyne, in great choler professed,

fessed, That since the Pope himself had so far thrust him on, his Legat's suggestions, no nor his threats of excommunication, should withdraw him from his intentions. In which resolution, calling his Peers into a consultation, they all approved his design, save Ferdinand Earl of Flanders, who alledged, that it was an unreasonable thing to think of invading another man's right ; inferring this his judgment with so good arguments, that thereby many of the Peers were induced to change their opinion. Which so incensed King Philip, that he drew his Forces against Flanders, commanding his mighty prepared Fleet to set forward thitherward. Of the which King John having speedy intelligence, set forth his Navy, and happily surprized the French Fleet at the Port of Damme (whilst most of the Souldiers were on Land, spoiling the Earl's Countrey) taking three hundred Vessels laden with provisions, Arms, and other costly fraught, and burning and sinking above 100. And now the King thinking to take the advantage of this Victory, made ready a great Army for the recovery of his hereditary Provinces lost to the French; but when all else was ready, then the Barons denied him their attendance, till he was affoiled of his Excommunication ; and that their pristine liberties granted them by Henry the First were restored. Stephen Langton animating them herein, and promising his faithfull assistance to them. Hereupon the King makes his appeal to Rome, presenting the Pope with rich presents ; in answer to which, the Pope sent his Legate the Bishop of Tuscum, who wrought with the King to corroborate the conveyance of his Kingdoms to the Pope ; unto which the King yielded. But the Arch-bishop of Canterbury opposed himself against it, with whom the Peers of the Land joined, avowing it to be an execrable thing to the whole World. And in a full Parliament it was enacted, That since the King could not without consent of Parliament bring his Realm and People to such thralldom ; therefore if the Pope should in the future attempt any such thing again, with life and livelihood he should be withheld. The Pope hearing of this, not onely

onely conceived exceeding hatred against the Arch-bishop ; but sent also his authentick Letters for repealing the Interdict, upon restitution of 1300 Marks more to the Prelates, and that but by equal portions of five years payment. And now the King passed into Poictou, which he reduced, thence into Britain, where his Pictorians, according to their old custome, proved false to him to his great detriment. The while his Barons they play Rex at home, renewing their confederation, and binding themselves with an Oath at the High Altar at St. Edmondsbury, That they would pursue the King with Arms, till he should consent to the Charter of Liberties, granted by Henry I. So that the King was inforced to return into England, where, when come, they challenged this Charter as a part of his Oath made at his Absolution, and shortly after they met together at Stamford with a very numerous Army. Their General was Robert Fitz-Walter, whom they styled the Marshal of God's Army and Holy Church. London invited them to enter the City by Night, where, when entered, by their threatfull Letters, they not onely drew most of the Nobles from the King, but had also almost lockt him out of his Royal Seat, insomuch, that he was necessitated by gentle messages, to procure of his factious Barons a place and day of meeting, which was Running-Mead, betwixt Windsor and Staines, (since called Council-Mead) whither they came with armed multitudes, out of all the Kingdom, numberless. Where the King perceiving their so great strength, and his own small party, he granted them the utmost of their desires, not onely for liberties specified in Magna Charta, and Charta Forestae, but also for a kind of rule in the Government, by 25 selected Peers, to whose command all the other Barons were also bound by Oath to be obedient. But the King could not long relish this, therefore privately sends to his trustie friends to fortify and vistual their Castels, and himself secretly retires into the Isle of Wight. From whence he dispatched Messengers both to the Pope and his foreign friends,

to crave the censure of the one, and succours of the other, against such outrageous Rebels. In both which his Agents were so sedulous, and friends compassionate, that at *Rome* by definitive sentence, the Barons Charters were made void, the King and Barons accursed, if either of them observed the composition made at *Council-Mead*. And from *Flanders*, *Gascoign*, *Brabant*, and other parts, such competent aids came in, as incouraged the King, after three months secrecy, to shew himself in the face of his Enemies. His Host he divided into two parts; with the one, conducted by himself Northward, he every where subdued his Rebels, as likewise did the Earl of *Salisbury* Southward. *Steven Langton* the Pope suspended for abetting the Barons; and his Brother *Simon Langton*, Arch-bishop elect of *York*, had his election made void, the Pope constituting in his place *Walter Gray*, whose Pall cost him no less than 1000 pounds. [The Archiepiscopal Pall is a Pontifical Vestment made of Lambs-wool, as it comes from the Sheep's back, without any other artificial colour, and spun by a peculiar Order of Nuns, cast into St. Peter's Tomb, and adorned with little black Crosses, having two Labels hanging down before and behind; which the Arch-bishops, when going to the Altar, put about their Necks, above their other pontifical Ornaments.] The disloyal Barons were all excommunicated by name, and all their Lands, together with the City of *London* Interdicted. But the lofty Barons held those censures in so high contempt, that they decreed neither themselves nor Citizens of *London* should observe them, nor the Prelates denounce them. And to revive their dying Cause, they resolve on a project for betraying the Crown of *England* unto *Lewis* the *Dauphin* of *France*, sending their Letters of Allegiance, confirmed with all the Barons Seals, to implore King *Philip*'s favour for sending his Son, and his Son for the acceptance of the *English* Crown. To prevent a correspondence herein, the Pope sends his Apostolical Commands to *Philip* of *France*, that he should stay his Son from entring upon St. Peter's Patrimony,

Patrimony, with a Curse also on all such, as should assist the excommunicate Barons. To which *Philip* replied, That *England* was no patrimony of St. Peter's, no King, saith he, having power of himself to alienate his Kingdom, King *John* especially, who never being lawfull King, had no power to dispose thereof; and that it was an errore and pernicious example in the Pope, and an itching lust after a new kind of Domination. His Peers swore, That they would spend their Bloud, rather than suffer that a King should of himself, or with a few flatterers, pass over his Crown, and enthrall its Nobles, especially to the Pope, who should follow St. Peter's steps, to win souls, and not to meddle with Wars, and murthers of mens bodies. And Prince *Lewis* declared, That he would chuse rather to be excommunicated by the Pope, than to falsifie his promise to the English Barons. So without more ado, he speedily set forth for *England*, with his Fleet of 600 Ships, and 80 Boats, which coming to shore in *Kent*, the Barons joined forces with him. King *John*, whose Army consisted most of stipendiary Foreigners, thought it best for a time to forbear battel with *Lewis*, and not to commit his whole fortunes to the hazard of their sudden defection; therefore drew towards *Winchester*, *Lewis* marching forward towards *London*, taking all the strong-holds in his way (excepting *Dover Castle*, kept by the valiant and faithfull *Hubert de Burgo*.) *London* received *Lewis*, the Citizens swearing truth to him, so did the Barons at *Westminster*, *Lewis* swearing to them, That he would restore all men their right, and recover to the Crown whatever had been lost by King *John*. All or most places where the French Prince caine submitted to him. At *Odiam Castle* indeed (wherin were but 13 English men) *Lewis* and his whole Army, was not onely braved 15 days, but also sallying forth upon them, every one took an Enemy, surrendring the Castle at last upon honourable terms. King *John* in other parts of the Realm, with a very considerable Host ruined the Barons Castles and possessions. But setting forth from *Lyn* in *Norfolk* (where for their faithful service, he bestowed large Franchises, and his own Sword, and a gilt Bowl) with a full resolution to give *Lewis* Battel; as he was passing the Washes, with

with his Army and Carriages toward *Lincolnshire*, all his Carriages, Treasures, and provisions were irrecoverably lost, himself and Army hardly escaping. And now by this time, the Barons were struck with some remorse to see their native Countrey by their procurement so miserably wasted, and afflicted; and which grieved them the most was, that their faithfull services to *Lewis*, were but slightly regarded by him at present, and were like to be ill repayed in the future; for Viscount *de Melun*, a Noble French-man, had on his death-bed privately discovered to them how that *Lewis* had sworn, That if ever *England's* Crown was settled on his head, he would condemn unto perpetual exile all the disloyal Barons, as Traytors to their Sovereign, and extirpate all their Kindred. Forty of the Barons therefore presently addressed their Letters of submissive suit to the King, but he was dead before the Messengers came. Some say he died of a *Flix*, some say of a *Surfeit*; but the most report, that he died of *Poison*; for King *John* coming, say they, from the *Washes* to *Swinfield Abby*, and there taking notice as he sate at meat, of their too prodigal provision, he swore, That if he lived but half a year longer, he would make one half-penny Loaf as dear as twelve. To prevent which, a Monk presented him with an invenomed Cup, tasting first thereof himself, so becoming the wicked instrument of his own and Sovereign's death, *Ottob. 19. 1216*. He was buried at *Worcester*.

He was first married to *Alice*, the Daughter to *Humbert II. Earl of Maurien*, now *Savoy*, next to *Isabel or Avis*, the Daughter of *William Earl of Gloucester*, Son of *Earl Robert*, the natural Son of King *Henry I.* then next to *Isabel* the Daugliter of *Aimer Earl of Angolesme*, by whom he had *Issue*, *Henry*, *Richard*, *Joan* Married to *Alexander II. King of Scots*; *Eleanor* Married to *William Marshal* the younger Earl of *Pembroke*; and after his death, Married to *Simon Monford*, Earl of *Leicester*; *Isabel* Married to the Emperor *Frederick II.*

Baie *Issue*, *Jeffry Fitz-Ray*, *Richard* and *Jane*. He appointed those excellent Forms of Civil Government

ment in the Cities, and incorporate Towns of *England*, endowing them also with their greatest Franchises. He settled the rates and measures for Wine, Bread, Cloath, and such like necessaries of Commerce. He planted English Laws and Officers in *Ireland*. Now lived one *Simon Thurvey*, who for his pride in Learning, especially for his Blasphemies against *Moses* and *Christ*, became so utterly ignorant, that he could hardly reade a Letter in the Book.

In or near the year 1176, *London Bridge* was begun to be built of Stone by *Peter of Cole-Church*, Priest; and was finished in A. D. 1209. Shortly after which, a great Fire hapned upon the Bridge, and about three thousand Persons destroyed by means thereof.

## HENRY III.

Okt. 19. **H**ENRY III. at about 10 years of Age was Crowned A. D. 1216. King, the Ninth day after his Father King John's decease, the Earl of Pembroke being by common consent of Peers and Prelates constituted Guardian of him during his Non-age. This Noble Earl set out against Lewis, and at Lincoln utterly defeated his Army; which discomfiture was called *Lewis Fair*, from the great spoil that the Earl's Soldiers took from the *Lewisians* and City of *Lincoln*. Here the chiefest of the malignant Barons were taken, with about 400 Knights, besides Esquires, and of other sorts innumerable. A great number also of such as escaped out of the Fight, were knockt on the head by the Countrey people. Likewise about the same time a fresh supply of Men and Money coming from France, were scattered, sunk and taken by the English Fleet, the English in the Engagement using unslaked Lime, which they threw into the Faces of the *Monsieurs*, blinding their sight therewith. Then to give no rest to Lewis his declining fortunes, the Earl of Pembroke closely besieged London with Lewis in it, where he brought the matter to capitulation. The heads whereof were, *That Lewis and the Barons should submit to the judgment of the Church, whose censure they had long contemned. That Lewis should depart the Land, and never return with design to doe harm. That he should endeavour with his Father, that all such things that belong to the English Crown might be restor'd; and that when Lewis himself should be King, he should peaceably part with them. That Lewis should immediately render to King Henry all holds and places taken in the War; for the performance of all which, Lewis took his Oath.* On the other part, the King, Legate, Wallo, and the Earl swore, *That the King should restore to the Barons and others, all their rights and*

## HENRY III.

*and inheritances, with all their liberties formerly demanded of Richard King John. That none of the Laity should suffer damage and Magnus, reproach, for taking part on either side. That Prisoners should A.B.Can. be released.* This done, Wallo absolved Lewis and his adherents, and Lewis took his leave of England. Yet was not England quiet long, for William Earl of Aumarl, Foulk de Brent, and Robert de Veipont, with others, committed divers furious Riots, the Church and State being grown into such disorder, that every man dared to attempt in either, what his own audaciousnes should suggest. The Welsh they made some stirs. And one Fitz-Arnulph a Citizen of London, attempted to set up Lewis again; for the which, himself and two others were hanged, and many more had their hands or feet cut off. The Barons they were high, for a confirmation of their Liberties. And Lewis of France, upon the death of his Father, seized Rochel, and the whole Countrey of Poictou (which belonged to the King of England) into his hands, under pretence, that King Henry an Homager for Aquitain, was not present at his Coronation, nor yet excused his absence by Ambassadors. Whereupon Henry summons a Parliament for Aids to recover his losses, which being granted, he sent over his Forces, which discomfited the French. But the King necessitated for more Monies for the carrying on of his design in Gascoign, wrung from the Londoners five thousand Marks above their Fifteenths, alledging that they had to his prejudice given Lewis the like sum. The Clergy also were compelled under pain of Papal censure, to pay the Fifteenth, not onely for their temporal, but also ecclesiastical goods; And by advice of Hubert de Burgo, Chief Justice, the King revoked the Charters of Liberties, which for about two years had been practised through the Realm, pretending his Non-age when granted. Which caused in all a great heart-burning against Hubert. Howbeit, the King was well furnish'd with money and men, which he caused to be transported into Britain, and on the same day, in which he set sail from England, himself in person did visit the poor and feeble, dealing K

ling large Alms to them, and not refusing to kiss the sick and leprous. But before that the King had opportunity to effect any thing in those parts considerable, the *Irish* rebelled, constraining him to return, to reduce them into order. Which when he had done, he advanced against the *Welsh*, whom he also repressed, though not without considerable loss. About this time *Hubert de Burgo* Earl of *Kent*, was accused by the Bishop of *Winchester* and others, for the committing of many great crimes: As, that he had dissuaded the Duke of *Austria* from matching his Daughter with the King, who sought it; that he said that the King was a squint-eyed Fool, a kind of Leper, deceitfull, perjured, more faint-hearted than a woman; that he had hindred the King from entering upon foreign Lands belonging to him, whereby the King's Peers and People consumed their treasures vainly: That he had enticed the King of *Scots* Daughter, and traiterously defiled the Noble young Lady, whom he married in hope to be King of *Scotland* in her right, if she survived her Brother: That he had stolen out of the Jewel-house a pretious Stone, of such wonderfull virtue, as to make him that had it invincible in battel, and had bestowed that stone upon *Lewelin Prince of Wales*, the King's Enemy, &c. But the Earl doubting that he should not have a fair Trial, retired himself into *Essex*, whether he was prosecuted by armed men, and in a Chapel at *Burntwood* was apprehended; out of which the rude Souldiers hauled him, and sent for a Smith to make Shackles for him; which when the Smith understood that they were for him, fetching a deep sigh, he said, *Doe with me what you please; and God have mercy on my soul; but as sure as the Lord lives I will never make Iron-shackles for him, but will rather die the worst death that is. For is not this the most Loyal and Courageous Hubert, who so often hath preserved England from being destroyed by Strangers, and restored England to England? Let God be judge between him and you, for using him so unjustly and unmercifully, requiting his most excellent deserts, with the worst recompence that can be.* Notwithstanding all this, Sir *Godefrey*

*de Crantomb*, who commanded the party, bound the Earl, and conveyed him to the Tower of *London*, where he had not long been, e'er the Bishop of *London* procured his liberty, though shortly after he was again imprisoned. In his place the King elected for his Counsellour and Confident, *Peter de Rupibus* Bishop of *Winchester*, who displaced the English Officers; and in their rooms placed *Poitouins* and *Britons*, stuffing the King's Castles with them, intrusting, as it were, the Treasures, Strength, and Realm it self in their hands, to the great discontent of the English Peers. Who now confederated against the Strangers, and refused upon the King's summons to appear in Parliament; sending this impudent Message to their Sovereign; That if out of hand he removed not the Bishop of *Winchester*, and Strangers out of his Court, they all of them, by the common consent of the Kingdom, would drive him and his wicked Counsellours out of it, and would consult about creating of a new King. Whereupon the King (animated by *Winchester*) commanded the Earl-marshall, with all others whom he suspected, to appear at *Glocester*, where the King was with an Army: which they refusing to doe, the King burnt their Manors, and gave away their Inheritances to *Poitouins*. The Earl-marshall, he contracts strict amity with *Llewelyn Prince of Wales*, and made great spoil on the possessions of the King's reputed Seducers. *Brewsbury* he sackt and burnt. *Gilbert*, Lord *Basset*, the Earl's great Confederate, set fire on *Alkmundbury*, not far from *Huntingdon*. But the Earl-marshall having crossed the Seas into *Ireland*, there to recover his Lands, taken from him by the fraud of the Bishop of *Winchester*, was there wounded to death; for whose loss the King, to the wonder of all that saw it, broke forth into tears, affirming, That he had lost no Peer about him in the Kingdom. And now the Bishop of *Winchester*, hated of the People, was commanded by the King not to meddle any farther in State-matters: And against *Peter Rivallis* Lord Treasurer, the King was so enraged, that he sware

he would pluck out his eyes were it not for reverence of holy Orders. And by the workings of the Bishops, an accord was effected betwixt the King and his Peers, and the *Poilevins* were commanded to depart the Realm. Howbeit the Land was not yet eased of its Oppressours and Oppressions; for the Pope sent over into *England* three hundred *Romans*, requiring to have the first Benefice that should become vacant, to be bestowed on them; requiring also great sums of money of the Clergy for maintenance of the Pope's Wars against the Emperour: Which though the Clergy at first opposed, yet were forced to yield unto it at the last. The Pope himself had a mind to have come hither in his own person, but the King's Council liked not thereof; alledging, that the *Romans* Rapines and Simonies had enough stained *England*'s purity, though the Pope himself came not personally to spoil and prey upon the Wealth of the Church.

About the year 1240, *Richard Earl of Cornwall*, the King's Brother, with the Earls of *Pembroke*, *Chester*, *Lincoln*, *Salisbury*, and many other honourable persons, departed for the *Holy Land*; and in A.D. 1242, the King passed the Seas to recover *Poilon*, but effected not anything remarkable, though he expended great store of Treasure. Upon his return into *England* he was therefore compelled to be burthensome to his Subjects for recruiting of his exhausted Treasure, as well by the levy of Escuage, as of Loan and otherwise. The Jews in especial manner were made sensible of his wants. Too much of their money, thus rais'd, 'tis said he expended in Entertainments and Shows; though afterward the King reflecting on his former profuence in gifts and entertainments, he shortned the allowances of his household and entertainments, without any regard to Majesty. And to spare his own charge the more, he invited himself now to this man's House, now to that; but no where contenting himself with his welcome, unless himself and his Queen, Son *Edward*, yea, and chief Favourites, were presented with costly Gifts. 'Tis said that he was

was sometimes reduced to that penury, that he was s. Edforced to live upon the Alms of the Church. This mund of King designed, at least pretended, to go for the Abington *Holy Land*; when the Parliament granted him large A.B.Cant. Aids upon this condition, That at this time once for all, he should submit himself to govern by Law, to confirm the Charters of Liberties, or *Magna Charta*: Against the breakers whereof, a most solemn curse was pronounced. The King swearing to keep all Liberties, upon pain of that execratory sentence, " As he was a man, a Christian, a Knight, and a King Anointed and Crowned. Yet, notwithstanding the Oath and the Curse, the King two or three years after caused the Tenth of all *England* and *Ireland* to be collected for his own use and the Pope's, the Pope having given the Kingdom of *Sicily* to his Son *Edmard*; but the *English* Subjects were first to win it for him: Which the Nobles peremptorily denied the attempting; there being occasion enough for money and men at home, the *Welsh* having risen in rebellion. Against whom Prince *Edward* was sent; who, though he wanted not for Courage, yet in one field lost 2000 *English* men, and was beaten out of the field.

In A.D. 1257, was *Richard Earl of Cornwall*, the King's Brother, elected King of the *Romans*, and was Crowned at *Aquisgrane*, having paid a large sum of money for the honour. At this time the Earl was reputed to possess so much ready Coin, as would every day for ten years afford him an hundred Marks upon the main stock, besides his Rents and Revenues in *Germany*, and the *English* Dominions.

And now the King relapsed into his profuseness, and favouring of the *Poilevins*, and other foreigners: The Nobles hereupon came exquisitely armed to the Parliament, holden at *Oxford*, with a resolution to inforce the King and his Aliens to their proposals; which were, That the King should unfeignedly keep the Charter of Liberties: That such an one should be in place of Justiciar, who would judge all impartially: That the Foreigners should be expelled

S. Edmund, led the Realm: And that twenty-four persons should of Abing-ton, A. B. King and State; and yearly appointing of all great Officers, Reserving to the King the Ceremonies of Honour. Binding themselves by Oath, to see these things performed; and the King and Prince swearing to observe the ordination of these disloyal Barons, who had by an Edict given out high menacings against all that should resist. The Foisevies were so terrified by these violent proceedings, that they fled into France. The giddy people they joined with the Barons, as the Assertors of their Liberties: the Londoners bound themselves under their publick Seal to assist them in the common Cause: Richard King of the Romans, the Barons would not suffer to come into England, but in a private manner, with a very small train; and being landed, they exacted an Oath of him; and upon pain of forfeiting all his Lands in England, bound him to join with them in reforming the State, which they factiously had assumed to do, having appointed four Knights Commissioners in every Shire, to enquire of all Oppressions, and to certifie the same to them. And the better to strengthen their Cause, Simon Montford Earl of Leicester, Head of the Factionists, with others, passed into France, there to transact with the King thereof, as to an indissoluble League. About which time King Henry, for want of Money, or good Counsel, or both, was induced upon no very good terms, for ever to renounce to the King of France all his right to Normandy, Aisne, Turein, Main and Poitou. But the fire which had been long in blowing, did not break out into a flame, the King and his Barons taking arms against each other. Simon de Montford executes his greatest revenge on the Queens friends, who were Aliens; not sparing the Kings, who were free-born Englishmen: Yet at length mutual weariness inclines Henry and his Barons to peace; and the King is willing that the Statutes of Oxford should be in force; but the Queen was unwilling: Which being known to the Londoners, it put the baser sort into so leud a rage, that she

she being to shoot the Bridge from the Tower towards Windsor, where Prince Edward was Ingarrison'd, they with dirt and stones, and villanous words, forced her back to the Tower. Howbeit at London, in a Parliament there held, matters were pieced up, though shortly after all was rent again, both sides making fresh preparations for War. King Henry drew towards Oxford, where the rendezvous of his friends and forces was appointed; from which University he dismissed all the Students, being above fifteen thousand, of those onely whose names were entred into the Matriculation-book. Whereupon many of them went to the Barons to Northampton, whither Henry came, and breaking in at the Town-Walls, encountred his Enemies, amongst whom these Students of Oxford had a Banner by themselves, advanced right against the King, and did more annoy him in the fight, than the rest of the Barons Forces: Which the King (who at length prevailed) vowed sharply to revenge; but was dissuaded by his Counsellors, who told him that those Students were the Sons and Kindred of the great men of the Land, whom if he punished, even the Nobles that now stood for him, would take Arms against him.

The King, encouraged by this success, advanceth his Royal Standard toward Nottingham, burning and wasting the Barons Lands wheresoever he came. The Barons they sent Letters to him, protesting their loyal obseriance to his person, but all hostility to their Enemies who were about him. To which the King returned them a full defiance, as to Traytors, professing that he took the wrong of his friends as his own, and their Enemies as his. At length the two Armies met, and ingaged in fight, wherein Prince Edward bravely behaved himself, putting the Londoners to flight, pursuing them for four miles; but in the meanwhile, his Father having his Horse slain under him, yielded himself Prisoner; the King of the Romans, and other great Peers were taken, and the whole hope of the day lost on the King's side. On the next day peace was concluded for the present

Robert Kilwardby, A. B. Cant. on condition, That Prince *Edward* and *Henry* the King of the Romans Son, should also render themselves into the Barons hands. And now by this advantage the factious Lords, gained all the chief Castles of the Kingdom into their power, *Montford* carrying his Sovereign as his Prisoner about the Countrey (yet with all outward respect and honour) the rather to procure a more quiet surrender of Garrisons. So fortunate may Treason and Rebellion for a time be, though in the end it commonly speeds as it deserves. To tame these Rebels, the Pope sends his Cardinal Legate to excommunicate them, but they trusting to the temporal Sword, made light of the spiritual. Howbeit, to the King's great advantage there hapned so irreconcileable a difference betwixt the two great Earls of *Leicester*, and *Glocester*, that the latter forsook the Barons Cause, and joined himself with *Roger de Mortimer*, and his associates, to whom not long after *Earl Warren*, and *William de Valence Earl of Pembroke*, with other Peers united themselves, and Prince *Edward* escaping came in safety to them; the Counties of *Hereford*, *Worcester*, *Salop* and *Chester* coming in to their assistance. When the Prince having a considerable strength marched against *Montford*, who hearing of the Princes advance, encamped at *Evesham*, where Prince *Edward* inclosed him, compelling him either to fight or yield. The first of which he elected, both Armies joining battel before the Town of *Evesham*, where the Earl's Host was with much slaughter, especially of the Welsh, utterly in the end distressed and discomfited. *Simon de Montford* being slain in the fight, had his Head, Hands and Feet chopp off. The King who had been brought a Prisoner into the field, by his friends valour and good hap, was restored to his Liberty. And he presently after this cruel battel, called a Parliament at *Winchester*, by whose approbation he seized into his hands the Charters of *London*, and other disloyal Towns, disinherited such as were on the Earl's side, distributed their Estates amongst his well deserving Subjects. The Legate Cardinal *Cittabon* excommunicated the Bishops of

*London*,

*Winchester*, *Worcester*, and *Chichester*, for their adhering unto the Earl. And now all things being calm in *England*, Prince *Edward*, with many of the Nobles, took the Cross upon them for the *Holy Land*. And the King to secure the Nations peace, held a Parliament at *Marleborough*, where the Statutes of *Marleborough* were enacted. But King *Henry* having been at *Norwich*, to punish the Citizens outrage in burning the Priory Church, he, in his return, fell grievously sick at the Abby of St. *Edmond* in *Suffolk*, and there died in A. D. 1272. and was buried at *Westminster*. His Wife was *Eleanor*, the Daughter of *Raymond Earl of Provence*. His Issue was *Edward*, *Edmond* surnamed *Crouchback*, *Richard*, who died young; as also *John*, *William* and *Henry*. *Margaret* Married to *Alexander III. King of Scotland*; *Beatrice* married to *John* the first Duke of *Britain*. *Katharine* who died young. This King laid the first stone of the new work of the Abby-Church at *Westminster*. He founded the house of *Converts*, where such as forsook the Jewish Religion, had provisions for maintenance. He also erected and endowed a famous Hospital at *Oxford*, both for the entertainment of Foreigners and Pilgrims, and for relief of such as were diseased. He was so disposed to performing acts of charity, that he made *Lewine Prince of Wales* (*Montford's confederate*) when he was threatned hardly, if he would not live at peace, to answer thus, I more fear the Alms-deeds of the King, than all the men of war which he hath, and his Clergy to boot. King *Henry*, because *Thomas de la Linde* killed a white Hart in *Blackmore-Forest*, which he much fancies, set a perpetual fine upon the Land, which at this day is called *White-Hart-Silver*.

In the 17th year of his Reign, four Mock-Suns were seen from Morning till Evening, after which followed so great a Dearth, that People were forced to eat Horse-flesh, and Barks of Trees, and in *London* twenty thousand were famished. In this Famine, which was about A. D. 1235, certain poor People of *Abboldesla*, (so called then) in *Cambridgeshire*,

shire, whilst Corn was green, pluck the ears in the Common-fields to sustain their lives, whereupon the Owners call upon, and compell the Priest to curse them all; but one amongst them more humane than the rest, adjured the Priest in the Name of God, to exempt his Corn from the sentence, saying, It pleased him well that the Poor for their necessity had took of his Corn; and so commended that which they had left to God, who miraculously preserved it, whereas all the others Corn (amongst which his grew) was utterly destroyed by terrible Lightning, Wind, Hail and Rain, whilst the Priest was about to denounce the Curse. A.D. 1241, certain Jews of *Norwich* were hanged for circumcising a Christian Child, and their House called the *Thor* was destroyed. A Scholar of *Oxford*, who attempted to kill the King in his Chamber at *Woodstock*, was pulled in pieces by wild Horses. Now arose in *England* a most monstrous Impostour, who pretended himself to be *Christ*, procuring himself to be wounded in the hand, feet and side, thinking thereby the more easily to delude the people; his punishment was immuring between two walls, together with an old Hag, pretending her self to be the Virgin *Mary*, there to pine to death.

In this King's Reign flourished in *England*, the Irrefragable Doctor *Alexander de Hales*, who was School-master to the Angelick Doctor *Thomas Aquinas*. Now also lived *Robert Grosseteste* Bishop of *Lincoln*, called *Romanorum Malleus*, who wrote boldly against the Pope, reproving his arrogant (to call them no worse) practices.

At *Sorbiendum*, or *Salisbury*, *Richard Poer*, then Bishop of *Sarum*, built that stately Church, which hath in it as many windows as are days in the year, as many Marble-pillars as hours, as many doors as Months.

*Magna Charta* containing the Sum of all the written Laws of *England*, was ordained in the ninth year of Henry III. The Walls and Bulwarks raised about the Tower of *London*, were thrown down by an Earthquake.

quake. Eighteen Jews were executed for crucifying a Child at *Lincoln*. And in *London* was slain of Jews, to the number of 700. their Wares spoiled, and their Synagogues defaced, because a Jew would have forced a Christian man to have paid more than two-pence the week for the use of Twenty shillings.

---

## EDWARD

---

## EDWARD I.

Nov. 16.  
A. D.  
1272.

**E**DWARD, surnamed *Longshanks*, at his Father Henry's death, was employed in the Holy Wars, wherein he so excellently behaved himself, that he gained the repute of a most valiant Soldier. At Acon an Assasinate wounded him with a poisoned knife, which wounds his Queen *Eleanor* daily licked with her tongue, till therewith the poison was extracted, and the wounds healed ; her self receiving no harm thereby. When the news of his Father's death came to his ears, he grieved much more, than for the death of his Son, who died a little before, saying to the King of Sicily, who wondred thereat, That the los of Sons is but light, because they are multiplied every day, but the death of Parents is irremediable, because they can never be had again. At his arrival in England he was most joyfully welcomed, and with his dearest *Eleanor* was Crowned at Westminster by Robert Kilwarby, Arch-bishop of Canterbury. When for the more royal celebration of the Coronation feast of so Martial a Prince, there were five hundred great Horses let loose, every one to take them for his own, who could. The first matter of remark done by King Edward, after his Coronation, was the subduing of Wales, whose Prince *Llewelin*, the last Prince of Britains bloud, had refused to doe him homage ; but being slain, his head crowned with Ivie, was set upon the Tower of London. In his stead the King created his own Son Edward, born at Caernarvon, Prince of Wales. And now Wales being settled in quiet, the King repaired into France, where he sat in Person with the French King in his Parliament at Paris, as a Peer of that Realm, in respect of such Lands as he held in those parts, and being returned into England, he addressed himself to purge his state from the Oppressions under which

## EDWARD I.

441

it groaned. Fifteen thousand of the extorting John *Jens* he banished out of the Land, confiscating their Peckham Goods. His corrupt Justiciars he displaced, and fined, and constrained all his Justices to swear that from that time, they would take no Fee, Pension, or Gift of any man, except onely a breakfast or like present. He also appointed that Justices Itinerants, should go their several circuits at such certain times of the year. And now the Crown of Scotland by the death of Alexander the third, being destitute of any apparent Heir, by the umprisage of King Edward, it was settled on the head of John *Baliol*, who did homage to Edward (against the minds of the Scots) for the whole Kingdom of Scotland. But shortly after *Baliol* to regain the affections of his People, combined with the French against the English, wherfore the King advanced against the Scots with a puissant Army, drove the Scots out of the North-parts of England, where they had done much mischief, took Berwick Town and Castle, had Dunbar yielded to him, and after a cruel fight, obtained a Victory of great importance ; took the Castle of Roxborow, had Edenborough rendred to him, so brought *Baliol* to sue for mercy, which was granted on condition, that the Scots should submit to him as their Sovereign. And accordingly the Nobles of Scotland, at a Parliament holden at Berwick, did swear to be true Subjects to Edward for ever after, and hereof a solemn Instrument was there sealed by them. John the late King was sent to the Tower of London, and the custody of Scotland was committed to John de Warren, Earl of Surrey and Sussex. Out of Edenborough, Edward took the Crown, Sceptre and Cloath of State. Burnt their Records, abrogated their Laws, altered the forms of their Divine service, transplanted their learnedst men unto Oxford. The Marble-chair in the Abbey of Schope, wherein the Kings of Scotland were wont to be Crowned, he sent unto Westminster. This is the Chair upon which was engraven the famous prophetical Distich.

## EDWARD I.

*Nō fallat fatum, Scotti quicunque location  
Inventent lapidem, regnare tenentur ibidem.*

That the Scots should reign, wheresoever that chair should be, verified in King James. But King Edward drawn beyond the Seas, by occasion of Wars in Gascoigne, and for aid of friends in Flanders, one William Wallis Captain of the discontented Scots, put Earl Warren to flight in Scotland, and all the English forces that were with him, taking them at an advantage as they were passing over a narrow-bridge near Striveling, where the slaughter of the English was not small. Hugh de Cressingham Treasurer of Scotland for King Edward was there slain, whose dead body the Scots did flay, dividing his skin amongst them. But King Edward being returned into England, he summoned a Parliament to York, giving the Scots a day to appear at it, which they not doing, nor acknowledging that they ought so to do, he entered Scotland with a mighty Army, where when he was near the Enemy, as he was putting his foot into the stirrup, his Horse being affrighted with the sudden shout of the Scotch Army, threw him down, and striking with his heels, broke two of the King's ribs, who nevertheless proceeded to battle. Captain Wallis encouraged his men with this short speech, I have brought you to the King, *bop gif ye kin.* In this battle, fought at a place called Fowkyk, the English flew of the Scots 70 thousand. After which Victory King Edward took sundry places in Scotland, then returned into England, where in Parliament holden at London and Stamford, he confirmed Magna Charta, and *Carta de Foresta*, and yielded that there should be no Subsidy, or Taxation levied upon the People; without consent of the Prelates, Peers and People. And for the more ample satisfaction of some then discontented, he left out this clause in the end of his Grants, *Sicut jure Corone nostra,* Saving the right of our Crown: upon the Pope's request he set John late King of Scotland

## EDWARD I.

land at liberty, who departed into France. And Robert then the King made it his whole affair to finish the Winchel-annexation of Scotland to the Crown of England, to say, A. B. which end, he passed with a dreadfull Army into Scotland, where the Scots, not being able to withstand him by force of Arms, procured inhibitory Letters from the Pope; but these the King set light by, swearing *per sanguinem Dei*, that he would not desist. And when the Scots threatned that if he would not desist his hostility, the Pope would take the matter upon him; the King with a disdainfull smile answered, Have ye done homage to me as to the chief Lord of the Kingdom of Scotland, and do ye now suppose that I can be terrified with threatening lies, as if (like one that had no power to compell) I would let the right which I have, to go out of my hand? Let me hear no more of this, for if I do, I swear by the Lord, I will consume all Scotland from Sea to Sea. To which the Scots replid, That in defence of Justice, and their Countries rights, they would shed their bloud. Howbeit that the King might not seem altogether to neglect the Court of Rome, he sent the Earl of Lincoln thither in justification of his proceedings, and at the instance of the Pope, he granted Truce to the Scots from All-Saints to Whitsantide. But the Pope not long satisfied with this, directly opposed the King in his martial proceedings against that Nation, wherefore the King in a Parliament holden at Lincoln, By the consent of the whole Representative body of the Realm, returned a copious defence of his whole proceedings, with protestations first, That he did not exhibit any thing as in form of judgment or trial of his Cause, but for satisfaction of his holy Father-hoods conscience, and not otherwise. And because the Pope required that the King should stand to his decision for matter of Claim, the Earls and Peers (to whom the King wholly referred it) with one mind directly signified, That their King was not to answer in judgment for any rights of the Crown of England, before any Tribunal.

bunal under Heaven, and that (by sending Deputies and Attornies to such an end) he should not make the said truth doubtfull, because it manifestly tended to the disinherition of the said Crown, which with the help of God, they would resolutely, and with all their power maintain against all men. To the which they all (being 100 Peers) subscribed their Names, Dated at Lincoln, 1301.

### The Names of those Worthy Patriots, who withstood Papal Usurpation.

*J*OHN Earl Warren, Thomas Earl of Lancaster, Ralph de Monthermer Earl of Gloucester and Hereford, Humphrey de Bohun Earl of Hartford and Essex, Roger Bigod Earl of Norfolk, Guy Earl of Warwick, Richard Earl of Arundel, Adomer de Valence Lord of Montereyn, Henry de Lancaster Lord of Monmouth, John de Hastings Lord of Bergevenny, Henry de Percy Lord of Topelife, Edmond de Mortymer Lord of Wigmore, Robert Fitz Walter Lord of Wodham, John de S. John Lord of Hannake, Hugh de Vere Lord of Swanestampe, William de Breuse Lord of Gower, Robert de Monthault Lord of Howarden, Robert de Tateshall Lord of Wokeham, Reinold de Grey Lord of Ruthin, Henry de Grey Lord of Codnore, Hugh Bardolph Lord of Wormgay, Robert de Clifford Chattellaine of Appleby, Peter de Malowé Lord of Mulgreen, Philip Lord of Kime, Robert Fitz Roger Lord of Claverings, John de Moham Lord of Dunestar, Almerich de St. Edmund Lord of Widehay, William de Ferrers Lord of Groby, Alane de Zouch Lord of Ashby, Theobald de Verdon Lord of Webberley, Thomas de Furnival Lord of Scbefeld, Thomas de Merton Lord of Egremont, William Latimer Lord of Torby, Thomas Lord Berkly, Fowlk Fitz-Warren Lord of Mettingham, John Lord Segrave, Edmund de Eincourt Lord of Thurgerson, Peter Corbet Lord Caus, William de Cantelow Lord of Ravensthorpe, John de Beauchamp Lord of Hache, Roger de Mortimer Lord of Pentethlin, John Fitz-Reinold Lord of Blenleveny, Ralph de Nevil Lord of Raby, Brian Fitz-Allane Lord

Lord of Bedale, William Marshal Lord of Hengham, Walter Lord Huntercombe, William Martin Lord of Cameis, Henry de Thies Lord of Chilton, Roger le Ware Lord of Ifield, John de Rivers, Lord of Angre, John de Lancaster Lord of Grisedale, Robert Fitz-Pain Lord of Lainnier, Henry Tregozze Lord of Garinges, Robert Hipard Lord of Lumford, Walter Lord Falconbridge, John Strange Lord of Cnokin, Robert Strange Lord of Elsemere, Thomas de Chances Lord of Norton, Walter de Beauchamp Lord of Alecester, Richard Talbot Lord of Eccleswell, John Butetourt Lord of Mendesham, John Engain Lord of Colum, Hugh de Poinz Lord of Comualet, Adam Lord of Wells, Simon Lord Montacute, John Lord Sulle, John de Melles Lord of Can-debury, Edmond Baron Stafford, John Lovel Lord of Hackings, Edmond de Hastings Lord of Elchunbonkes, Ralph Fitz William Lord of Grinborpe, Robert de Scales Lord of Neusells, William Tuchet Lord of Lewenhales, John Abadan Lord of Deverstone, John de Haverings Lord of Grafton, Robert la Ward Lord of White-Hall, Nicholas de Segrave Lord of Stowe, Walter de Tey Lord of Stonegrave, John de Lisle Lord of Wodton, Eustace Lord Hacche, Gilbert Peche Lord of Corby, William Painell Lord of Trachington, Roger de Albo Monasberio, Foulk de Strange Lord of Corsham, Henry de Pinkeney Lord of Wedon, John de Hodelesten Lord of Aners, John de Huntingfield Lord of Bradenham, Hugh Fitz-Henry Lord of Ravenswath, John Dalton Lord of Sporle, Nicholas de Carru Lord of Mulesford, Thomas Lord de la Roche, Walter de Mouncie Lord of Thornton, John Lord of Kingstone, Robert Hasting, the Father, Lord of Chelsey, Ralph Lord Grendon, William Lord Leibourne, John de Greystock Lord of Morpath, Matthew Fitz-John Lord Stockenham, Nicholas de Nevil Lord of Wherlton, and John de Painel Lord of Ateli.

POP E Boniface VIII. perceiving these high resolutions, and having enough to do with the King of France, left the Scots to look to themselves as well as they could. Over whom King Edward had appointed the valiant Lord Segrave Custos; but notwithstanding his valour the Scots discomfited him, and took him Prisoner, whom Sir Robert de Neville rescued?

Galter  
Reynold;  
A. B. C. C.

John cued, as also the rest of the Prisoners without the Stratford loss of one man of his own. When the report of A.B. Cant. this success of the Scots came to Edward's ears, he went in person with a great Army, piercing therewith through all Scotland, from Roxborough to Caithness, being about three hundred miles, not an enemy appearing with power to obstruct him, but all either submitting or betaking themselves with their Captain Wallis, to the Woods and Mountains. King Edward after he had settled affairs in that Nation to his best conveniency, returned to London, whither not long after, Captain Wallis, a Knights Son, having been betray'd, was brought Prisoner, and at Westminster, for Treason, and other crimes tryed, found guilty, and adjudged to death, which sentence was executed on him, and his quarters set up in divers parts of Scotland. After this man's death, generous Bruce ( who attained the Crown of Scotland ) headed his Countrey-men the Scots, and was put to flight by Aymery de Valence, and forced into the utmost Isles of Scotland, where for a while he liv'd in great distress, till seeing his time he appeared again in an hostile manner in Scotland, doing many things above the opinion of his means. This induced Martial King Edward to advance towards Scotland, but in his march he fell sick at Carlisle, where ( amongst other things given in charge ) he commanded his Son Edward that he should be industrious in carrying on his design against the Scots, and that he should carry his skeleton along with him through the Scotish Nation : For, said the King, whilst thou hast my bones with thee, none shall be able to overcome thee. He likewise commanded the Prince on pain of his Curse, not without common consent, to recall Pierce Gaveston, who for abusing the Princes tender years with wicked vanities, by common decree was banished. He charged the Prince too, That he should send his heart into the Holy Land, accompanied with 140 Knights, and their retinues, for whose support he had provided thirty two thousand pounds of Silver. Lastly he charged

charged him, That upon pain of eternal damnation the said Monies should not be expended upon any other uses. This Heroick King died of a Dysentery at Burgh upon Sands, A.D. 1307. and was buried at Westminster. His first Wife Eleanor was the Daughter of Ferdinand the third King of Castile ; his second Wife was Margaret, the Daughter of Philip, the hardy King of France. His Issue by Queen Eleanor was John, Henry, Alphonso, who all died young ; Edward who succeeded him, Eleanor Married to Henry III. Earl of Barrie ; Joan Married to Gilbert Clare, Earl of Gloucester and Hereford ; Margaret Married to John the second Duke of Brabant ; Berenger and Alice, then Mary, who at ten years of Age was Veild a Nun in the Monastery of Ambresbury in Wilts, at the earnest desire of her Grand-mother Queen Eleanor, who wasthere at that time of the same profession ; then Elizabeth who was first Married to John, the first Earl of Holland and Zealand ; then to Humphry Bohun Earl of Hereford and Essex ; then Beatrice and Blanch. By Queen Margaret he had Issue, Thomas created Earl of Norfolk, and Earl Marshal of England ; Edmond created Earl of Kent, and Eleanor who died young.

When the King took his long and dangerous Voyage into the Holy-Land, his Queen Eleanor would by no means be persuaded to stay behinde him, but would needs accompany him, saying, ' Nothing must part them whom God hath joyned, and the way to Heaven is as near in the Holy-Land ( if not nearer ) as in England or Spain. In remembrance of his first Wife Queen Eleanor, who died at Herdeby in Lincolnshire, he erected Crosses between that and Westminster, in all places where her Hearse rested ; namely, at Lincoln, Grantham, Stanford, Geddington, Northampton, Stony-Stratford, Dunstable, St. Albans, Waltham, Westminster, called Charing-Cross, all adorned with her Armes of Castile, Leon, and the County of Poniu, which by her right was annexed to the Crown of England. 'Tis said, that he built Hull in Yorkshire, which was afterward beautified with fair Buildings by Michael de la Pole, Earl of Suffolk. In the eighth year  
I. 2

## E D W A R D I.

year of his Reign, he sent out his Writ *Quo Warranto*, to examine by what Title men held their Lands, which brought him in much money; till John Earl Warren being called to shew his Title, drew out an old rusty Sword, and said, he held his Land by that, and by that would hold it till his death. In a Synod holden at *Reading*, it was Ordained, That no Ecclesiastical person should have more than one Benefice, to which belonged the Cure of Souls. There was executed at *London* 297 Jews at one time, for defacing the King's Coyn. A.D. 1288. was the Summer so excessive hot, that many men died with extremity thereof, and yet Wheat sold at *London* for three shillings four pence the Quarter.

Now flourished Roger Bacon a Franciscan Friar, an excellent Philosopher and Mathematician.

## E D W A R D .

John  
Stratford  
A.B. Can.

## E D W A R D II.

E D W A R D, called *Caernarvon* after that he had homage done him by many of the Scotch Lords at *Dumfres*, he next took (unjust) revenge on *Walter Langton* Bishop of *Chester*, by Imprisoning him, and seizing all his temporal goods and credits; because that in his Father King Edward's Life-time, the Bishop had gravely reproved him for his misdemeanours, and had complained on *Pierce Gaveston*, whereon ensued young Edward's Imprisonment, and *Gaveston's* Banishment. Then he sailed into *France*, where at *Boleyn*, with wonderfull magnificence he was Married to young *Isabel*, Daughter of *Philip the Fair*; and at his return for *England*, brought back with him his beloved Minion *Pierce Gaveston*, who was a Gentleman Stranger brought up with him. Which *Gaveston* the King suffered now to Lord it over the chief Nobles, to fill the Court with Buffoons and Parasites, and the like pernicious instruments, to waste the wealth of the Kingdom in revellings and riotous courses, to transport riches into foreign parts, bestowing upon him his own Jewels, and Ancestours treasures, and even the Crown it self of his victorious Father. Not sticking to profess, That if it lay in his power, he should succeed him in the Kingdom, being wholly ruled by him. Therefore to repress *Gaveston's* exorbitances, the Lords in Parliament procured, (though with no Good-will of the King) that *Gaveston* Earl of *Cornwall* should be perpetually banished, they gratifying the King with a subsidy of the 20th. part of the Subjects goods. Howbeit shortly after, the King contrary to his Oath made unto the Parliament, called Earl *Gaveston* home out of *Ireland*, himself

John Of- self meeting him at *Flint-Castle*, and then bestowing on  
ford, him to Wife *Jean of Acres, Countess of Gloucester*, his  
*A.B. Cant.* Sisters Daughters; resolving for this leud Man's sake,  
to put Crown, Life and all in hazard. And now  
the insolent Earl strives to out-go himself in his for-  
mer courses, consuming the King's treasures and  
means, so that there was not sufficient left for the  
necessities of the Court; and drawing the King into  
such debaucheries, that the *Queen* conceived her  
self injured thereby, as well as the Nobles. Where-  
upon *Gaveston* is a third time forced out of the Realm,  
into which he again returned the following *Christmas*,  
when the King welcomed him as an Angel from  
Heaven, and forthwith advanced him to be prin-  
cipal Secretary.. But the Lords, as well Ecclesiasti-  
cal as Temporal, resolved by force of Arms utterly  
to extirpate him, chusing for their Leader in this  
design *Thomas Earl of Lancaster*. And at *Dathington* this  
infamous Earl *Gaveston* was surprized by *Guy Earl of*  
*Warwick*, who conveyed him to *Warwick Castle*, and  
in a place called *Blacklow* (afterward *Gaveshead*) cau-  
sed his head to be cut off, as a subverter of the  
Laws, and an open Traitor to the Kingdom.  
Which act caused a lasting hatred in the King to  
his Nobles, though for the present the King's dis-  
pleasure was allayed by the mediation of the Pre-  
lates, and especially of *Gilbert Earl of Gloucester*, who  
stood neutral. But whilst the English King minded  
only his pleasure, undaunted *Bruce* (now the re-  
ceived King of *Scotland*) industriously prosecuted  
his design, for setting his Countrey at liberty from  
the *English*, driving them out of most places of his  
Realm, and making great spoil in *Northumberland*.  
Which awakning King *Edward*, he marched with a  
very great Army against him, though many of the  
Nobles refused to attend him in this service, be-  
cause he delayed to ratifie their desired Liberties,  
and provisions for better Government, so often con-  
fessed unto by himself. At *Bannoksbourn* the *English*  
and *Scotch* Armies came in sight each of other, when  
the Enemy left nothing undone that might be for  
their

their advantage, digging before their Battalions  
certain trenches, wherein they stuck sharp Stakes,  
covering them with Hurdles, which miserably af-  
flicted the English Cavalry falling into them at un-  
awares, thereby procuring to the *Scots* the greatest  
Victory that ever they had over the *English*. In this  
fight King *Edward* did gallantly behave himself; nor  
would he fly, till by the importunity of friends he was  
thereunto forced, for his preservation. Now was  
slain the Earl of *Gloucester*, the Lord *Clifford*, with o-  
ther Lords, and about 700 Knights, Esquires, and  
men of Armories; *Humphry de Bohun* was taken Pri-  
soner, and a great booty the *Scots* gained; for the  
*English* in this expedition had adorned themselves as  
for a triumph, with all sorts of riches, gold, silver,  
and the like, in a kind of wanton manner, corre-  
sponding to the Prince they followed. In those  
times, the *Scots* made such-like scoffing Rhimes as  
this on the *English*,

*Long Beards heartless, painted Hoods witless.*  
*Gay Coats graceless, makes England thrifless.*

This Conquest incouraged the *Scots* to make in-  
roads into the *English* Northern Counties where  
they made great spoil, some of the disloyal *English-*  
*men* joyning with them. The King nevertheless  
could not forget his *Gaveston*, whose body with  
great pomp he caused to be transferred from *Ox-*  
*ford* to *Kings-Langley* in *Hartfordshire*, himself in per-  
son honouring the *Exequies*. Then in *Pierce Gaveston's*  
place the King advanced into his favour the two  
*Spencers*, Father and Son, whose intolerable insolenc-  
ies and oppressions seemed to exceed those of *Ga-*  
*veston's*; against whom the Barons did swell with  
such impatience, that not content with the waste of  
their Lands, by threats of civil War they procured  
their Banishment. The *Queen* who hitherto had  
been a Mediatrrix betwixt the King and his Lords,  
having received the denial of one nights lodging at  
the Castle of *Leeds* in *Kent*, which belonged to one

of the Barons, whom she perceived to take too much upon them, now turned her Spleen against them, incensing the King her Husband against them so highly, that King Edward resolved to die in the quarrel, or to bring the factious Lords into a more becoming carriage towards him. The judgment given against the *Spencers*, he procured to be reversed. Some of the Delinquent Lords render'd themselves to the King; others of them were apprehended; amongst whom were the two *Roger Mortimers*, Father and Son, who were committed to the Tower. Howbeit the Earl of *Lancaster* in the North, resolved with what forces he could procure, to fight for his security; against whom the King march'd, and at *Burrowbridge* encountred him; where *Humphrey de Bohun* was slain with a Spear from under the Bridge; and the Earl of *Lancaster*, with other principal men, Barons and Knights, to the number of above ninety, were taken by *Andrew de Herkly* Captain of *Carlise*, afterward created Earl of that place. The Earl of *Lancaster* a few days after was beheaded at *Pontefract*, the Barons and Knights were drawn, hang'd and quarter'd. The Lord *Badlesmere*, who refused to let the Queen lodge at *Leeds*, was executed at *Canterbury*. Never did English earth at one time drink so much bloud of her Nobles, as at this time in so vile a manner shed. One Earl and fourteen Lords suffering death, most of them by the halter. But that this Tragedy of the Lords was exploited by others, and not by the King's free inclinations, appears; for that when some of the Courtiers and Favourites pleaded for the life of one of a mean Family condemned for being engaged in the Rebellion, the King fiercely answered, "A plague upon you for cursed whisperers, malitious back-biters, wicked Counsellours; intreat you so for the life of a most notorious Knave, who would not speak one word for the life of my most near Kinsman, that most noble Knight Earl *Thomas*? By the soul of God, this fellow shall die the death he hath deserved.

In

In A.D. 1322. King Edward march'd with a mighty Host into *Scotland*, from whence for want of Victuals he was forced in a short time after to return, without the honour of any atchievement, the Scots also following him at the heels, and so suddenly assailing him, that he was forced to leave his Treasure and Furniture for pillage to them. But by reason of the Interdict which the Pope had put the Scots under in favour of the *English*, a truce was made betwixt the two Nations for thirteen years. Which being confirmed, Edward took his progress through the Counties of *York* and *Lancaster*, and Marches of *Wales*, from whence the late Seditions had their nourishments; there punishing many severely. Amongst the rest, he caused *Andrew de Herkly* to be degraded, hang'd, drawn and quarter'd, for trayterously taking part with the *Scots*. Whilst these things were acting, young *Roger Mortimer* having corrupted his Keepers, or potion'd them with a sleepy drink, escaped out of the Tower, getting over into *France*. The *Spencers*, Father and Son, one created Earl of *Winchester*, the other of *Glocester*, behaved themselves exceeding lordly, even to the Queen her self, whose maintenance they abridg'd to advance their own wealth. Many Nobles that had been engaged in the Barons quarrel, they put to such excessive rates for purchasing the King's favour again, that utterly impoverish'd them. *Adam Bishop of Hereford*, and *Henry Bishop of Lincoln*, for the same cause they deprived of all their temporalities. But the Queen and discontented Nobles resolve to clear themselves of the *Spencers*; to which end the Queen procured Aids out of *Henalt* and *Germany*, and uniting them with the Barons Forces, march'd against the King, who found but few friends, because of the mortal hatred that the people generally did bear to the *Spencers*. The Queen lying with her Army at *Oxford*, caused the whole University to be called together: When in the presence of the Queen, Prince, *Roger Mortimer*, and other Nobles, the Bishop of *Hereford*

ford preached unto them from that Text, 2 Kings 4. 19. *My head, my head aketh*: Delivering to them the reasons of the Queen's coming with her Army; concluding that an aking and sick Head of a Kingdom was to be taken off, and not to be tampered with by any other Physick. The Londoner's stood high for the Queen and Barons, cutting off the Bishop of Exeter's head, whom the King had left Guardian of London. The Tower they gained into their possession, proclaimed John of Eltham Custos of the City and whole Land, set at liberty all Prisoners. The Queen did the like throughout all the Realm; by her order also all banished men were revoked, whereby no small encrease was brought to the Barons Forces. From Oxford the Queen marched to Bristol, which she besieged and took, and therein Hugh Spencer the elder, whom she caused without any form of trial to be cut up alive, and quarter'd, having been first at the clamours of the common People drawn and hang'd in his proper Armories. The unfortunate King being now forsaken of almost all his English Subjects, after much wandering, intrusted himself with the Welsh (who still loved him) lying hid in the Abby of Neath, till at length, after much search, he was found out, and with him young le Spencer, Robert Baldock, Chancellour, and Simon de Reading, were taken. King Edward was conveyed to Kenelworth-Castle, the Lords to Hereford, where the Queen lay with her Host. Spencer and Simon de Reading were condemned to death by William Trussel, and were both ignominiously hanged. The distressed King being now shut up in Prison, and without hopes of any redemption, after he had been much solicited, at last yielded to resign the Crown to his Son Edward; which being granted by the King, the Lords forthwith proceed to the short ceremonies of his Resignation, chiefly consisting in the surrender of his Crown and Ensigns of Majesty to the use of his Son Prince Edward; Sir William Trussel thereupon in the behalf of the whole Realm, renounced all homage and allegiance to the Lord Edward of Caernarvon late King, in

in these words; "I William Trussel, in the name of all men of the Land of England, and of all the Parliament Procuratour, resign to thee Edward the homage that was made to thee sometime; and from this time forward I defy thee, and deprive thee of all Power-royal; and I shall never be tenant on thee after this time, A.D. 1327.

His Wife was Isabel, Daughter to Philip the Fair, King of France, and Sister to Lewis Hutin, Philip the Young, and Charles the Fair, all Kings of France. His Issue was Edward of Windsor, so surnamed, because born at Windsor; and John of Eltham, born at Eltham in Kent; Joan married to David Bruce, Prince of Scotland; Eleanor married to Reynold Earl of Gelder.

His Issue were, Edward, John of Eltham, Joan and Eleanor.

In the fourth year of this King's Reign, a Baker named John of Stratford, for making bread lesser than the assize, was with a fool's-hood, and loaves of bread about his neck, drawn on a Hurdle through the Streets of London.

So terrible a famine was in England, that upon St. Laurence Eve, there was scarce bread to be got for sustentation of the King's Household, so great a mortality likewise accompanying this dearth, that the living were scarce sufficient to bury the dead. In the time of scarcity the King set forth an Order, That Wheat should be sold in the Market at eleven Shillings the Quarter, a fat Ox stalled or corn-fed at 24 Shillings; a fat Hog of two years old at three Shillings four pence; a fat Hen for a Penny; and twenty-four Eggs for a Penny: But Victuals thereby became so scarce in the Markets, that this Order was revoked, and the People left to sell as they could.

Merton College in Oxford, brought forth in this King's, and his Son Edward's Reign those four Lights of Learning; namely John Duns, called Scotus the Subtile, who in a fit of the Apoplexy, 'tis said,

## EDWARD II.

said, was buried alive; Bradwardine the Profound; Ogham the Invincible, and Burlie the Perspicuous. And as some say, Baconsthorp the Resolute, was of the same College.

Now was the Knights-Templars Order universally extinguished.

## EDWARD

## EDWARD III.

EDWARD the third was crowned King upon *Candemas-day*, being the eighth day after that his Father had made a resignation of the Crown to him. And now because sundry great persons, with the whole order of Friars Preachers took pity on the old King's captivity; Mortimer therefore hastened to dispatch him out of the way, in order to which he procured an express from the young King (then about 16 years of age) to remove him from *Kenelworth Castle*, delivering him into the hands of those ignominious Knights *Thomas de Gurney Seniour*, and *John Mattrevers*, who conveying him from *Kenelworth* to *Barkly-Castle*, there murthered him, by running a burning spit up into his body, as he was about to disburthen nature, September 22, 1327. His body was buried at *Glocester*. To animate the bloudy Regicides to the commitment of the horrid fact, 'tis said, this ambiguous phrase was invented by *Adam de Torleton* Bishop of *Hereford*, and sent to them by *Mortimer*, *Edwardum occidere nolite timere bonum est*. *Gourney* or *Corney* and his Villanous companions, when they would needs shave the King on his way to *Barkly*, lest he should be known and rescued, inforced him to sit down on a Mole-hill; and the rascal Barber insulting, told him, That cold water out of the next ditch should serve for his trimming at that time; To whom the sorrowfull King answered, Whether you will or no, there shall be warm water, and therewith shed tears plentifully. But young King Edward at his Father's death was upon the borders of *Scotland*, where having invironed the *Scots* in the Woods of *Wivendale* and *Stanhope*, by the Treason of *Mortimer* they escaped, and he returned inglorious, after an huge waste of Treasure, and great peril of his own person. For had not his loyal

Jan. 25.  
A. D.  
1327.

Chap-

Thomas Chaplain stepped in and received the mortal weapon in Bradward his own body, the King's life had been lost. Shortly din, A.B. after this, peace was concluded with the Scots, upon dishonourable terms to the English, by the procurement of the Mother-Queen, and her minion Mortimer. Joan the King's Sister was married to David Bruce; The Scots in derision calling her Joan Make-peace. King Edward at the Treaty of Peace sealed Charters to the Scottish Nation, the Contents whereof were contrived by his Mother, Roger Mortimer, and Sir James Douglas, without the privity of the English Peers. He also delivered to them that famous evidence called the Ragman-Roll, and likewise quitted them of all his claim to the government of Scotland, without rendering back certain Jewels taken by the English from the Scots, amongst which was one of special Note, called the Black-Cross of Scotland. In the same year, being the year of our Lord, 1327, died Charles the fair King of France, by whose death the Crown of that Kingdom devolved to Edward King of England, in right of his Mother Queen Isabel, who was Daughter to Philip the Fair, and Sister to Lewis Hutin, Philip the Long, and Charles the Fair, all Kings of France successively, and all three dying without Issue, the whole right now seeming to be in Isabel the onely Child of the said Philip that had any Issue. But the French pretending a Fundamen-Law, or Entail, called the Salique Law, by which no Woman was inheritable to France, sought to debar King Edward his right, receiving to the Crown Philip of Valois, whose Father was younger Brother to Philip the Fair, advancing the Brother's Son, before the Daughters Son, not following the propinquity or descent of blood, but meliority of the Sex. Against the Stream of the Queen, and her Lord Mortimer's absolute sway, some great persons now stood, amongst whom was the King's Uncle Edmund Earl of Kent, whose death the Queen and Mortimer shortly procured. Nor was Mortimer's fall now far off, for the King beginning to perceive his own peril in the others potency, upon good advice therefore surprised

zed Mortimer with the Queen-Mother in Nottingham-Castle, and by a Parliament held at Nottingham, Queen Bradward-Isabel's Dowry, was taken from her, and onely a din, A.B. Pension of a thousand pound per Annum allowed her. Thomas Mortimer was condemned in open Parliament at Westminister, for causing the young King to make a dishonourable peace with the Scots, from whom he received bribes; For procuring the death of St. Edward of Caernarvon the late King: For overfamiliarity with Isabel the Queen-Mother; for polling and robbing the King and Commons of their Treasure. He was ignominiously drawn to Tiburn, then called the Elmes, where he was executed on the common Gallows, there hanging two days and nights, 1330. With him there died for expiation of the late King's death, Sir Simon de Bedford, and John Deverell Esquire. About this time befell great disturbances and divisions in Scotland, occasioned by young Bruce and Baliol, who both pretended right to that Crown, which opportunity King Edward took hold on, conceiving himself not obliged to stand to that contract made in his minority by the predominancy of his Mother and Mortimer, the Scots also detaining his Town and Castle of Berwick from him. Wherefore he raises an Army, and with Edward Baliol marcheth to Berwick, which having besieged, David Bruce sent a puissant Host to the relief thereof, and at Halydon-Hill the English and Scotch Armies joined battel, where the Scots were vanquished with a lamentable slaughter of them. There died Archibald Douglas Earl of Angus, and Governour of Scotland; the Earls of Sutherland, Carrick and Ross; the three Sons of the Lord Walter Steward, and at least fourteen thousand others, with the loss onely of one Knight, and ten other English-men, Hereupon Berwick was surrendred to King Edward, and Baliol was accepted to be King of Scotland, and had faith and allegiance sworn unto him by the Scotch Nobles. Which done, Baliol repaired to King Edward then at Newcastle upon Tine, where he submitted to Edward the Third, as his Father John Baliol had done to Edward the first. After which the King of England affisted

Simon  
Islip,  
A.B. Can.

assisted this *Edward Balliol* as his homager, going himself in person divers times for suppressing the *Brucean* party, which he kept under, till such time that he was engaged against the *French* for the obtaining of that Kingdom, and the recovery of sundry Towns and places in *Gascoigne*, injuriously withheld from him by the *French King*. To remedy which wrongs the King of *England* had addressed his Ambassadors, but in vain; therefore that the World might take notice of his just proceedings, he, in a large Letter directed to the College of Cardinals, justifies his design upon *France* to be equal and honest. First, because himself of any Male living was the nearest in bloud to the late King *Charles* his Uncle. Secondly, because the *French* had refused to put the Cause to civil trial. Thirdly, for that the process of the twelve Peers in giving the Crown from him when he was under age, was by all Laws void, and frustrate. Fourthly, for that *Philip of Valois* had invaded *Aquitain* which belonged to the Crown of *England*, and detained such places as he had wrongfully gained therein. Fifthly, for that the said *Philip* had aided the *Scots* in their rising against him. *Edward* having done this, he next makes a confederation with the *High and Low Dutch*, and other Foreigners, then prepared a brave Army, his *English* Subjects contributing liberally for the carrying on of the War. And to make his Coffers the fuller, he made bold with the *Lombards*, and the moveable goods of such Priories in *England*, as were Cells to Monasteries in *France*. Thus provided of men and monies King *Edward* sailed with his Forces to *Antwerp*, and by the importunity of the *Flemings*, he first assumed the Title, and Armories of the Realm of *France*, quartering the *Flower de Lis* with the Lions. And entring *France*, he burnt and spoiled the North-parts thereof up as far as *Turain*, then returning to *Antwerp*, he there kept his *Christmas* with his Queen *Philip*, from whence about *Candlemas* he set sail for *England*, where in a Parliament holden at *Westminster* he obtained liberal aids for supportation of his designed Conquest. In lieu

lieu of which, he granted a general large pardon of trespasses and other dues to him, and confirmed *Magna Charta*, and *Charta de Foresta* with some others. Then upon June 23. he shipped from *Harmich* to *Sluce* in *Flanders*, near which place the *French* lay in wait with a Navy of 400 Ships with intent to intercept him; but *Edward* having the advantage of Wind and Sun, furiously set upon the *French* Ships, putting the *Monsieurs* so hard to it, that a great number of them chose to cast themselves into the Sea, rather than to become Prisoners. Thirty thousand of them are confessed to have been slain and drowned, and more than half of their Ships were either sunk or taken. The loss was so very great on the *French* side, that lest the news thereof might too much afflict the King of *France*, his Jester disclosed it to him, by often-times repeating this saying in his hearing. Cowardly *English-men*, Dastardly *English-men*, Faint-hearted *English-men*. Why? said the King at length: Because, said the Jester, They durst not leap out of their Ships into the Seas, as our brave *French-men* did. From which saying the King took a hint of the overthrow. After which famous Sea-victory obtained by the *English*, puissant King *Edward* with his Host consisting of near an hundred thousand men, set down before *Tourney*, from whence he sent to the *French King*, whom he saluted onely by the name of *Philip of Valois*, challenging him to fight with him hand to hand in single Combat; or if that pleased not, then each to bring an hundred men into the Field, and try the event with so small an hazard; or otherwise within ten days to join full battel with all their forces near *Tourney*. To which *Philip* made no direct answer, alledging that the Letters were not sent to him, the King of *France*, but barely to *Philip of Valois*. Nevertheless he brought his Army within sight of the *English* Host, but by the mediation of Queen *Philip's* Mother, and two Cardinals, a Truce was concluded between the two Kings till the *Midsummer* next following. The main reason inducing King *Edward* to yield here-

hereunto was the want of supplies of money, through the fault of his Officers in *England*, whom he severely punished at his return. And now to weaken great *Edward's* strengths, the Pope put *Flanders* under Interdict, as having disloyally left their own Earl, and chief Lord, *Philip King of France*. And *Louis* the Emperour breaking league with the King of *England*, took part with *France*; which when King *Edward* understood, he angrily said, I will fight with them both. And not long after he was upon the Sea with a very great Fleet, none knowing whether he would steer his Course; but in *Normandy* he landed, where he took the Populous and Rich City of *Caen*, and with his dreadfull Host, burning and spoiling round about, marched up almost as far as the Walls of *Paris*. Where with his Army, in an Enemies Countrey between two Rivers *Sein* and *Some*, (the Bridges being broke down by the French) *Edward* designed at a low water, to have passed over a Ford between *Albeville* and the Sea, whom to intercept, the French King had sent thither before him *Godner du Foy*, with a thousand Horse, and six thousand Foot.

Howbeit undaunted *Edward* entred himself into the Ford, crying, He that loves me, let him follow me, as one resolved to pass over, or there to die, the first of which he did; for his Souldiers following him, won the passage, putting *du Foy* to flight. And now King *Edward* being come near to *Cressie* in *Ponthieu*, lying between the Rivers of *Some* and *Antby*, he there most vigilantly provided for his defence against King *Philip*, who was advancing towards him with an hundred thousand men and upward. When the two Armies were within sight each of other, the King of *England* after he had called upon God, disposed his Host into three Battels. To his Son *Edward* the Black-prince he gave the order of the Van; the second Battel the Earls of *Northampton* and *Arundel* commanded; the third himself. And as if he meant to barricado his Army from flying, he caused his Carriages to be placed in the rere thereof, and Trees to be plashed

and

and felled, to stop up the way behind his Host: Simon commanding withall, that all should forsake their Langham Horses, and leave them amongst the Carriages. On A.B. Can. the Enemies part, the King of *Bohemia* and Earl of *Alanson* had charge of the Vantguard, King *Philip* was in the main Battel, and the Earl of *Savoy* commanded the Rere. The sign of battel being given by King *Philip*, a bloody fight ensued, wherein the Black-prince was very hard beset, therefore his Father was sent for to his rescue; who upon the hillock of a Windmill stood to behold the Fight, being in readiness to enter thereto, when just occasion should invite him. But at that time he refused to go, returning the Messengers with this answer, "Let them send no more to me for any adventure that may befall, while my Son is alive; but let him either vanquish or die, because the honour of this brave day shall be his, if God suffer him to survive. Which he did, and beat the French out of the field. Thereupon King *Edward* with his untouched Battel advanced towards his Victorious Son, and most affectionately embracing and kissing him, said, "Fair Son, God send you perseverance to such prosperous beginnings; you have nobly acquitted your self, and are well worthy to have the governance of a Kingdom intrusted unto you for your valour. In the field were found the dead bodies of eleven great Princes; and of Barons, Knights, and men of Arms, above fifteen hundred. There was slain the King of *Bohemia*, King of *Majorca*, Earl of *Alanson*, Duke of *Lorrain*, Duke of *Bourbon*, Earl of *Flanders*, Earl of *Savoy*, the Dolphin of *Viennois*, Earl of *Sancerre* and *Harcourt*, Earls of *Aumarl*, *Nevers*, &c. six Earls of *Almain*, besides others of great account, with the Grand Prior of *France*, and Arch-bishop of *Roan*. Of the Commons there fell about thirty thousand. Of the English side, not one man of note or honour was slain.

A.D. 1346. From the Forest of *Cressie*, King *Edward* marched to *Calais*, and besieged it. In the time of which siege, the Governour thereof, for the sparing

ring of food, thrust forth of the Town above fifteen hundred of the poor and impotent people, whom this Christian King Edward turned not back, but suffered them freely to pass through his Camp, relieving them gratis with fresh Victuals, and giving two pence apiece sterl<sup>ing</sup> to each of them. But whilst the King was busied abroad in France, the Scots (in favour of the French) invaded England, advancing as far as Durham, where the English encountering them, overcame them, took David their King Prisoner at Nevil's Crois by Durham. There lay dead in the field the Earl of Murray and Strathern, the Constable, Marshal, the Chamberlain, and Chancellour of Scotland, with many other Nobles. Prisoners taken - besides the King, were the Earls of Douglas, Fife, Southerland, Wigton, and Menteith. In this Battel on the English side were many spiritual persons, who for the defence of their Countrey, made use of carnal Weapons. And as King Edward's friends were successfull in England, so were they also in Foreign parts: for in Britain Sir Thomas Dagworth overthrew the Lord Charles of Blois, though he had much the odds of him as to number of men. In Gascoign and those parts, Henry Earl of Derby and Lancaster worsted the Duke of Normandy, took sundry places of great importance; amongst the rest, that considerable Town of Brigerac, where he permitted every Souldier to seize any House, and convert all therein to his own profit. Whereupon it happened, that a certain Souldier called Reth, having broke into a Houle where the Moneyers had for safety stowed the Money of that Countrey in great long sacks, he acquainted the Earl therewith, supposing that the Earl intended not so great a treasure for a private share; but the Earl told him, That accordingly as he had at first proclaimed, let the treasure be worth what it would, yet was it all his own. And now after almost a years siege, Callis was delivered to King Edward's mercy. In Little Britain the King's Warden thereof, Sir Walter de Bendy vanquished the Marshal of France in fight, slew 13 Lords, 140 Knights, 100 Esquires, and took Prisoners

Prisoners nine Lords, besides many Knights and Esquires. At length, after much spoil made upon the Witlesy, French, a peace was concluded on betwixt the two Kings, though it continued not long e'er the French broke the agreement. In revenge whereof Edward presently entred France with an Army, and spoiled it where he came; and after his return into England again, when he heard that John the new King of France had given to Charles the Dauphin the Dutchy of Aquitain, King Edward bestowed the same upon the Black-Prince, commanding him to defend that right with the sword. The Prince thereupon furnished with a gallant Army, set sail towards France, where he took many Towns and Prisoners, advanced into the bosome of France up to the very Gates of Burges in Berry; from whence wheeling about to return to his chief City Burdeaux, John King of France encountered him with a great Army, having the odds of six to one; notwithstanding which, the Victorious Prince of Wales discomfited the French, took Prisoners King John and Philip his youngest Son, the Arch-bishop of Sens, and many great Lords, and about two thousand Knights, Esquires and Gentlemen bearing Armories. And flew in fight about fifty two Lords, and seventeen hundred Knights, Esquires and Gentlemen, with Sir Reginald Camian, who that day bore the Or-flamb, or French Ensign; and of the common Souldiers about six thousand. To James Lord Audley, who in this fight received many wounds, the Prince gave 500 Marks Land in Fee-simplie, which said Land the Lord Audley bestowed on his four Esquires that had continued with him in all the brunt and fury of danger. King Edward the Father, whilst his Son was thus prosperously busied in France, proceeded in hostile fort against the Scots, and brought King Baliol at Roxbrough to make a surrender of his Crown to him. Prince Edward after his late Victory marched with joy and triumph to Burdeaux, where having refreshed his wearied Souldiers, he took his leave of France, though not of the King thereof; for him he brought with him a Captive to London, whither the Prince was

William was welcomed with exquisite honour by Henry Picard, Witlesy, then Lord Mayor. Which said Picard afterwards at one time feasted at his own charge the King of England, France, Scotland and Cyprus. King Edward ordered that eight days should be spent in giving God the glory for the Victory; and not long after, with a Fleet of one thousand one hundred sail, he passed over from Sandwich to a fresh invasion; and being come before the Walls of Paris, he honoured four hundred Esquires and Gentlemen with Knighthood. Ample Conditions were offered by the French unto the King of England, to which he would not at present listen; yet at length was persuaded to an accord on these Conditions: That Himself and Son Edward should for ever release unto King John and his Heirs the right and claim which they had unto the Crown of France, Dutchy of Normandy, &c. That King John and his Son should for them and their Heirs release unto King Edward and his Heirs the whole Countrey of Aquitain, Santoin, &c. so the County of Pontbieu, &c. the proper Inheritance of Queen Isabel, King Edward's Mother. That King John should pay for his ransome the sum of Thirty hundred thousand Schutes of Gold, every two of which should be six shillings eight pence sterlinc; with some other conditions. All which were ratified with Hands, Seals and Oaths at Calis, though by the falsehood of the French King this amity continued not many years; for King John by underhand-dealing sought to alienate the hearts of King Edward's foreign Subjects from him, and the County of Pontbieu he surprized before King Edward heard thereof. Wherefore the King sent over John Duke of Lancaster, and Humphry de Bohun Earl of Hartford, to invade France, who pierced up as far as Roan, and after them the King sent that renowned Captain Sir Robert Knolls, who went on very prosperously, till by the instigation of Sir John Mensterworth, and some others (who thought themselves better than Sir Robert) a division was made in the Army, whereby the English fortunes were hindred; for the which Mensterworth paid the loss of his head.

About

About the same time also some great Officers of the King's, as John Duke of Lancaster, the Lord Latimer, and Sir John Sterrie were complained of for fraudulency to the State, and at the request of the Parliament, called *The good*, were displaced. But that which caused the greatest grief to English-men, was the los of their Martial Prince Edward, who left this life upon Trinity Sunday, 1376. about his age 46. and was buried at Canterbury. Nor did his Martial Father long survive him, for in A.D. 1377. he died at Shene in Surrey, and was buried at Westminster. His Wife was Philip the Daughter of William Earl of Henault and Holland; her Mother was Sister to Philip of Valois King of France. His Issue were Edward the Black Prince, so called for his dreadfull valorous Acts, William of Hatfield, Lionel Duke of Clarence, John of Gaunt Duke of Lancaster, Edward Earl of Cambridge, and Duke of York, William of Windsor, Thomas of Woodstock Duke of Gloucester; the Earldoms also of Essex and Northampton, and the Constableship of England, came to him by right of his Wife Eleanor, the sole Heir of Humphrey de Bohun Earl of Essex, &c. Isabel was married to Ingelram of Guisnes, Earl of Soysons, and Arch-Duke of Austria; Joan was espoused by Proxie, with Alphonse the Eleventh King of Castile and Leon, but died before the Espousals were solemnized: Blanch died young; Mary was married to John Montford Duke of Britain; Margaret was married to John de Hastings, Earl of Pembroke. He built Queenborough in Kent, in honour of Queen Philip his Wife. He erected a building at Windsor Castle, whose circumference was six hundred foot, where Knights and men of War were to have their entertainment of Diet at his charge; and begun a magnificent Church dedicated to the Virgin Mary, which King Henry the eighth, and Sir Reginald Bray finished. He is also said to be the Founder of the most noble Order of the Garter; so intituled, perhaps from the Garter he took up of the Countess of Salisbury's, which slipped off in a dance: perhaps for that in a Battel wherein he was victorious, Garter was the Word or Signal. But some will have this King

M 4

Simon to be onely the Reviver of this Order, and Richard Sudbury, the first to be the Institutor of it. King Edward A.B.Cant. confirmed *Magna Charta* about twelve times. He restrained the Pope from conferring English Benefices on Strangers. He invited Cloath-workers to repair hither out of Foreign parts, to whom he granted sundry privileges. The staple of Wools which had been in Flanders he revoked, establishing the same in *Westminster, Canterbury, Chichester, Bristol, Lincoln and Hull.*

The famous custome of the Kings of England washing, feeding and cloathing of as many poor people upon *Maundy Thursday* as they are years old, is referred to the celebration which this King made of his fifth year. His Concubine *Alice Pierce* was so insolent, that she would go into the Courts of Justice, where sitting by the Judges and Doctors, she would proudly persuade or dissuade for her most advantage, therefore was complained of in Parliament, and removed from the person of the King. At a Parliament held the thirty-seventh of his Reign, the wearing of Gold and Silver, Silks and rich Furs were forbidden to be worn by any but eminent Persons; also the Labourer and Husband-man was limited to the eating of such certain Meats. An Act was likewise made, that no common Whore should wear any Hood, except striped with divers colours, nor Furs, but Garments with the wrong side outward. At *Stamford in Lincolnshire* an University was instituted, but of short continuance.

The first Duke of *Cornwall*, was *Edward the Black Prince*, whom his Father created in great Estate Duke thereof, by a Wreath on his head, a Ring on his finger, and a Silver Verge. And the same Title of Duke of *Cornwall* ('tis said) is reputed unto the King's Eldest Son the very day of his Nativity, having right to the Royalties in the Stannaries wrecks at Sea, Customs, &c.

A Blazing-star appeared, which continued thirty days. *Southampton* was burnt by the French, A.D. 1348. It rained from Midsummer till Christmas. A Plague all over

over Christendom, some say, the World; and so raging in *England*, that scarce the tenth person of all sorts was left alive. In *London* it was such, that in one years space there was buried in the *Cistercian, or Charter-house Church-yard*, above fifty thousand. It began in the year 1348. and continued till the year 1357. and was seconded with murrain of Cattel, and dearth of all things.

Now flourished in the University of *Oxford* that Famous Doctor *John Wickliffe*, whose followers in those Popish-times, were called *Lollards*, from *Lolium*, signifying tares, or hurtfull weeds amongst Corn. He taught against Mass, Transubstantiation, adoration of the Host, of Saints, Images and Reliques, with the rest of the *Roman* trumpery, whose honest opinions were embraced by many Learned men in the English Nation, and by sundry persons of great Honour and Quality, as the Duke of *Lancaster*, &c.

---

RICHARD

## RICHARD II.

Jun. 21.  
A.D.  
1377.

**RICHARD**, the Son of *Edward the Black Prince*, was Crowned King in the eleventh year of his age ; but e'er the Crown was settled on his head, the French braved it on the English coasts, and the Scots set fire on the Tower of Roxburgh ; and through want of care in such who had the charge of State-matters in the young Kings behalf, things were declined to a shamefull change ; and the glorious Achievements of the two late Edwards fell under an eclipse. The North-parts of England were grievously afflicted with the stroke of Pestilence, and their misery augmented by the inroads and outrages of the Scots, who had now by surprize gained Berwick, which upon the ninth day after, the Earl of Northumberland regained by force.

*A.D. 1379.* A Parliament was held at London, wherein for supply of the Kings wants, it was agreed, That the Commons or poorer sort should be spared, and the burthen be wholly laid upon the abler sort. And in the next year following a Parliament was held at Northampton, wherein every one of each sex, above such an age, was charged to pay 12*d.* per poll ; which, with the hatred born to John Duke of Lancaster, was the cause of a great insurrection of the Commons and Bond-men, chiefly of Kent, Essex, Surrey, Suffolk, Norfolk and Cambridgeshire. The principal heads of the said giddy multitude, were *Wat Tyler* and *Jack Straw*. The Rebels of Kent embattel'd themselves upon Black-Heath by Greenwich, from whence they marched to London ; where, the common sort generally siding with them, they became Masters of Misrule. The Priory of St. Johns without Smithfield, they kept burning for about seven days. Savoy Palace belonging to the Duke, with

## RICHARD II.

171

with all the riches therein, they consumed by fire, William in a kind of holy outrage ; for they threw one of Court-  
their fellows into the flames, because he had thrust a ney. *A.B. Can-*  
piece of stolen Plate into his bosome. They burnt all the Arch-bishops Goods at Lambeth, and defaced all the Writings, Rolls, Records and Monuments of the Chancery, as having a special hatred to the Lawyers. *Simon Tibald* Arch-bishop of Canterbury, and Chancellour of England, a worthy Prelate, *Sir Robert Hales* Lord Prior of St. Johns, and Treasurer of England, they haled out of the Tower, where the King was in person, and beheaded them on Tower-hill with great shoutings and rejoycings. The number of these rebellious Reformers under the leading of *Jack Straw*, and the Idol of Clowns *Wat Tyler*, were about an Hundred thousand ; and at a Sermon made to them by *John Ball*, there was near twice as many. Their proud Petitions the King granted them ( necessity compelling him thereto ) after which, a great multitude of them repaired to their several homes. The remaining Rout the King by his Proclamation invited to meet him in Smithfield, where he would satisfie their desires in all respects to the full. But when they were met in the place appointed, *Wat Tyler* there in the presence of the King offering to kill *Sir John Newton* ( for not giving him some undue respect ) *William Walworth* Lord Mayor thereupon set upon the Arch-Traitor with a drawn weapon, and slew him : Which when the Rebels perceived, they prepared to take extreme revenge ; but the King instantly spurring forth his Horse, bade them follow him, and he would be their Captain. And whilst they thronged after him into the fields, brave *Walworth* ( the while ) hasted into the City, raised a thousand Citizens in armour, and brought them, with *Wat Tyler's* head born before him upon a spear, to the King : Which the rude multitude seeing, some of them fled, and others on their knees begged mercy of the King. Worthy *Walworth* the King knighted and bestowed on him an hundred pound lands by the year in fee-simple ; and, as some write,

write, the Dagger was now added to the City-Arms, in remembrance of the great good service done by the Lord Mayor. *Jack Straw* at the time of his execution confessed, that these Rebels had designed to murther the King and chief of the Realm, and to have set up petty Kings of their own chusing in every shire. The number of Rebels executed in all places, was about Fifteen hundred. These were called the *Hurling-times*. And now the Nation being settled in quiet, King Richard married the Lady *Ann* Daughter unto the Emperour *Charles the Fourth*. *John Duke of Lancaster* was sent into *France*, where he concluded a Truce with that Nation for six months. But these Sun-shine days lasted not long : For beside the annoyances done to *England* by the *Scots* at several times, and the *French* threatening an Invasion, the worst mischief fell at home through the mean of discontented and ambitious spirits, who kindled a Civil War. The Laity took offence against the Clergy, because the Arch-bishop had in Parliament refused to yield to an unjust proportion of the Tax granted the King, to be laid upon the Clergy. And so far were the Commons and some Lay-Peers offended therewith, that they petitioned the King to take away the Temporalities from Ecclesiastical persons ; which he denied, saying, That he would maintain the *English* Church in the quality of the same state, or better, in which himself had known it to be when he came to the Crown. The displacing of Sir *Richard Scrope Chancellour*, was displeasing to most men. The reason of his displacing was, because he refused to pass such large gifts under the Great Seal, as the King in his youthfull humour had granted to some Courtiers. Also the Kings over-freeness to the Queens Countrey-men the *Bahemians*, discontented many. The ancient Nobles they envied that *Robert de Vere Earl of Oxford*, was created Marquess of *Dublin*, and Duke of *Ireland* ; and *Michael de la Pool* a Merchants Son, Earl of *Suffolk* ; and that the King had them in too great favour. These were held for great grievances; nor

would

would the Parliament grant the King any aids against his foreign foes, unless these Lords were removed and degraded. This the King could not well digest, but consulted the Learned in the Law concerning certain Articles of Treason, within the compass of which He might take the popular Lords. And at *Nottingham* *Robert Trifilian* Chief Justiciar, *Robert Belknap* Chief Justice of the Common Pleas, *John Holt*, *Roger Fulthorpe*, and *William Burgh*, Justiciars; *John Lockton* the Kings Serjeant at Law : All subscribed to certain Articles of Treason made against the Lords, which afterwards cost them dear. Judge *Belknap* foresaw the danger, therefore unwillingly consented, saying, *There wants but an Hurdle, Horse and Halter, to carry me where I might suffer the death deserved.* For if I had not done this ( quoth he ) I should have dyed for it, and because I have done it, I deserve death for betraying the Lords.

And now the King and Lords prepare themselves for the field ; the Lords march up to *London* with an Army of about Forty thousand men ; against whose coming, the King not being able to match their power, shuts himself up in the Tower, whither the factious Lords, *Glocestre*, *Derby*, *Arundel*, *Warwick* and *Mashal*, send him word, That if he come not quickly to *Westminster* according to appointment, they would chuse them another King, who both would and should obey the Counsel of the Peers. Hereupon the King, though with no Good-will, attends their Lordships pleasure at *Westminster*, where he yielded to remove from about his person *Alexander Neville* Arch-bishop of *York*, the Bishops of *Durham* and *Chichester*, the Lords *Zouch* and *Beaumont*, with divers others ; and amongst them certain Ladies. Others of his friends were made Prisoners. And at the Parliament which was shortly after, The Judges were arrested as they sat in Judgment, and most of them sent to the Tower. *Trifilian* that had fled, being apprehended, and brought to the Parliament in the forenoon, had sentence to be drawn to *Tyburn* in the afternoon, and there to have his throat cut, which

which was done accordingly. Divers other Knights were also sacrificed to their revenge. The Duke of Ireland and others had their Estates confiscated to the King's use by Act of Parliament. This while the Scots invaded the North of England under the conduct of Sir William Douglas, whom Henry Hot-spur fighting with hand to hand, slew; but the Earl of Dunbar coming with an excessive number of Scots, took Hot-spur and his Brother prisoners.

A.D. 1396. Peace was concluded with the French, the Scots and Spaniards being included therein. And in September, 1397. a Parliament called *The Great*, (for the extraordinary number of Peers and their retinues which came thereunto) was held at London, wherein the sanctuary of former Laws, and all particular Charters of pardon were taken away from Thomas Duke of Gloucester, the Earl of Arundel, and others for their treasonable practices; and all the Justiciars who stood for the King were cleared from dis-honour, and such Articles as they had subscribed were publickly ratified, and the offenders against them pronounced Traytors. Richard Earl of Arundel was beheaded on Tower-hill, where at his death he utterly denied that he was a Traytour in word or deed. The Earl of Warwick confessing himself a Traytour in open Court, was onely banished to the Isle of Man.

The Duke of Gloucester (whom, as the peoples darling, it seemed not safe to bring to a publick Trial) was secretly smothered with pillows and feather-beds at Celle. The King at this Parliament created himself Prince of Chester, and to his Escutcheon royal added the Armories of Edward the Confessour; his Cousin Henry Earl of Derby he made Duke of Hereford, and advanced the Titles of many other Nobles. Not long after which, Henry Duke of Hereford accused Thomas Mowbray, Duke of Norfolk, for speaking certain words to the King's dishonour, which Mowbray constantly denying, it should have come to a combat within Lists, but the King ended the controverie otherwise, by banishing Norfolk for ever, and Hereford first

first for ten years, then for six onely. In the year following the Duke of Lancaster died, when the King unjustly seized upon the goods of that mighty Prince his Uncle, and determined to banish for ever his Son the Duke of Hereford, now Duke of Lancaster by his Father's death. But whilst King Richard was in Ireland to quell a disturbance there, Henry Duke of Lancaster and Hereford, lands in England with what Forces he had, pretending nothing but the recovery of his Inheritance. To him there repaired Henry Piercy the Earl of Northumberland, his son Hot-spur and Earl of Westmoreland, with many others: Multitudes offering their service to him, as pitying his calamity, and exasperated against the King, because to furnish his hys voyage he had extorted moneys on all hands, and had taken up carriages, victuals, and other necessaries without any recompence. The Duke of Lancaster with an Army of about sixty thousand marched to Bristol, besieged the Castle and took it, and therein two Knights of the King's Council, Bushy and Green, whose heads were cut off at the request of the Rabble.

The Duke of York, whom King Richard had left behind him to govern England, could gain but small assistance against Lancaster, nor could the King at his return into England find many friends, therefore he betook himself to a party with his enemies; the sum of his demands being, That if himself and eight more whom he should name, might have honourable allowance, with the assurance of a private quiet life, he would resign the Crown. This was promised him: whereupon he put himself into the Duke of Lancaster's hands, who conducted him out of the West to London, where he was lodged in the Tower. And now a Parliament is summoned in the King's name to be held at Westminster, in which Parliament King Richard was charged with the breach of his Coronation-oath in thirty two Articles: His abuse of the publick Treasure, waste of the Crown-land, loss of Honour abroad; and that at home he was guilty of Falshood, Injustice, Treason against the rights of the Crown, and

Tho. A- and what not, that ambition and envy could invent  
rundell, against him. The result whereof was, he resigned  
A.S.Cant. his Crown to the Duke of Lancaster, which resignation  
the whole body of the Parliament did particularly  
accept, saving the most loyal Bishop of Carlisle, A.D.  
1399. September 29. His first Wife was Ann, Daughter  
to the Emperour Charles the IV. His second Wife  
Isabel, was Daughter to Charles the VI. King of  
France.

In the very beginning of this King's reign, one John Philpot a private Citizen of London, at his own charge manned out a Fleet to the Sea, for the guarding of both Land and Sea from the enemy; and was so successfull, that within a short space he took fifteen Ships of the Spaniards fraught with rich Merchandise.

By a Tempest were cast away at Sea four Knights,  
and above a thousand English-men in their passage to  
Little-Britain.

In the Year 1392. the Londoners were so unkind to  
the King, that they refused to supply him with the  
loan but of a thousand pound, and because a certain  
Lombard offered to lend the same, they abused and al-  
most killed him, for which the King took away their  
Charter.

The Year of Christ, 1394. was famous or notable  
for the deaths of many great Ladies, and amongst  
the rest of Queen Ann the King's first Wife, whom;  
it is said, he loved to a kind of madness. When she  
died at Shene in Surrey, he both cursed the place, and  
also out of madness overthrew the whole House. In  
the same year that the King was deposed, the Bay  
or Laurel-trees withered all over England, and after-  
wards reflorescened; and on the first of January, near  
Bedford-Town the River where it was deepest, did on  
the sudden stand still, and so divided it self, that the  
bottom remained dry for about three miles. Now  
flourished Sir John Hawkwood, whose Chivalry had  
made him renowned through the Christian World.  
Sir Geffry Chaucer, Poet-Laureat, now also lived.

Queen

Queen Ann, wife to King Richard the Second,  
first taught English-women to ride on Side-saddles,  
whenas before that time they rid astride. She  
also brought in High-head-attire piked with horns,  
and long-trained Gowns for Women.

N

Line

Red Rose Line of *LANCASTER.*

*H E N R Y IV.*

Sept. 29. A. D. 1399. **H**ENRY of *Bullingbrooke*, the Son of John Duke of *Lancaster*, the fourth Son of King *Edward the third*, was crowned at *Westminster* by Thomas Arundel Arch-bishop of *Canterbury*. His Cousin the late King *Richard* seem'd so little concern'd for the loss of his Crown, that when it was told him of *Bullingbrooke's* being accepted by Parliament for King in his stead, he onely used these words, I look not after such things, but my hope is, that after all this, my Cousin will be my good Lord and friend. But now *Henry* seated in *Richard's* Throne, used all the best means to retain the hearts of the people that sided with him, and to weaken the opposite party, and withall sent Ambassadors to foreign Princes to justifie his unjust proceedings. But the King of *France* and people of *Aquitain*, would not allow of his pretences, and the Citizens of *Burdeaux*, openly said, That since the World began there was never a more cruel, unreasonable, nor wicked fact done. That the good Prince was betrayed by faithless men, and that all Law was violated. In *England* were many that inclined and contrived to set King *Richard* again upon his rightfull Throne, (though to seek a captive King's deliverance doth commonly hasten his death.) The principal Conspirators were John Holland Earl of *Huntingdon*, Thomas Holland Earl of *Kent*, the Dukes of *Surrey*, *Excester* and *Aumart*, John Montacute Earl of *Salisbury*, Thomas Spencer Earl of *Glocester*, and the Bishop of *Carlile*. Their plot was to kill *Henry Bulingbrooke*, and his Son *Henry*; but before the time of intended execution was come, the whole conjuration was discovered.

*H E N R Y IV.*

covered. Many attempts the conspirators made to effect the re-establishing of *Richard*, and amongst the rest, they procured one *Maudlen* King *Richard's* Chaplain to personate his Lord, but this with all the rest of their projects failed. The Towns-men of *Cyrencestier* assailed and took some of the discontented Lords, and then cut off their heads, because some of their followers set fire on *Cyrencestier*, thinking that whilst the Towns-men were busied in quenching the fire, they might set their Lords at liberty. The Commons in *Essex* took the Earl of *Huntingdon* and cut off his Head, in revenge of the Duke of *Glocester's* death, which he had had a hand in. The Lord *Spencer* the Commons beheaded at *Bristol*. Some others of them were put to death at *Oxford*, some at *London*, where also *John Maudlen*, the Counterfeit *Richard* (a goodly personage) and one *William Ferby* were hang'd and quartered. The Bishop of *Carlile* was by the King's Clemency saved, after his condemnation. King *Richard* did not long survive his friends, but at *Pontefract Castle* was put out of the way by hunger, cold, and great torments, though the *Scots* have untruly writ, that he escaped out of prison, and led a solitary and virtuous life in *Scotland*, and there died, and was buried at the *Black-Fryars* in *Sterling*. After *Richard's* murther at *Pontefract*, King *Henry* caused his dead Body to be brought up to *London*, where in *St. Paul's*, with his face uncovered, he lay for a time exposed to the view of all men; then was his Body transported to *Langley* in *Hartfordshire*, where it lay buried, till *Henry the Fifth*, in the first year of his Reign, caused the Royal remains of his Body to be translated to *Westminster*. That beautifull Picture of a King sitting crowned in a Chair of State at the upper end of the Choire in *Westminster-Abby*, is said to be of him. And now King *Henry* to divert the thoughts of the people from his Predecessour's Tragedy, prepared a puissant Army, and marched with it into *Scotland*, where he onely did some hurt by wasting the Countrey, and then returned. Shortly after which he advanced against *Owen Glendour* that had raised a Rebel.

lion in *Wales*; but *Glendour* against the King's coming had withdrawn himself, with his surest friends, into the Fastnesses of *Snowdon*; wherefore the King onely made some spoil in the Countrey, and returned. Many were the plots that were still made against the King, but the Contrivers were discovered and put to death, among whom were many Monks. And now *Glendour* having taken the Lord *Mortimer* prisoner, with no small slaughter of his *Herefordshire*-men, the King marched again into *Wales*, where while he stayed he was in great danger to have perished by sudden storms and rains, the like whereof his people had never seen or felt. The common fame went that *Glendour* was a Conjuror, and had raised those hideous Tempests by hellish Arts. In the *North* King *Henry*'s Forces were more fortunate against the *Scots*; for at *Halidon hill* *Henry Hot-spur*, Lord *Piercy*, obtained a great victory, taking prisoners the Earls of *Douglas*, *Fife*, *Angus*, *Murray* and *Orkney*, the Lords *Montgomery*, *Erskin* and *Grave*, with about eighty Knights, besides Esquires and Gentlemen. And besides what *Scots* were slain in battel, there were about five hundred of those which fled from the fight drowned in the River *Tweed*. But that *Henry* might have little joy of his ill-gotten greatness, the *Piercies* they raised a dangerous Rebellion, wherein indeed they pretended a care for the Common-wealth's reformation, though they really intended the advancement of their own private interests; for it was agreed amongst the Conspiratours, that the Kingdom should be shared betwixt *Mortimer* Earl of *March*, *Henry Piercy* Earl of *Northumberland*, and *Owen Glendour*. *South-England* to *Mortimer*, *North-England* to *Piercy*, and *Wales* beyond *Severn* to *Glendour*, and *Archibald Earl of Douglas* was allowed as a sharer to be freed from ransome, and to have *Bamburgh* for his own. Thus agreed, they fortify *Shrewsbury*, whither the King advanceth with his Army, where a terrible battel was fought, and therein *Hot-spur* slain, and his Host vanquished. The Earls of *Douglas*, *Worcester*, Sir *Richard Vernon*, and Baron *Kindleton*, with divers others were taken, though not without great

great danger of the King's life, and the death of many Persons of quality on his side. *Henry Hot-spur*'s body was drawn out of the Grave, beheaded and quartered, and the parts sent to be set up in divers places of the Kingdom. Thomas *Piercy*, Earl of *Worcester*, with *Vernon* and *Kindleton* were beheaded. The Earl of *Northumberland*, who was taken by the way as he was bringing Forces out of the *North* to join with those at *Shrewsbury*, had his life pardoned.

The year following a Parliament was holden at *Coventry*, called the Lack-learning Parliament, either for the unlearnedness of the persons, or for their malice to learned men: For in order to supply the King's wants, a Bill was exhibited against the temporalities of the Clergy, but by the courage of the Arch-bishop of *Canterbury*, and the King's care of the Church, their motion was fruitless.

A. D. 1405. Another Conspiracy was made against King *Henry*, the chief in which Conspiracy were *Thomas Mowbray* Earl Marshal, and *Richard le Scrope* Arch-bishop of *York*, who being taken, were both beheaded. But the Pope excommunicated all such that had a hand in putting the Arch-bishop to death. Another fresh report of King *Richard*'s being alive was again spread abroad, when the Earl of *Northumberland* and Lord *Bardolph* sought to raise an Army in the *North*, but were encountered by the Sheriff of *Yorkshire*, who after a sharp conflict flew the Earl in the field, and mortally wounded the Lord *Bardolph*. The Earl's head was cut off, and after it had been ignominiously carried through *London*, was fixed on the Bridge.

A. D. 1413. The King fell sick, and as some report, in this his last sickness he caused his Crown to be set on a Pillow at his Bed-head, when suddenly the pangs of his Apoplexy seized on him so violently that all supposed him to be dead. At which instant Prince *Henry* coming in, took away the Crown; but his Father recovering out of his fit, quickly missing it, and understanding who had taken it away, caused his Son to be called unto him, of whom he demanded, what he meant to bereave him of that whereunto

## HENRY IV.

unto he had yet no right? The Prince boldly replied, Long may you live, Sovereign Father, to wear it your self; but all men deeming that you was gone to inherit another Crown, this being my right I took it as my own, but now do acknowledge it for none of mine. And therewith set the Crown where he found it. O Son, quoth the Father, with what right I got it, God onely knoweth, who forgive me the sin. But howsoever it was got, said the Son, I mean to keep it, and defend it (when it shall be mine) with my Sword, as you by the Sword have obtained it. The King died at London, and was buried at Canterbury. His first Wife was Mary the Daughter of Humphrey de Bohun, Earl of Essex, Hereford and Northampton, Constable of England. His second was Joan Daughter to Charles the I. King of Navarre. By Mary his first Wife he had Issue Henry, Thomas Duke of Clarence, John Duke of Bedford, sometime Regent of France, Duke also of Anjou and Alanson, &c. Humphrey Duke of Gloucester and Protectour of the Kingdom of England, &c. Blanch Married to Lewis Barbatu, Palatine of the Rhine, Prince Elector. Philip, married to John King of Denmark.

A great Plague befell throughout England, chiefly in London, where within a short space it destroyed Thirty thousand. In the ninth year of his Reign a Snow continued December, January, February, and March. The Winter was so very sharp and long, that almost all small Birds perished through hunger. A little before the Rebellion of the Piercies was a strange Apparition between Bedford and Bickleswade, where sundry Monsters of divers colours in the shapes of armed men were often seen to issue out of the Woods in the Morning, whitch to such as stood far off, seemed to encounter one another in most terrible manner, but when they drew near nothing was to be found. The Devil ('tis said) appeared in the habit of a Minorite at Danbury Church in Essex to the incredible astonishment of the Parishioners, for at the same time there was such a Tempest and Thunder with great Fire-balls of Lightning, that

## HENRY IV.

the Vault of the Church brake, and half the Chancel was carried away.

In the same year 1405, at the Siege against Berwick, was the first time, 'tis said, that a Gun was used in England.

Because the number of *Lolards*, (so called,) increased, an Act was made for the punishing of them by burning.

N 4

HENRY

## H E N R Y V.

Marc. 20. HENRY of Monmouth whilst he was Prince, did  
 A. D. many things very incongruous to the greatness  
 1412. of his birth, for he and his wild companions would  
 way-lay and rob his Fathers and his own Receivers.  
 And when one of his Servants was arraigned at the  
 King's Bench bar for felony, this Prince hearing  
 thereof, posted thither, commanding his Fetterers to  
 be struck off, and he set at liberty; and when the  
 Judge William Gascoine Lord Chief Justice of the King's  
 Bench opposed him therein, commanding him upon  
 his Allegiance to cease from such riot, and keep the  
 King's peace, he in a rage ascended the Bench, and  
 gave the Judge a blow on the Face, who sate still un-  
 daunted, and boldly thus spake unto the Prince;  
 "Sir, I pray remember your self. This seat which  
 "I here possess is not mine but your Fathers, to  
 "whom and to his Laws you owe double obedience.  
 "If his Highness and his Laws be thus violated by  
 "you, who should shew your self obedient to both,  
 "who will obey you, when you are a Sovereign, or  
 "minister execution to the Laws that you shall make?  
 "Wherefore for this default, in your Father's name,  
 "I commit you prisoner to the King's Bench, un-  
 "till his Majesty's pleasure be farther known.  
 With which Words, the Prince abashed stood mute,  
 laid by his weapons, and with obeysance done, went  
 to the Prison.

Whilst the King his Father was crazie, and kept  
 his Chamber, he through the Princes wild extravag-  
 gances, and set on by some Court whisperers, be-  
 gan both to withdraw his affections, and to fear  
 some violence against his own person from the Prince,  
 which when young Henry understood, in a strange dis-  
 guise he repaired to his Father's Court, accompa-  
 nied

## H E N R Y V.

nied with many persons of honour. His Garment Henry  
 was a Gown of blew Satten wrought full of eye-let Chiche-  
 holes, and at every eye-let the needle left hanging ley, A. B.  
 with the Silk it was worked with. About his Arm  
 he wore a Dogs Coller set full of S's of Gold, the  
 Tirets thereof being most fine Gold. Being come  
 to the Court, he charged his followers to advance  
 no farther than the fire in the Hall, whilst himself  
 passed on to his Father's presence, before whose feet  
 he fell, confessing his youthfull faults, and justifying  
 his loyalty to his person; declaring himself to be  
 so far from any disloyal attempt, that if he knew  
 any person of whom his Father stood in any danger,  
 or fear, his hand according to duty, should be the  
 first to free the King of suspicion; yea, saith he, I  
 will most gladly suffer death to ease your perplexed  
 heart; and to that end I have this day prepa-  
 red my self both by confession, and receiving the  
 blessed Sacrament: Wherefore I humbly beseech  
 your Grace to free your suspicion from all fears con-  
 ceived against me with this dagger; the stab where-  
 of I will willingly receive at your hands, and will  
 clearly forgive my death. At which, the King melt-  
 ing into tears, cast down the naked dagger (which  
 the Prince had put into his hand) and raisning his  
 prostrate Son, embraced and kissed him, confessing  
 that his ears had been over-credulous against him,  
 which he promised they should never be for the fu-  
 ture.

But notwithstanding this Prince's youthfull ex-  
 ploits, yet when he had attained the Crown, to be-  
 gin a good Government, he began at home, banish-  
 ing from his Court those unruly youths that had  
 been his consorts, commanding them either to change  
 their manners, or never to approach within ten  
 miles of his person. And chose worthy men for  
 his Council of Estate, advancing his Clergy with  
 Power and dignity. So highly carefull was he for  
 the execution of Justice, that himself would every  
 day after dinner for the space of an hour, receive  
 Petitions of the oppressed, and with great equity  
 would

would redress their wrongs. And so nearly did the death of King *Richard* touch his heart, that he sent to *Rome* to be absolved from that guilt of his Father's A&t. In the first year of his Reign at a Parliament holden at *Leicester* was a Bill exhibited, wherein complaint was made, That the Temporal Lands given to the Religious Houses and Spiritual Persons for Devotion sake, were either superfluous, or disorderly spent; whose Revenues (if better employed) would serve for the defence of the Land and Honour of the King; For the maintenance of fifteen Earls, 1500 Knights, 6200 Esquires, and 100 Almes-houses for the relief of diseased and impotent people, and unto the King's Coffers Twenty thousand pounds per Annum. By the authority of this Parliament, 110 *Priories alien* were suppressed and their possessions given to the King and his successors for ever. But to divert those in Authority from such like proceedings, projects were put into the King's head for recovery of *France* his rightfull possession, *Henry Chicheley* Arch-Bishop of *Canterbury*, suggested that King *Henry* as the true Heir unto his Great-grand-Father *Edward the third*, was the true Heir to the Crown of *France*.

As for the *Salique-Law* alledged against the *English* claim, he affirmed, that that Text touched onely those parts of *Germany* which lay betwixt the Rivers *Elbe* and *Sala*, conquered by *Charles the Great*, who placing the *French* there to inhabit, because of the dishonest lives of those *German women*, made this Law, *In terram Salicam mulieres ne succedant*, which the gloss did falsely expound for the whole Kingdom of *France*, whose practice notwithstanding he shewed to be contrary, by many experiences both in King *Peppin* descended of *Blitbud* Daughter to *Clothair* the first, and by *Hugh Capet* as Heir to the Lady *Lingard* Daughter to *Charlemain*; so King *Lewis* called the Saint; and beside, that this exclusion is contrary to the word of God, which alloweth Women to succeed in their Father's Inheritance, Numb. 27.

King

King *Henry* now sends a summons and demand in the first place of his Dutches of *Normandy*, *Aquitain*, *Guyon* and *Anjou*; to which the *Daulphin* of *France* in derision sent him for a present a Tun of *Paris Tennis-Balls*; but the King returned for answer, That he would shortly send him *London-Balls*, which should shake *Paris-walls*. Whilst the *English* were making provision against the *French*, Sir *Robert Humfreville* gave the *Scots* a considerable defeat, which the *French* understanding, with also the great preparations that *Henry of England* was making against them, they sent over Ambassadors, who at *Winchester* made offer of money and some Territories; also the Princess *Katherine* to be given in marriage to King *Henry*, so that he would conclude a peace; but it was answereed, That without the delivery of the other Domains belonging to the King's Progenitors, no pacification was to be made. And when the Ambassadors had had their answer given them, the King sent *Antilop* his Pursevant at Arms unto *Charles King of France* with Letters of defiance; next made Queen *Joan* his Mother-in-law Regent of the Realm, then drew his Forces to *Southampton*, commanding his followers there to attend him on such a day.

The King of *France* on the other part makes all the preparation he could to defend himself, and to offend the King of *England*. To *Grey* a Privy Councillor, *Scroop* Lord Treasurer, and the Earl of *Cambridge* Son of *Edmond Duke of York*, he sent, 'tis said, a Million of Gold to betray King *Henry* into his hands, or else to murther him; but their Treason being discovered, they received the just reward of Traytors.

On the seventh of *August*, 1414, the King of *England* with 1500 sail took to the Seas, attended with Thirty Thousand Souldiers, besides Gunners, Engineers, Artificers, and Labourers, a great number. And the 15th day of the same Month he cast anchor in the mouth of *Seyn*, about three miles from *Harleyn*; where landing his men, he fell devoutly on his knees, desiring God's assistance to the gaining of

of his Right. Then made Proclamation, That on pain of death, Churches, Church-men, Women and Children, should be spared from violence. And after due encouragment to his followers, he made *Harfleur* the first essay of his Fortunes in *France*, it being a Port conveniently seated upon the mouth of the River *Seyn*, and a safe entrance into his intended Conquest, as well for the landing of men, as to hinder the passage unto *Roan* and *Paris*, both which received Traffick by the same River.

This Town of *Harfleur* was surrendred to King *Henry*, Septemb. 22. Into which when he first entred, he passed along the streets bare-footed untill he came to the Church of *S. Martin*, where with great devotion he gave most humble thanks unto Almighty God for that his first atchieved Enterprize. When the King had continued at *Harfleur* about fourteen days, he marched 2000 Horse, and 13000 Foot, through *Caux* and *Eu*, towards *Callis*; in which march the French used all their endeavours to endamage him: for besides many Skirmishes, they broke down the Bridges where he was to pass, plashed the Woods, entrenched the ways, stuck stakes in the Fords, and in places of advantage laid store of Soldiers to impede his passage; conveyed all victuals out of the Countreys through which he should go, and at *Blanchetague*, where he purposed to have passed over the River *Some*, there the French had fortifid against him; for which cause he marched by *Worms*, with intent to have passed the River at *Port le Remy*; but finding that also guarded, he kept along the River to *Hargest*, the French Army marching on the other side. Therefore he still marched on by the River side, till he came to *Bathen-Court*, where he got over his feeble and wearied Army, proceeding on his march till he came to *Azin*, or *Agin Court*, which was upon Octob. 24. where the French in a field of advantage purposely chosen, had pitched their Banner-Royal, with an infinite Host, exceeding the English six times in numbers, some say ten times. King *Henry* now seeing himself so far engaged

engaged and many of his men sick of the flux, 'tis said he offered the surrender of *Harfleur*, and what else he had won, and to make satisfaction for the harm done in *France*, so as he might have liberty safely to depart from *Callis*: to which the Constable and Marshal of *France* were willing; but the young Princes and Nobles refused all conditions of Peace. And assuring themselves of victory, they before-hand disposed of the English Prisoners, prepared a Chariot for the captive King, divided the prey, commanded the Bells to be rung in the adjacent Cities and Towns, and thanks to be given to God that had delivered the Enemy into such a place of advantage: sent to King *Henry* to know what ransome he would give: sent for King *Charles* and the *Daulphin* to come in their persons to battel, that so they might have the honour of the Victory. And so bold were the French upon their numbers and great strength, that they spent the night before the battel in Feasts, triumphs and sports; but the English more wisely in preparing themselves for the fight. When morning was come, the French took the field, pressing who should be foremost to this easie, (as they thought) Conquest. Against whom (their greatest strength consisting in Horse) King *Henry* commanded Two hundred strong Bowmen to lodge in a low Meadow, where a deep ditch full of water, might help to secure them from the Horse, and the bushes cover them from sight; having stakes also prepared, and shod with iron at both ends, which they were appointed to stick slopewise in the ground, and to remove them upon occasion to guard them from the Horie. This done, King *Henry* ranged his Host, disposing it into three Battels, placing his Bow-men on both fides the Main, where the King rode himself richly accoutréed, before whom the Royal Standard was born and many other Banners in Warlike order. Both sides being in readiness they a while stood facing one another. But the King of *England* resolving to break his way through his Enemies to *Callis*, or else to

to dye, with a chearfull countenance, and words full of courage, he animated his followers to put forth their utmost powers, that after-ages might know what the Lance, the Axe, the Sword and the Bow, could do in the hands of the Valiant ; and that whosoever desired Riches, Honours and Rewards, here they were to be had. Which words ended, his Army fell prostrate on the ground, and committed themselves to God, every man taking into his mouth a piece of earth in remembrance of his own mortality, or in lieu of the Sacrament : And then rising up, the King with chearfull countenance commanded his Standard to advance forward, saying, *Because our injurious enemies do attempt to shut up our way, let us set upon them in the most Glorious Trinity, and in the best hour in the whole year.* Sir Thomas Erpingham, an old experienced Souldier, with a Warder in his hand, led the way ; who when he saw time, threw his Warder up into the Air, whereat the whole Army gave a great shout. The French kept still their own ground ; which the undaunted English perceiving, they advanced towards them, giving another shout ; when immediately the Archers laid in the Meadows, darkned the Air with a shower of Arrows, and the English Army fell on with admirable courage, the most of them also for nimbleness being but half cloathed, without Hat, and bare-leg'd ; so behaving themselves, that the French Vantguard was instantly distressed, and disordered into such a confused press, that they were not able to use their Weapons at any advantage. Their Wings which assayed to charge upon the English, were broken, and forced back for safety to their Main Battel, where they bred both fear and confusion. And those French Troops which pursued the Archers (who gave back as if forced to flye) came on with their Horses on the Spur upon the jaws of destruction : for falling by multitudes on those goring-stakes (left by the Archers on purpose) they were miserably overthrown and panched to death, the English still on all hands hotly pursuing

suing their advantages. Against whom the Duke of Brabant advanced (hoping by his example to encourage others) furiously breaking into the English Army, wherein manfully fighting he was slain. With the like resolution Duke Alanzon pressed into the English Battalion where King Henry fought, and there had slain Humphrey Duke of Gloucester, had not the King come into his rescue, between whom and Alanzon was a hard contest, Alanzon giving the King a slight wound, and the King at length striking him down to the ground, whom the Souldiers in the heat of fight then slew, contrary to the King's command. The French Rere-Guard seeing the disaster of their Van and Main Battel, to save themselves, ran away, leaving the English no more work to doe. The number of Prisoners taken by the English here was very great. But King Henry perceiving fresh Troops of the King of Sicils to appear fresh in the field, and the same strong enough, without any new rallied forces to encounter with his wearied Souldiers ; to the end therefore that he might not have at once Prisoners to guard, and an enemy to fight, contrary to his generous nature, he commanded that every man should kill his Prisoner, which was immediately done, certain principal men excepted. Then by his Heralds he commanded those Troops either forthwith to come and fight with him, else to depart the field, either of which if they delayed he would revenge upon them without mercy. Whereupon they quit the field. When the fight was over and the field won, King Henry fell down upon his knees, and commanded his whole Army to doe the same, saying that verse in the Psalm, *Not unto us, O Lord, not unto us, but unto thy Name give the Glory.* And demanding what was the name of the place, when it was answered him Agincourt, then to all posterities following, saith he, shall this battel be called, the battel of Agincourt.

The spoil here taken in Armour, Jewels, and Apparel, was very great. Of the English were slain the Duke of York, the Earl of Suffolk, two Knights, David

*vid Gam Esquire*, and twenty eight private Souldiers. Of the *Freuch* were slain one thousand Princes, Nobles, Knights and Esquires, and ten thousand common Souldiers. Prisoners of Account taken in the field were *Charles Duke of Orléance*, *John Duke of Bourbon*, the Earl of *Richmond*, *Louis de Bourbon*, Count *de Vendome*, the Earl of *Eu*, *Edward de Rouen*, with divers others. Just before this battel of *Agincourt*, when it was reported that the *French* forces were very numerous, Captain *Gam* resolutely said, That if there were so many, there were enough to be killed, enough to be taken Prisoners, and enough to run away. The next day after this battel Great Henry marched towards *Calais*, and in the next month following spread sails for *England*, and on November 23, in Triumph-wise he entred *London*, where he received the *Gratulations* of his people. The City presented him a thousand pound in Gold, and two golden Balons. After some time of refreshing the King called a Parliament to *London*, which granted him a Subsidy, and a Tenth, for the carrying on of his Wars in *France*; which he gratioufly accepted, though it was too short for the defraying so vast a charge.

Therefore to make it up, the King pawned his Crown to his Uncle Cardinal *Beauford* for a great Sum of Money, and certain Jewels to the Lord Mayor of *London* for Ten thousand Marks. Then with an Army of 25527, Souldiers, every fourth being an Horse-man, besides a thousand Carpenters and Labourers, Upon July 28, 1417, he took to the Seas; and August the first, arrived in *Normandy* to their great terrour, many of the Inhabitants for fear flying into *Britain*. And as soon as on shore, to encourage his followers, he dubbed 38 Knights, then laid siege against *Conquest* the strongest City in *Normandy*, which he took August the sixteenth. He took likewise the Castles of *Aumbelliers* and *Lovers*, the first of which he gave to his brother *Clarence*, the second to the Earl of *Salisbury*, and third to the Earl-Marshall. *Caen* in *Normandy* the King took by force, giving the  
pillage

pillage thereof amongst his Souldiers. Now whilst King *Henry* was busied in *France*, the *Scots* wrought what mischief they could against him at home, entred *England* in an Hostile manner, bringing with them one whom they pretended to be King *Richard* the second, laid strait siege against *Roxbrough*, and *Berwick*, but upon the report of an Army of *English* coming against them, they broke up their sieges, and well was he that could first set foot in his own Country. In January the strong Town and Castle of *Fallors* was delivered to the King, after which he divided his Army into several parts under the Conducts of the Dukes of *Clarence* and *Glocester*, and Earl of *Warwick*, who took sundry Garrisons. The King the while besieged *Roan*, which after about a Twelve-months siege was delivered to him upon Terms, i.e. That the Burghesses should pay unto him Three hundred fifty six thousand Crowns of Gold; Should swear faith and loyalty to him and his Successours, &c.

A.D. 1418. Immediately after the surrender of this, sundry other places of Note yielded themselves, wherein King *Henry* placed Garrisons. And now *France* trembling at the *English* successes and their own losses, sought a peace from King *Henry*, who yielded to a personal conference to be held at *Melun*, whither *Charles the French King*, his Queen *Isabel*, the Prince *Catharine*, Duke of *Burgundy*, Count of *St. Paul*, with a Thousand Horse, came first; King *Henry*, his brothers of *Clarence* and *Glocester*, attended likewise with a Thousand Horse met them, wherein much conference passed, but nothing was concluded, which did not well please the King of *England*: wherefore ready to depart, he thus spoke to *Burgundy*. Cousin, I may not well digest this refusal; but be ye assured, that either I will have your Kings daughter, and all my demands, or else I will banish both you and them out of *France*. You may speak your pleasure, answered the Duke; but before you shall thrust us out of *France*, you shall be weary of the enterprize. The Treaty thus broke,  
O *Burgundy*

Burgundy reconciled himself with the *Daulphin*, and Henry displeased herewith, prosecuted the War more sharply, set upon *Ponthois* the last of July, and in few hours gained the Town, wherein great spoils fell to the Souldiers shares. The news of this made King *Charles* to remove his Court from *Paris* to *Troys* in *Champagne*, whilst Henry went forward with his intended enterprizes, he and his Generals winning many strong holds. And to make the more way for the English successes, the *Daulphin* and his Mother the Queen fell at great variance, when the Queen by the procurement of *Burgundy* (the King being very infirm) was made Regent of *France*, whose female authority, and the hatred to her own Son the *Daulphin*, did not a little prejudice the Crown of *France*. And to the greater advantage of the English the *Daulphin* caused John Duke of *Burgundy* to be treacherously slain (for that the said Duke had procured Lewis Duke of *Orleance* to be barbarously murthered, thinking that then he might easily compass to rule all under a weak King) whereupon the Queen and young Duke of *Burgundy* persuaded King *Charles* to disinherit the *Daulphin* his Son, and to give the Lady *Catharine* in marriage unto the King of *England*; which accordingly was done, and a peace was concluded betwixt the two Kings of *England* and *France*. The prime Articles of the peace were these, That *Charles* and *Isabel* should retain the name of King and Queen, and should hold all their dignities, rents and possessions during their natural lives. That after the death of *Charles* the present King of *France*, the Crown and Realm of *France*, should with all rights and appurtenances remain unto the King of *England*, and his Heirs for ever. That because of King *Charles* his infirmness, and incapacity to dispose the affairs of the Realm of *France*, therefore during his life the Government thereof should be and abide to King *Henry*; so that thenceforth he should govern the Realm, and admit to his Council and Assistance with the Council of *France* such of the English Nobility as he should think fit, &c. The

The Number of Articles were Thirty three, which were sworn unto at *Troys*, May 30, 1420, the same being proclaimed in *London*, the 20 of June following. These Articles were concluded betwixt the two Kings in the presence of divers of the chief Nobility both of *England* and *France*, homage being sworn unto King *Henry*, and he proclaimed Regent of *France*. And on the third of June the marriage of *Henry* and *Catharine* was with all pompous solemnity celebrated at *Troys*, the Bishop of that See performing the Ceremonies. From *Troys* the King of *England* and his Queen rode to *Paris*, where great entertainment was given; and the more to weaken the *Daulphin's* Interest, a Parliament of the Three Estates was assembled in *Paris*, where the disinherison of the *Daulphin* was confirmed. In this Parliament was also the final accord betwixt the two Kings acknowledged by the French King, as made by his free consent and liking, and with advice of the Council of *France*; whereupon it was likewise there ratified by the General States of that Realm, and sworn unto particularly upon the Holy Evangelists by the French Nobles and Rulers spiritual and secular, who also set their Seals to the Instruments thereof. Which Instruments were sent into *England* to be kept in the King's Exchequer at *Westminster*. Things now settled in *France* as well as that unsettled time would permit, King *Henry* leaves the Duke of *Clarence* to be his Lieutenant there, and hastes for *England* with his Queen, whom he caused to be Crowned at *Westminster* in little time after their arrival in *England*. Then calling a Parliament in order to the raising of moneys for the continuing of the Conquest in *France*; but some men minding more their private interest than the publick, instead of being free thereunto to contribute, they petitioned the King to commiserate the poverty of the Commons, which, as they pleaded, were beggared by the Wars: wherefore without farther pressing for any aid, the King again pawned his Crown to his rich Uncle Cardinal *Beauford* for Twenty thousand pounds, and then returned into

into France with four thousand Horse and twenty four thousand Foot. And time it was, for the Dauphin's party was grown considerably strong by Aids sent from Scotland, under the conduct of the Earl of Buccleuch and Archibald Douglas, who had given a defeat to a party of the English, therein killing the valiant Duke of Clarence, and taking Prisoners the Earls of Huntingdon, and Somerset, and Thomas Beaufort. After which the Dauphinois had laid siege to Alençon, and straitned the City of Paris, by with holding provisions from it; but when victorious Henry appeared, the enemy betook them to their strong-holds, many of which he gained in short time.

A.D. 1421, and Decemb. the sixth, whilst King Henry lay before Meaux, news was brought him that his Queen at the Castle of Windsor was delivered of a Son, at which he exceedingly rejoiced, yet said, he liked not the place of her delivery, having before commanded that she should not be delivered there; and withal predicted that what Henry of Monmouth should gain, Henry of Windsor should lose.

A.D. 1422. Queen Catharine passed beyond the Seas to the King in France, and there in the Loure King Henry and his Queen Catharine at the Festival of Pentecost sate in their Royal Robes, with their Imperial Crowns on their heads, and kept their Court with great confluence of people. But shortly after, this renowned Prince fell sick of a burning Fever and Flux, whereof he dyed. August 31. 1422. His bowels were buried at St. Mauro de Fosse, his body at Westminster, next beneath the Tomb of Edward the Confessor. Upon his Tomb Queen Catharine caused a Royal Picture to be laid, covered all over with Silver-Plate gilt, the head whereof was wholly of massy Silver. All which at the Abbies suppression was sacrilegiously broken off and taken away. His Issue was onely Henry of Windsor. 'Tis said of him, That he was a Prince godly in heart, sober in speech, sparing of words, resolute in deeds, provident in Counsel, prudent in judgment, modest

in

in countenance, magnanimous in action, constant in undertaking, a great Alms-giver, devout to Godward, a renowned Souldier, fortunate in field, from whence he never returned without Victory. He erected the Monasteries of Bethlehem and Bridget near unto Richmond, gave Princely gifts to the Church of Westminster and Brother-hood of St. Giles without Cripple-Gate London. He first instituted Garter principal King at Arms, besides other augmentations to the Order of St. George.

A.D. 1414. Sigismondo the Emperour came into England, desiring to make peace betwixt the two Nations of France and England, but when that could not be effected, he entred into a League with the English himself. Sir Roger Aston, Beverly, Murley, and some others were strangled and burned for an unlawfull meeting in St. Giles-fields.

A.D. 1417. Sir John Oldcastle, Lord Cobham, was adjudged as a Traitor to the King and Realm, to be drawn through the streets to St. Giles-fields by London, and there to be hang'd and burnt.

Three Popes were now at once mounted into St. Peter's Chair, namely Benedict, Gregory and John, therefore for preventions of mischief to the Church by this Schism, a Council was held at Constance in Germany, whither King Henry sent nine English Prelates, one of which, to wit, Richard Clifford Bishop of London, was the first nominated by the Council to be Pope, and he first nominated him that succeeded, which was Otto Colonna, by the name of Martin the fifth. In the third year of this Kings reign, and on Candlemas day, seven Dolphins came up the River Thames, four of which were taken.

An Act made in Parliament holden at Leicester. That such who maintained Wickliff's doctrine were Hereticks and Traitors, and to be hanged and burned. By which Law Sir Roger Aston, with divers others, as also Lord Cobham, were put to death.

## HENRY VI.

Aug. 31.  
A. D.  
1422.

**H**ENRY of Windsor, was Crowned about the Eighth Month of his age. The Guard and custody of this Royal Infant was committed to Thomas Duke of Exeter; the Nurture and Education to his Mother the Queen Dowager, the Government of England, to Humphrey Duke of Gloucester, and the Regency of France to John Duke of Bedford. The first disadvantage that befell the English Cause after the late King's decease, was the death of Charles the French King, who survived Henry but fifty three days; for the imbecillities of this Prince were a strength to the English; on the other side, the Infancy of young Henry was an advantage to young Charles, by them of his party now called King of France, though by the English he was called only K. of Berry, because little else was left unto him. Howbeit now he seeks to enlarge his Dominions, having received Aids from Italy and Scotland. And not far from the Town of Vernoil, his and the Regents Forces joined battel, when the English inured to the French Wars, having born the first heat of their enemies encounter, by persverance utterly broke them, and put them to flight. The Regent himself fought most fiercely, winning unto himself a lasting Honour. On the enemies part was slain the Constable and Lieutenant of France, the Earls of Wigton and Vauclerc, with about five thousand others. Prisoners taken, were the Duke of Alençon himself, with about two hundred others of special account. After this Victory, the Regent besieged Mants in Main, and with Ordnance beat down part of the Walls, whereupon it was yielded; this being one of the Articles at the surrender (which perhaps might be upon every like occasion) That if any person

## HENRY VI.

person was found within the City which had been consenting to the murther of John Duke of Burgundy, Father to Philip Duke of Bourgogne, that they should simply be at the Regents mercy.

Sometime after this and not much, Thomas Montacute Earl of Salisbury, with a dreadfull puissance, besieged the City of Orleans, and so enforced it, that the Inhabitants were willing to articulate, and to yield themselves to the Duke of Burgundy, then being in his company: But the Earl highly disdaining thereat, laid in the English Proverb, *I will not beat the bush, and another shall have the bird.* Which Proverbial speech, 'tis said, so offended the Duke, that it wholly alienated his mind from the English; to their great losse in all the French Wars following. And now appeared that famous French Shepherdess Joan of Lorrain, about 18 years of age, daughter to James of Arcke. This Maid to comfort Charles of France, presented her self to him at Chinon, bidding him to be of good courage, and constantly affirming, that God had sent her to deliver the Realm of France from the English yoke, and to restore him to the fulness of his Fortunes. Then she armed her self like a man, and required to have that Sword which at that time did hang in Saint Catharine's Church of Fierebois in Tourain; and being warlikely arrayed, she gets into Orleans, which did greatly animate the fainting French. From Orleans this Maid of God (for so the French called her) sent a Letter to de la Pole Earl of Suffolk, in words to this effect: King of England, do reason to the King of Heaven for his bloud-royal; yield up to the Virgin the Keys of all the good Cities which you have forced, &c. I am the chief of this War; wherefore I encounter your men in France, I will chase them, will they kill me, &c. The Virgin comes from heaven to drive you out of France; be not obstinate, for you shall not hold France of the King of Heaven, the Son of St. Mary, but Charles shall enjoy it, the King and lawfull Heir, to whom God hath given it. He shall enter Paris with a good train, &c. Understand these news of God and the Virgin; spare innocent bloud, leave Orleans at liberty. This Letter was enter-

tained

John tained of the English with laughter, and Joan repudiated of them no better than a Bedlam, or Inchantress. A.B. Can. But be she what she would, yet by her encouragements and conduct the English had Orleans pluckt out of their hopes, and with much loss were driven to raise the siege. In all Adventures Joan was one, and the foremost. At one Sally, she being shot through the Arm, said to her followers, *Come this is a favour, let us go on, they cannot escape the hand of God.* The English lost at this siege, the Earl of Sainbury, the Lord Moline, the Lord Poynings, Sir Thomas Gargrave; and of all sorts (if you believe the enemy) were slain in such Sallies as the Martial Maid made, 8000, our own Writers say but 600. After the raising of this siege, some Towns were took by the English; but at a Village called Potay, the French coming upon them before the Archers could fortifie their battels with an empalement of stakes, the English after three hours bloody resistance were put to the worst: The Lords Talbot, Scales, Hungerford, and Sir Thomas Rampsene, were taken Prisoners. Which loss was followed with the sudden revolt of sundry Towns. Nor was it long ere Charles recovered Auxerre and Rheimeres; in the last of which, according to the Maids direction, he was solemnly Crowned King of France. Hitherto the Virgin had been very lucky: but coming to the rescue of Champagne, distressed by the English and Burgundians, she was taken by a Burgundian Knight, who sold her to the English, and they sent her to Roan, where she was burnt for Sorcery, Bloudshed, and unnatural use of man-like Apparel and Habiliments, contrary to her Sex. The rumour of whose death, and ignominious cause thereof, was something incommodious to Charles's affairs for a time; and it was thought that the coming of young King Henry into France would be much more, who Decemb. 7. 1431. was Crowned King of France in Paris, by the Cardinal of Winchester. At which time such of the French Nobility as were present, did their homage to him. The Kings Patents, and Grants touching French matters, passed under the

the seal and style of Henry King of the French men and of England. And about this time the English Affairs succeeded pretty fortunately in France. The Earl of Arundel and Lord Talbot carry about victorious arms and terrifie Main, Anjou, and other places, with their successes.

A.D. 1435, that famous Patriot and General John Duke of Bedford, died at Paris. Upon which many Towns voluntarily yielded, and multitudes of the French forsook the English to joyn with Charles. And though the English Forces then in France were not altogether slothfull, yet through a fatal security or negligence, or both, at home, there was not speedy sufficiencies of resistance ministred. Richard Duke of York was created Regent of France; but before he arrived there, Paris was lost by the treachery of the Citizens, Feb. 27. 1436. And Philip Duke of Burgundy now in person gives proof of his dissatisfactions to the English, bringing his Forces before the Town of Callis; for the relief of which place the Protectour Humphrey Duke of Gloucester passed with a great Army; but Burgundy had withdrawn his Forces before the Duke arrived. Howbeit the Duke took some revenge on him, by wasting part of his Dominions; which done, he with honour returned to his Charge in England.

In France the Earl of Warwick was very active, driving the Duke of Burgundy's Forces from Crotoy, freeing Albeville from the danger of a Bastile, for twenty days, spoiling the Countrey of Picardy about Amiens and Artois. The Duke of Somerset, Lords Talbot and Willoughby were also busied in other places for the security of what the English had gained. But the common enemy the Turk increasing in strengths, Ambassadours were sent from all parts to determine these bloody differences betwixt the Nations of France and England, whereupon a Truce was taken by the two Kings for eighteen months.

A.D. 1444, was King Henry married with Margaret the daughter of Renate Duke of Anjou and Lorraine. In which marriage, say some, begun the mournful

full Tragedies of our Countrey: For after this day, the fortune of the World began to decline the King; so that he lost his friends in *England*, and revenues in *France*, for shortly all was ruled by the Queen and her Council, to the great disprofit of the King and his Realm, and to the mauger and obloquie of the Queen her self, who had many a wrong and false report made of her.

A. D. 1447. Good Duke *Humphrey's* death was effected: He was much hated by the Queen and her party, as the onely man who by his prudence, as also by the Honour and Authority of his birth and place, seemed to impeach that Sovereign Command, which they pretended to settle in the King, but meant indeed (as the matther is under soft Princes) to reign themselves in another's name. Many great Lords were drawn on (at the time of a Parliament then holden at St. *Edmonsbury*) to concur for his destruction, not perceiving that thereby they pluckt up the Flood-gate, at which the Duke of *York* should enter. This great Duke being come to attend in this Parliament, was Arrested of High Treason by John Lord *Beaumont* High Constable of *England*, the Dukes of *Buckingham*, *Somerset* and others; and to guard him certain of the Kings household were appointed: but it was not long before he was found dead, whose body was shewed to the Lords and Commons, as if he had died of a Palsey or Imposthume. His servants Sir Roger *Chamberlaine*, Richard *Middleton*, Thomas *Herbert*, Arthur *Tursey* Esquires, and Richard *Nedham*, Gent. were condemned of High Treason, and had this unexampled punishment. They were drawn from the Tower to Tyburn, there hang'd, let down quick, stript naked, mark'd with a knife to be quartered, and then a Charter of Pardon for their lives was shewed by the Marques of *Suffolk*. Thomas *Wild* the Dukes servant also being condemned and pardoned, had for a preamble in his Letters Patents words importing, That he had been one among many other Traitors against the King with Duke *Humphrey*, who went about, and practised

to

to deliver *Eleanor* late wife to the Duke out of Prison, for which purpose he had gathered a great power and number of men to come to the Parliament at *Bury*, there to have contrived the Kings destruction. Such was the end of this great Prince, who by the people of *England* was thought to be doubly murthered, by detraction and deadly practice. He was not onely a true Lover of learned men, but himself was also learned and a Father of his Countrey. And now the whole frame of Government seemed to repose it self on the Queen, and such Favourites as the King by her commendations liked.

The affairs of *France* were neglected. And the Duke of *York* perceiving the King to be ruled, and not to Rule, began secretly to allure his friends of the Nobility, and privily declared to them his Title to the Crown, as likewise he did to certain Gouvernours of Cities and Towns. Which attempt was so politickly and closely carried, that his provision was ready, before his purpose was publick. The very state of things invited this fatal conspiracy, there being now a milder King than *England* was worthy of, a Council out of favour with the people, manifold losses and dishonours abroad, a turbulent and jealous condition of things at home. Of all which the Duke of *York* had made his best use, cherishing the popular discontents, and instead of seeking to redress any evils in the State, he represented them to be worse than they were, thereby to ripen that breach of Loyalty in the hearts of men, which his ambition wrought upon. In *France* matters went on very unhappily on the *English* side; for the Duke of *Somerset* during the Truce, suffered a Town of *Britain* to be surprized, denying restitution thereof, cherished his Souldiers in their riot and disorders. The *French* therefore making this their example surprized Town after Town till they had gained all *Normandy*, and within few years extorted the *Duchy of Gascoign* out of the *English* possession,

In

John  
Kemp,  
A.B. Can.

## H E N R Y VI.

In the mean time the Duke of York raised his esteem in England, by his appeasing of a tumult which had happened in Ireland. And at a Parliament holden at Westminster, many Articles were exhibited by the Lower-House against the Duke of Suffolk, wherein he was charged with evil demeanour, Misprision, and Treason, and committed Prisoner to the Tower, from whence he was discharged within a few weeks after.

About this time Adam Molins Bishop of Chichester and Keeper of the Privy-Seal (a wise and stout man) stood in the Duke of York's way to the Crown; therefore he procured him to be slain at Portsmouth by certain Ship-men. And in a Parliament holden at Leicester the Duke of Suffolk, a principal Pillar of King Henry's safety, was set at again by the Yorkists. They charge that for a crime on him (namely the delivery of Anjou and Maine) which themselves had universally in a former Parliament assented unto and ratified. This they prosecuted so effectually, (though unjustly) against him, that he was condemned to be banished for five years; but in his way to banishment he was by some employed on purpose, taken at Dover-road, where they struck off his head at the side of a Cock-boat: nor was his death much lamented of the People, because he was thought to have been a private Actor in the death of the Noble Duke of Gloucester. Now the Yorkists having thus rid Suffolk out of the way, think it no unfit time to begin to put their designs in practice; so induce the Commons of Kent to make an Insurrection. The Captain of the Rebels was a Villain named Jack Cade, whom some by contraries called John Amend-all. Their demands were, That the Duke of York now in Ireland might be called home; and that he, with some others whom Cade named, might be principally used in Council: That those guilty of good Duke Humphrey's death, might receive due punishment. That the Grievances of the people might be redressed. These Kentish Rebels (with whom others from Essex joined) after they had committed some outrages in and about London, as in beheading the

## H E N R Y VI.

the Lord Say Treasurer of England, Mr. Cromer High Sheriff, plundering many of the Citizens, &c. upon the King's Proclamation and assurance of Pardon, returned to their own homes. But Cade afterward attempting to raise new troubles, was slain by Mr. Edan a Kentish Gentleman. The Duke of York finding the humours of the popular body fitted for his purpose, came suddenly out of Ireland, and confederated with divers Noble-men to take the Crown from Henry's head, and to set it on his own. Howbeit their pretence in taking arms, was only for the reformation of the State, professing that they meant all honour and obedience to the King; Which King Henry and his Friends, chiefly the Duke of Somerset, could not believe: Therefore an Army was prepared, and also advanced against the Yorkists. But before the Armies came to engage in fight, by such that secretly favoured the Duke of York, the King was persuaded to a reconciliation, and that Somerset should be commanded Prisoner to his own house. Which done, and York having dissolved his Army, he came to the King, making great complaints against Somerset; who hearing thereof, presented himself to the King, against his accuser, answering York face to face, and in plain terms accused him of highest Treason, as having conspired to depose the King, and to take the Sovereignty upon himself. Whereupon York was for a time put under restraint, till in St. Pauls Church in London, before the chief of the Nobility, he took a solemn Oath to be a true, faithfull, and obedient subject unto King Henry.

A.D. 1452, John Lord Talbot, first Earl of Shrewsbury of that Family, with an Army was sent to regain Gascoign. Burdeaux her self yielded to this great Soldier: Whence he went to relieve Castillon; but charging the Enemy upon much unequal terms, was there slain in the field, together with his Son the Viscount Lisse.

After which battel, when the flames of intestine War began to flash out in England betwixt the two Families of York and Lancaster, the Martial men of England.

Thomas  
Bour-  
loieur,  
A.B. Can.

*England were called home out of France, to maintain the Factions here: At which time a French Captain scoffing asked an English man. When they would return again into France? To whom the English man feckingly and upon a true ground answered, When your fins shall be greater and more grievous in the sight of God than ours are now. A.D. 1453, the Queen was delivered of a Son, who was named Edward.*

A.D. 1454, the Duke of York in despight of his sacred Oath so publickly taken, raised Arms against the King, marching with his forces towards London. Against whose coming, King Henry prepared an Army, with which he advanced to St. Albans, where a sharp battel was fought, and the Royal party worsted. On the Kings side were slain the Duke of Somerset, Earls of Northumberland and Stafford, Lord Clifford, with sundry worthy Knights and Esquires. The King himself was shot into the neck with an arrow, taken Prisoner, and conveyed back to London; where in July immediately following, a Parliament was holden, the precursor whereof was a Blazing-star, which appeared in June, extending its beams to the South. The first popular Act of this Assembly, was to restore the memory of Duke Humphrey to honour, declaring him to have been a true subject to the King and Realm. The next was to free the Yorkists from Treason as to their taking up of Arms. In this Parliament the Duke of York created himself Protectour of England, the Earl of Salisbury his great Confidant, was made Lord Chancellour, and the Earl of Warwick (Salisbury's Son) Captain of Calais. They spared as yet to touch King Henry's life, because the people did wonderfully esteem and reverence him for his holiness. But that they (the Yorkists) might with the more facility uncrown, and at last kill him, they by degrees workt out his ancient Counsellours, and placed of their own creatures in their rooms.

And now the French encouraged by our inward divisions, landed at Sandwich Fifteen thousand men, where they did some spoil, then departed. Another

ther part of them burned Fowey, and some other Towns in Devonshire.

A.D. 1458, the Lords met at London to compose all quarrels, bringing with them great troops of armed attendants, which through the great vigilancy and providence of the then Mayor of London, Godfrey Bullein (Queen Ann Bullein's Ancestor) dutifully kept the King's peace. This meeting of the Lords ended in a Composure, though it continued but a very short time before both sides made preparations for War; and at Blore Heath they came to battel, which was long and bloody; but at length the worst of the day fell to the King's side. Howbeit not long after, the King put the Yorkists to flight at Ludlow, Which Town was spoiled to the bare Walls.

In a Parliament holden at Coventry, the Duke of York, Earls of March, Salisbury, Warwick, Rutland, and others, were attainted of High treason, and had their whole Estates confiscated. But on July 9. 1460. at Northampton, was the fatal battel, where Henry's forces were utterly broken and vanquished, through the treachery of the Lord Grey of Ruthen, who quit his place, and fled to the Yorkists. The Duke of Buckingham, Earl of Shrewsbury, Viscount Beaumont, Lord Egremont, Valiant Sir William Lucy, with many other of the King's Friends, were slain; and the King himself fell a prey into his enemies hands, who carried him to London, where a Parliament begun Octob. 8. At which Parliament Richard Duke of York made his claim to the Crown, publishing his pedigree to them on this sort, namely, that Lionel third son of King Edward the third, had Issue Philip his Daughter, who was married to Edmond Mortimer Earl of March, who had Issue Roger Earl of March, who had Issue Edmond Earl of March, Roger, Anne and Eleanor, which said Edmond, Roger and Eleanor, died without Issue, and Anne the Heir of that House was married to Richard Earl of Cambridge (the son of Edmond Duke of York fifth son to King Edward the third,) which said Earl of Cambridge had Richard now Duke of York. He also alledged, that the descendants of John of Gaunt, fourth Son and

and younger brother to *Lionel*, had hitherto holden the Crown of *England* unjustly, for that himself the said *Richard Plantagenet* Duke of *York* was the lawfull Heir, being the son of *Richard Earl of Cambridge* and *Anne* aforesaid. Whilst this Weighty controversie to whom the Crown of right belonged was under debate, a Crown which hung for an Ornament in the middle of the Roof of the Room, where the Knights and Burgesles met to consult, and also the Crown which for like cause stood upon the highest Tower of *Dover-castle*, both fell suddenly down, which were vulgarly construed to be of ill portent to King *Henry*. The conclusion of the Parliament concerning the Crown was, That *Henry* should enjoy it during life, and then it should remain to *Richard Duke of York*, and his Heirs and King *Henry's* Heirs to be for ever excluded. Whereupon the Duke was proclaimed Heir apparent, But this while the Queen was gathering forces in the North, resolving if possible to maintain the possession of a Crown, and to secure it for her son. The Duke of *York* therefore with an Army marcheth against her, and near unto *Wakefield* both Hosts join battel, where the Queen at length gained the Victory. The Duke himself with divers men of account were slain in the fight, and the Earl of *Salisbury* was taken Prisoner and beheaded. And now *Edward Earl of March* the son of *Richard Duke of York*, takes upon him to maintain the quarrel, and at *Mortimer's Cross* near *Ludlow*, he set upon the Queens Army. At which time there appeared three Suns, which suddenly joined into one. The Battels maintained themselves with great fury, but in the end *March* obtained the Victory. There was taken Sir *Owen Tudor* (Father to *Jasper Earl of Pembroke*) whom Earl *Edward* caused to be beheaded: Taken also were, Sir *John Seudnor* with his two sons, and other persons of Rank.

A. D. 1461. Both Armies met and ingaged in fight at *St. Albans*, where the Queens side won the day, and recovered the King, whom the *Yorkists* had brought along with them from *London*. Howbeit the

the Londoners stood wholly for the Earl of *March* (whose presence and carriage made him amiable among the people, especially women) and at his return to *London* from the fight, proclaimed him King of *England*. King *Henry's* Wife was *Margaret* the Daughter of *Reynate King of Jerusalem, Sicily and Arragon, Duke of Anjou and Lorrain*.

King *Henry's* Issue was onely *Edward*. He was a Prince free from pride, given much to Prayer; well-read in the Scriptures, charitable, so chaste and modest, that when certain young Women presented themselves before him in a Mask, with their hair loose, and bare breasts laid out, he immediately rose up and departed with these words, Fie, fie for shame, forsooth ye are to blame. He took all injuries, whereof he received plenty, so patiently, that he not onely did not seek to revenge them, but gave God thanks that he did send them to punish his sins in this life, that he might escape punishment in the life to come. To a Ruffian that struck him on the face whilst he was prisoner, he onely said, Forsooth, you are to blame to strike me your anointed King. Not long before his death, being demanded why he had so long held the Crown of *England* unjustly, he replied; my Father was King of *England*, quietly enjoying the Crown all his Reign; and his Father, my Grand-father was also King of *England*, and I even a Child in the Cradle, was proclaimed and crowned King without any interruption, and so held it forty years well-near, all the States doing homage unto me, as to my Ancestors. Therefore I say with King *David*, My lot is fallen in a fair ground, I have a goodly Heritage: my help is from the Lord which saveth the upright in heart. He founded those famous Colleges of *Eaton*, and *King's College in Cambridge*.

In A. D. 1435. The River *Thames* was so frozen up, that the Merchants who came to the *Thames*-mouth, were carried to *London* by Land.

In or near the year of our Lord, 1442. was *Eleanor Cobham* the good Duke *Humphrey's* Wife, arraigned of Sorcery and Treason, for setting on *Bullingbroke* and *Southwell*.

## HENRY VI.

*Southwell* to take away the King's life by Necromancy. Something of the fact 'tis said she either confessed, or was proved against her, for the which she was put to solemn and publick penance in *London* three several days, then was committed to perpetual imprisonment.

Line

## Line of YORK.

## EDWARD IV.

EDWARD the fourth, was the eldest Son of *R. White* *Edward Duke of York*, and began to reign in the *Rose*. twentieth year of his Age. At which time *Henry of March 4<sup>th</sup>* Windsor had many friends remaining, who by open Hostility sought to re-settle him on the English Throne. The battel at *Tonton* fought on *Palm Sunday 1461*, is very memorable, wherein died the Lords *Beaumont*, *Nevil*, *Willoughby*, *Wells*, *Scales*, *Grey*, *Dacres*, *Fitz-Hugh*, *Buckingham*, Knights, Esquires, and Gentlemen a great number, and in all on both parts 35091, but *Henry* lost the day.

A. D.  
1460.

A. D. 1461, and June 28, was *Edward Duke of York* and *Earl of March* Crowned King at *Westminster* with great Solemnity. And in November following was *Henry of Windsor* and his Son *Edward* by Parliament disinherited of their right or claim to the Crown. The Dukes of *Exeter* and *Somerset*, and Earl of *Devonshire* with 140 more were attainted and disinherited.

Queen *Margaret* the mean while was gaining Aids from *France*, but they were discomfited by *bastard Ogle*. Then with the *Scots* she entred *Northumberland*, took the Castle of *Bamburgh*, and passed forward to the Bishoprick of *Durham*, her forces daily encreasing: but these also were defeated by King *Edward* at *Hegely Moor*, where Sir *Ralph Piercie* dying, said, I have saved the Bird in my Breast, meaning his Oath made to King *Henry*, in whose cause he lost his life.

At *Hexam* also were *Henry's* forces defeated, but himself with much difficulty escaped into *Scotland*: Shortly after which, this unfortunate Prince came into

## EDWARD IV.

into England in disguise, but being betrayed, was apprehended in Waddington Hall as he sate at dinner, from whence he was conveyed to London, with his Legs bound to the stirrups, and at London was Arrested by the Earl of Warwick, and committed to the Tower.

And now King Edward thinks himself at leisure to marry, yet refuseth all Foreign matches, whereof he had many offered, and takes for his consort an inferiour Subject, the Relict of his mortal enemy, Sir John Grey slain at the battel of St. Albans on King Henry's side. This Lady Elizabeth Grey becoming a suiter unto the King for her Jointure; kind King Edward became a suiter unto her for a nights-Lodging; but she wisely answered him, when he became importunate, That as she did account her self too base to be his Wife, so she did think her self too good to be his Whore. When the King would needs marry this Lady, to the great discontent of his Council, but especially of his Mother; His Mother alledged many reasons to the contrary, and amongst the rest this, That onely her Widow-hood might be sufficient to restrain him, for that it was an high disparagement to a King, to be dishonoured with Bigamy in his first marriage. To which the King pleafantly answered, In that she is a Widow, and hath already Children, By God's blessed Lady I am a Batchelor and have some too, and so each of us hath a proof, that neither of us are like to be barren. And therefore Madam I pray you be content, I trust in God she shall bring you forth a young Prince, that shall please you. And as for the Bigamy, let the Bishop hardly lay it in my way when I come to take Orders, for I understand that it is forbidden to a Priest, but I never wist yet that it was forbidden to a Prince. On May 26. 1465, was this Lady, whom Edward had accepted to be his Queen, Crowned at Westminster with all due Celebrations. Her Father Sir Richard Woodville was created Lord Rivers, and made High Constable of England. Her Son Thomas Grey was created Marques of Dorset, and her other relations preferred. But this

## EDWARD IV.

this marriage of the King did so sorely disgust the Earl of Warwick who had courted the Duke of Savoy's Daughter for King Edward, that he turned his affection from him to Henry, contriving all he could King Edward's deposition. He wrought upon George Duke of Clarence the King's brother to favour his designments, the Duke being the easier wrought upon, by reason he had before took offence against his brother about his Marriage, and preferring his Wifes Kindred. Then did Warwick by his Agents stir up a commotion in the North, one Robert Hulden first heading a rabble of about fifteen thousand, and he being put to death, Sir John Coniers undertook the leading of them marching with them toward London; Proclaiming, That King Edward was neither a just Prince to God, nor a profitable Prince to the Common wealth. Against these Rebels the King sent an Army that engaged with them not far from Banbury, where the Northern men had gone off with the worst, had not John Clapham Esquire a servant of Warwick's, displayed his Colours with the white Bear, and from an eminent place cried a Warwick, a Warwick, whereat the Welshmen, fearing indeed that Warwick had been come, betook themselves to flight, leaving their General the Earl of Pembroke, and his brother in the field, who valiantly fighting were incompassed and taken. The Earl with his brother Sir Richard Herbert were brought to Banbury, where with ten other Gentlemen they lost their heads, Coniers and Clapham being their Judges, 1469.

From hence the Northern men under the conduct of Robin of Riddisdale, hasted to the King's Manor of Grafton, where the Queens Father then lay, whom with his Son John they suddenly surprised, and at Norhampton struck off their heads. The King this while having prepared a mighty Army, marched towards Warwick's Company, and at Wolney pitched his Tents, the enemy lying at a little distance, in readiness for battel; but by mediation of friends a peace was intreated. When the King resting secure was by politick Warwick surprized in the dead of the night, and carried

carried Prisoner to Warwick Castle, from whence he was by night conveyed to Middleham Castle in York shire, where under custody of the Earl's Brother George Neville Arch-bishop of York he was retained; but the Bishop granting him liberty to ride a hunting in the Forests and Parks, he fairly made his escape. Warwick hereupon rages, but seeing no remedy, he made use of necessity, and gave forth, that himself so caused it, having power to make Kings and to unmake them. Nor did he nor Clarence leave off here, but procured a Rebellion in Lincolnshire, where Sir Robert Wells, an expert Souldier, with thirty thousand Commons disturbed the Countrey, and in every place proclaimed King Henry. At Stanford Wells set upon the King's forces (not staying for Warwick's coming) where was performed a most bloody fight, till at length Sir Robert being taken, the Lincolnshire men, casting away their Coats, all run away. In regard whereof, this Battel was called the Battel of Lost-Coat-Fields. Wells with many others were put to death, 1470. Upon this defeat Clarence and Warwick fled into France, thinking to take sanctuary at Calais; but there the Lord Vawcley whom Warwick had substituted his Deputy, denied them admittance, bidding them defiance with his great Guns; for which good service King Edward made Vawcley himself Governour of Calais. But though the Lords were rejected here, yet were they with great respect received at the French Court, King Lewis furnishing them with aids; which effected, they set sail and landed at Dartmouth: from whence Warwick marched towards London, proclaiming Henry King, and commanding all from fifteen to sixty upon a great penalty to take arms against the Usurper Edward Duke of York.

And incredible it was to see the confluence of them which came armed to him, who a little before applauded and approved none but King Edward. The Baron Fauconbridge in the West, and Earl of Pembroke in Wales, every where proclaimed King Henry also. And the Lord Montacute, who having mustered 6000 men in the name of King Edward, and brought them forward

ward almost to Nottingham, drew them back again, alledging King Edward's ungratefulness to his friends. Every one cryed now, a King Henry, a King Henry; a Warwick, a Warwick; and indeed all so applauded the passage now on foot, that King Edward was forced to flee beyond the Seas. His Queen Elizabeth stole out of the Tower, and took sanctuary in Westminster, where she was delivered of a Son, which without all pomp was there also baptised by the name of Edward. Other Sanctuaries were also full of Edward's Friends. And now the Kentish men took the opportunity to rob, spoil, and doe much harm about London, and some in London it self; and more would have done, had not the Earl of Warwick come into the rescue; which encreased his name, that was great enough before. On October 6, the said Earl entred the Tower, wherein King Henry had been detained prisoner almost the space of 9 years, whom he released, and restored to him the Title of King, and forthwith conveyed him through London to the Bishop's Palace, where a pompous Court was kept till the 13 of the same month, on which day Henry went Crowned to St. Pauls, the Earl of Warwick bearing his Train, and Earl of Oxford the Sword, the people crying, God save King Henry. November 26 following, a certain Parliament was begun at Westminster, wherein King Edward was declared a Traytor to his Countrey, an Usurper of the Crown, and had all his goods confiscate; the like judgment passed against his adherents. John Tiptoft Earl of Worcester was beheaded. All the Statutes made by King Edward were revoked. The Crowns of England and France were entailed to King Henry, and his Heirs Male, and for want of such, unto George Duke of Clarence; and the Earl of Warwick was made Governour of the Land in those turbulent times. But King Edward having received some aids from the Duke of Burgundy, and the promises of more in England, landed at Ravenspur in Yorkshire. At his first arrival, he seemed to lay aside his claim to the Crown, pretending onely to his rights as a private person, howbeit, when he had possessed himself of York, and got his friends about him,

he

he then marched in a hostile manner till he came near to the City of Warwick, where his brother Clarence brought in to his assistance 4000 men. And Clarence reconciled to King Edward, sought to draw in Warwick, to which end he sent messengers to him to the Town of Warwick where he then lay; but Warwick had the Messengers go tell the Duke from him, That he had rather be an Earl, and always like himself, than a perjured Duke; and that e'er his Oath should be falsified, as the Dukes apparently was, he would lay down his life at his enemies foot, which he doubted not should be bought very dear. This stout resolution made Edward more wary, therefore he hastens forward to obtain London, whither when he was come the Citizens set open their Gates to him. And now peaceable Henry becomes Prisoner again to King Edward, who hearing of Warwick's advance towards London, draws forth his forces to meet him, taking Henry along with him, and upon Gladmore near Barnet, on Easterday in the morning the King's and Earl's Hosts joined Battel, the best of the day for a while being Warwick's; but at length through the fogginess and darkness of the Air, the Stars imbroidered on the Earl of Oxford's mens Coats, who were in the left wing of the Battel, were mistaken for the Sun which King Edward's men wore; in which error Warwick's Battalion lets fly at their own fellows, that were in great forwardness of gaining the victory; and they not knowing the cause of the error, judged themselves betrayed; whereupon the Earl of Oxford with 800 men, quit the Field: Which great Warwick perceiving, he courageously animated his men, and furiously rushed into the midst of his enemies battel, so far, that he could not be rescued, where valiantly fighting he was slain. Marquis Montacute making forward to relieve him, was also slain, whereby ended that bloody day's task. On King Edward's part died the Lord Cromwel, Lord Bourchier, Lord Barnes and Sir John Lyle. On the other part, the Earl of Warwick, and his brother John Nevil Marquis Montacute. On both sides ten thousand, most of which were buried upon the same plain, where afterwards a Chapel was built. In this same year

year 1471, and within few weeks after this was a battel fought at Tewksbury betwixt King Edward and the Martial Queen Margaret, the defeat hapning to the Queen; On whose side were slain John Lord Somerset, John Courtney Earl of Devonshire, Sir John Delves, Sir Edward Hampden, Sir Robert Whittingham, and Sir John Leake, with three hundred others. Amongst them that fled Prince Edward, King Henry's Son was one; him Sir Richard Crofts apprehended, and presented him to the King; whom the King a while beheld with austere countenance, at last demanded of him, How he durst with Banner display'd, so presumptuously disturb his Realm? To which the Prince answered, That what he did was to recover his Father's Kingdoms and his most rightfull inheritance. How darest thou then, added the Prince, which art his subject display thy Colours against him thy Liege-Lord? Which answer so moved King Edward, that he dashed the Prince on the mouth with his Gantlet, and Richard Duke of Gloucester, with some of the King's servants, most shamefully murthered him at the King's feet. His body was buried in the Monastery of the Black-Friars at Tewksbury.

Edmond Duke of Somerset, the Pryor of St. John's, with many Knights and Esquires were taken forth of Sanctuary and executed at Tewksbury. Queen Margaret in this fatal day of battel took into a religious house, from whence she was taken and committed to sure and strait keeping, in which condition she remained till such time as she was ransomed by her Father Duke Renate. May 20. King Edward entred London, and in few days after the Crookback'd Duke of Gloucester stabbed harmless King Henry to the heart. Whose murthered body was on the Ascension-Eve laid in an open Coffin, and conveyed to St. Paul's in London, where it rested uncovered one day, and began to bleed afresh, thence it was carried to the black Friars Church, where it did bleed as before, then was buried at Chertsey in Surrey, but King Henry the seventh translated it to his Chapel of Windsor.

A.D. 1474. Was an Interview at *Piquigny* in *France*, of the two Kings of *England* and *Frante*, where falling into complemental conference, *Lewis* told King *Edward* that he would one day invite him to *Paris*, there to court fair *French Ladies*, with whom if he committed any sin, *Lewis* merrily told him that *Cardinal Bourbon* should be his Confessor, and to be sure his penance should be the easier, for that *Bourbon* used to kiss fair *Ladies* himself. This was no sooner spoken, howsoever meant, but *Edward* was as forward of thanks and acceptance; which King *Lewis* observing, rounded *Philip Comines* his bosom-servant in the ear, telling him flatly, That he liked not *Edward*'s forwardness to *Paris*, there had been too many *English Princes* at that City already. After King *Edward*'s return into *England*, as he was hunting in *Arrow-Park* belonging to *Thomas Burdet Esquire*, with the death of much game he slew a white *Buck*, which the Esquire much fancied; whereupon he wished the horns in that persons belly that moved the King to kill that *Buck*. For which words he was accused and condemned of *Treason*, his words being wrested, that he wish'd the Horns in the King's belly, and was beheaded at *Tyburn*.

A.D. 1478. *George Duke of Clarence*, by the procurement of his brother *Richard Duke of Gloucester*, was accused of *Treason* and committed to the *Tower*. His accusation was, That he had caused divers of his servants to inform the people that *Mr. Burdet* was wrongfully put to death, That upon purpose to exalt himself and Heirs to the regal dignity, he had most falsely published that the King his brother was a bastard, and therefore not capable to wear the *Crown*, for which, and the like crimes charged upon him, he was in *Parliament* attainted of *Treason*, and found guilty, and on the eleventh of *March* 1478. after he had offered his *Mass-penny* in the *Tower*, was drowned in a *But of Malmsey*, whose body was buried at *Tewkesbury*. But the King was afterwards much grieved, that he had consented to his death; and would say when any made suit for the life of a condemned person,

person, O unfortunate brother, for whose life no man would make suit.

A.D. 1483. King *Edward* fell into a dangerous and deadly sickness, when calling for his Lords into his sick presence, and raising his faint body on the pillows, he exhorted and required them all, For the love that they had ever born unto him, for the love that our Lord beareth unto us all, that from that time forward all griefs forgotten, each of them would love other. Which, faith he, I verily trust you will, If you any thing regard either God or your King, affinity or kindred, your own Country, or your own safety. Shortly after which words he departed this life, April the ninth, and was buried at *Windsor* in the New Chapel, whose foundation himself had laid. 'Tis said of him, that he was just and mercifull in peace, sharp and fierce in War, and that never any King was more familiar with his Subjects than he. In the beginning of his reign he used to sit in person certain days together in his Court of *King's-Bench* to see justice and equity done. His wife was *Elizabeth*, the Daughter of *Richard Woodville Earl Rivers* by his Wife *Jaqueline Dutches of Bedford*, the Daughter of *Peter Earl of St. Paul*. His Issue *Edward* born in the *Sanctuary of Westminster*, November 4th 1471. *Richard* born at *Shrewsbury*. *Rithard Duke of Bedford* dyed a young Child. *Elizabeth* born at *Westminster* February 11th, 1466. married with *Henry the VH*. *Cecilie* married unto *John Viscount Wells*, and buried at *Quarenia* in the Isle of *Wight*. *Ann* was married unto *Thomas Howard Duke of Norfolk*, *Earl Marshal*, and high *Treasurer of England*, and was buried at *Framingham* in *Norfolk*. *Bridget* was vailed a Nun in the Nunnery of *Dartford* in *Kent*. *Mary* died in the *Tower of Greenwich* 1482, and was buried at *Windsor*. *Margaret* died an Infant. *Catharine* was married to *William Courtes Earl of Devonshire* and *Lord of Okchampton*. His Concubines were *Elizabeth Lucy* and three others which were of three several humours, as himself would say. One the merriest, which was *Shore's Wife*, another the wiliest, and the third the holiest, for she had wholly devoted her self to his bed and her beads.

His

His base Issue were Arthur surnamed Plantagenet and Elizabeth.

He ordained penal Statutes against excessive pride in apparel, especially against long piked shoes then worn, which had grown to such an extreme, that the pikes in their toes were turned upwards, and with silver Chains or Silk-laces tied to the knee. He gave some Cotswold-sheep to Henry of Castile, and John of Arragon, 1465. which hath been accounted one of the greatest prejudices that ever hapned to England. One Walker a substantial Citizen of London, was beheaded in Smithfield, for onely saying to his Child, that he would make him Heir of the Crown, meaning his house which had that sign.

In the fallen estate of King Henry many of the Nobles that had taken part with Henry were put to fly for their lives into Foreign Countreys; and amongst the rest Henry Holland Duke of Excester and Earl of Huntingdon, son to the Lady Elizabeth second Daughter of John of Gaunt, and Husband to the Sister of King Edward the fourth, was constrained to live in exile in miserable want and penury. For, saith Philip Comines, I once saw the Duke of Excester run on foot bare-leg'd, after the Duke of Burgundy's Coach and Train, begging an Alms for God's sake; But being known what he was, Burgundy gave him a small pension for his maintenance. The art of printing was first found out in Germany by a Knight, called John Guttenberghen, and brought into England by William Caxton a Mercer of London, who first practised the same in the Abby of Westminister, Anno Dom. 1471.

EDWARD

**E**DWARD the eldest Son of King Edward the fourth, being a child but of about twelve years of age when his Father died, was committed to the Government of his Uncle Sir Anthony Woodville, a right honourable Person, with whom were joyned other of the Queens friends. But Richard Duke of Gloucester was much discontented that these should have the keeping of him secure, whom he designed to destroy, that thereby the Crown might become his. This bloody man therefore, the better to effect his wicked purposes, did every where represent the Queens Kindred to be enemies to the ancient Nobility, and that they would abuse the King's Name to their undoing. With which and the like suggestions, he wrought upon the Duke of Buckingham and the Lord Hastings (that had formerly born no great Good-will to the Queens friends) to joyn with him, utterly to remove from the King's company all his Mothers friends, under the name of the ancient Nobles Enemies. Then the Hypocrite Gloucester understanding that the Lords attending the King, purposed to bring the King to London to his Coronation, strongly guarded, he therefore procured the Queen to be brought in mind, That it was not needfull, but would be jeopardous for the King to be brought up strong; for that if the Lords of her Kindred should assemble in the King's Name much people, they should give the Lords of the contrary Faction cause to suspect, that this was not done for the King's safety, whom no man impugned, but for the destruction of the ancient Nobility; by which means the Nation should be brought into an uproar. The Queen thus overreached, sent such word unto the King and his friends

April 9;  
A.D.

friends about him; so that they mistrusting no guile, brought the King forwards with a small company, in great haste, but with no good speed; for the Dukes of York and Buckingham at Stony-Stratford, as the King was on his way to London, took him by violence from his Friends, arrested the Lord Richard Grey, Sir Thomas Vaughan, and Sir Richard Hart, in the King's presence, and imprisoned Sir Anthony Woodville, Lord Rivers, in Northampton; whom in short time after, with the Lord Richard and Sir Thomas Vaughan, they sent Prisoners into the North. Which done, with much honour and humble reverence they convey the King towards London. But the Queen hearing of these proceedings in great fright and heaviness she bewailed her Childs Reign, her friends and her own mishap, cursing the time that ever she dissuaded the gathering of power about the King; got her self in all haste possible with her young Son Richard, and Daughters, into the Sanctuary, lodging her self and company, in the Abbats place at Westminster; whither the Arch-bishop of York went to comfort her, telling her, he hoped that the matter was nothing so bad as she doubted it; and that he was put in good hope, and out of doubt, by a Message sent him from the Lord Hastings (whose faithfulness to the King, he said, none did or had cause to suspect): *Ab wo worth him, quoth the Queen, he is one that laboureth to destroy me and my bloud.* When the Arch-bishop was returned home, in the dawning of the day, he might out of his Chamber-window see all the Thames full of Boats, with the Duke of Gloucester's servants in them watching that none should go to Sanctuary, nor none pass unsearched. Great then was the commotion and murmur, as well in other places about, as especially in the City, the people diversly divining upon this dealing; and some Lords, Knights and Gentlemen, either for favour of the Queen, or fear of themselves, assembled in sundry companies harnessed. But these commotions and fears were moderated by the Lord Hastings then Lord Chamberlain, who persuaded that the Duke of

of Gloucester was a sure friend to the King, and that the Lord Rivers with the others were for matters attempted against the Dukes of Gloucester and Buckingham, put under arrest; and that the King was bringing up to his Coronation.

May 4<sup>th</sup>, the King entred the City, and was lodged in the Bishops Palace, where was held a great Council, and the Dukes of Gloucester, Buckingham, and all the Lords, were sworn to the King; and the Duke of Gloucester was chosen to be Protectour of the King and his Realm. And now the Protectour, to the end he might finish his designs at once, projecteth to get the young Duke of York out of Sanctuary; in order to which he pretends that the said Duke onely was a fit associate for his brother, the King, and that it was dishonourable both for the King and those about his Grace, that the King's brother should be fain to keep Sanctuary. But because the Duke might not be taken out of Sanctuary by violence, the A. B. of York was therefore employ'd to persuade with the Queen to yield him up. This the A. B. undertook (though perhaps not very willingly) alledging to the Queen the comfort that his society would be to the King his brother, and that it would take off the obloquy of one brothers being afraid of the other, which would seem to be by the Dukes being kept in Sanctuary. The Queen desirous to keep him where he was, pleaded his infancy, his being vexed with sickness, insomuch that she durst put no earthly person in trust with his keeping but her self onely: For though others (said she) haply might do their best to him, yet there was none that knew better than her self how to order him, she having so long kept him; nor was there any more like to cherish him than his own Mother that bare him. And to this her reply she added many biting words against the Protectour. Howbeit, in the conclusion finding by the A. B.'s words that the Protectour would fetch her Son out by force, if otherwise he might not be had, she deemed it best to deliver him, which she did to

to the Bishop and other Lords with him : saying to them, I deliver him, and his brother into your hands to keep, of whom I shall ask them before God and the World. And to the Child she said Farewell, mine own sweet Son, God send you good keeping, let me kiss you once e'er you go, for God knows when we shall kiss together again ; and therewithal she kissed him, blessed him, turned her back and wept, and so went away, leaving the Child weeping as fast. Then the Lords brought him to the Protectour, who took him in his Armes, and gave him a *Judas* kiss.

*June the 13.* many Lords assembled in the Tower and there sat in Council, communing concerning the King's Coronation, for the which Pageants were provided, and whilst they were in consultation in came the Protectour about nine of the Clock, saluting them courteously and excusing himself that he came so late, saying merrily, I have been a sleeper to day ; then after a while departed, and about eleven of the Clock returned thither, but with a wonderfull lower and angry countenance, knitting his brows, frowning and fretting and biting his lips, and after some short time said, What are they worthy to have, who imagine and compass my destruction, that am so near of bloud to the King, and that am Protectour of his Royal Person and Realm ? The Lord Hastings answered that they deserved to be punished as heinous Traitors, whatsoever they were, and so said the other Lords. This is, quoth the Protectour, yonder Sorceress my brothers Wife, meaning the Queen, and that other Witch of her Council, Shores Wife, with their affinity, who by their Sorcery and Witchcraft have wasted my body, and therewith he pluckt up his doublet sleeve to the elbow, on his left arm, shewing a wearish, withered arm and small, as it never was otherwise. Whereupon the Lords minds much gave them, that this was but a quarrel.

Howbeit

Howbeit the Lord Chamberlain (who from the death of King Edward had kept Jane Shore) said, certainly my Lord if they have so done they are worthy of great punishment. What, quoth the Protectour, Thou servest me with Ifs and with Ands I ween, I tell thee they have so done, and that I will make good on thy body, Traitor. And therewith he rapt on the board with his fist, at which sign given, one without the Chamber cryed out, Treason ; Whereupon many men in harness came rushing into the Council Chamber, where they seized on the Lord Hastings, whom the Lord Protectour bad speed, and shrieve him apace, for by St. Paul, said he, I will not to dinner till I see thy head off ; which accordingly was done, for he was presently brought forth to the Tower-green, where upon a long log of Timber his head was struck off. Thus ended this honourable man easie to be beguiled. Now the Protectour to set some colour upon the matter, after he had dined sent in all haste for many substantial men out of the City into the Tower, against whose coming thither himself and Buckingham his creature had harnessed themselves in old rusty Briganders, as though some sudden necessity had constrained them to put on such Armour. And being come, the Protectour told them, that the Lord Chamberlain Hastings, and others of his conspiracy had contrived suddenly to have destroyed him and the Duke of Buckingham, there the same day in Council, of the which Treason he never had knowledge before ten of the Clock the same Forenoon. And for the farther appeasing of the peoples minds concerning this Lords death, he caused also the same day an Herald of Arms to proclaim it through the City of London, That the Lord Hastings, with divers others had conspired to murther the Lord Protectour and Duke of Buckingham sitting in Council, and after to have taken upon them to rule the King and Realm at their own pleasures. By and by after this he caused the Sheriff of London to repair unto Jane Shore's house, and to spoil her of all that

Q

that she had ; then procured the Bishop of London to put her to open penance for her former dalliance with his Brother King Edward, and as 'tis said, he prohibited any from relieving her extreme wants. Certain it is, that she lived very mean and beggarly in her old age. She dyed not till the 20th Year of King Henry the VIII. The Protectour had also so contrived it with his caball, that the same day and about the same hour in which the Lord Chamberlain was beheaded at the Tower, those Lords taken from the King at Stony-Stratford and Northampton should be beheaded at Pontefract. Which accordingly was done, in the presence and by the order of Sir Richard Radcliffe, who at their execution would not permit them to speak or declare their innocency. And now the way thus prepared, Gloucester hastens for his own Coronation, instead of setting the Crown on his Nephews head. Edmund Sha the Mayor of London he wins to his side. And the Mayors brother Dr. Sha (by the direction of the Protectour and his Council) upon Sunday June 19th, at Pauls-Cross, declared to the people that King Edward the fourth was never lawfully married to the Queen, and therefore his Children were Bastards. Moreover that neither King Edward himself, nor the Duke of Clarence, were reckoned (by those that were of secrecy in the houshold) for the Duke of York's Children ; but, saith he, as for the very Noble Prince the Lord Protectour, he is the Fathers own Picture, his own countenance. At the time of the uttering of these words (according to the plot laid beforehand) the Protectour should have come in, to the end that those words just meeting with his presence, the people might have been the more affected with them ; but whether by the slowness of the Protectour in coming, or the Doctors too much speed, the Protectour came not till these words were over : Nevertheless when the Doctor spied his Lordship coming at last, he abruptly broke off from the matter he was upon, to repeat the former words, This is the very Noble Prince, &c. But the People

People were so far from crying, King Richard (as it was hoped they would) that they stood as if they had been without sense, they were so amuzed at his shamefull Harangue. And the poor Parson when he had done got him home, and there consumed and pined to death in few days after. The Theme of his preachment was, Bastard slips shall never take deep root. On the Tuesday following Henry Duke of Buckingham made an oration to the Lord Mayor, Aldermen and Commons in the Guild-hall of London, wherein he aspersed King Edward the fourth as a Tyrant, his Children as Bastards ; endeavoured to prove the Protectour to be the onely true Heir to the Crown, persuading the Citizens that they should therefore joyn with the Nobility in Petitioning the Protectour to take the Government of the Realm upon him, according to his very right and just Title. The next day the Mayor, Aldermen and Chief Commoners of the City reforted unto the Protectour to Baynards-Castle ; whither also repaired Buckingham and other Nobles, with many Knights and Gentlemen. When they were met together, Buckingham desired the Protectour's pardon and licence to acquaint his Grace with the intent of their coming, (as though he had not known it before) which in short was to beseech him to take the Crown and Government of the Realm upon him. At which words the Protectour began to look angrily, withall denying to yield thereto. Whereupon his Privado Buckingham threatned, saying, That if he would not, they would find out some other man that should, for they were resolved that King Edward's Lineage should no longer Reign over them ; and then Richard was pleased to accept the Crown as his just right, the people thereat shouting and crying, King Richard, King Richard.

## RICHARD III.

June 22.  
A.D.  
1483.

**RICHARD** the Third, Son of *Richard Duke of York*, was born with all his teeth, and hair to his shoulders. This his monstrous birth foreshewing his monstrous conditions and proceedings. June 22, he was by the Nobility and Citizens of London elected King of *England*, and afterward by Act of Parliament was confirmed. On June 25 he took his seat in the *Kings-bench Court*, and there pronounced pardon of all offences committed against him. On July 4. he came to the Tower, where he Created Estates, ordained the Knights of the Bath, set at liberty the A.B. of *York*, and the Lord *Stanley*; and July 6. was anointed and Crowned at *Westminster*. But this Usurper well knowing that whilst his young Nephews were living the Crown would not stand firm on his head, he therefore employs Sir *James Tirrel*, a man of an aspiring spirit, to procure these Childrens destruction; which accordingly he did. For about midnight *Miles Forest*, and *John Dighton*, *Tirrell's* bloody instruments, came into the Chamber where the young King and his Brother lay, and suddenly wrapt them up in the Bed-cloths, keeping by force the Featherbed and Pillows hard upon their mouths, that they were therein smothered to death. This villany done, Sir *James* caused the Murtherers to bury their bodies at the stairs foot, somewhat deep in the ground under a great heap of stones; though afterward King *Richard* caused them to be taken up, inclosed in Lead, and to be cast into a place called the *Black deeps* at the *Thames* mouth. But the justice of God pursued the Murtherers, for *Forest* rotted away piece-meal, *Tirrel* died for Treason under *Henry VII*, and *Dighton* lived and died a vagabond beyond the Seas. And the Usurper after this detestable

## RICHARD III.

229

detestable fact, never had quiet in his mind, never thought himself secure: but when he went abroad his eyes still whirled about, his body privily fenced, his hand ever on his Dagger, his sleep interrupted with fearfull dreams, sometimes suddenly starting up, leaping out of his bed and running about the Chamber. Immediately also after this Murther began the Conspiracy betwixt the Duke of *Buckingham* and divers other Gentlemen against the Murtherer. The occasion of *Buckingham's* falling off from *Richard* is diversly reported: some say, it was because the King would not grant him the Duke of *Hereford's* lands, to the which he pretended himself the rightfull heir; others impute it to the Duke's high mindedness, that he could not bear the glory of another. Himself said the occasion was the murther of the two Children. But be the occasion what it would, yet this is most sure that this enmity of the Duke's to the King proved of good consequence to the rightfull heirs to the Crown. For hereupon the Duke left the Court, retiring to his own house of *Brecknock*, where he had in his custody that true friend to King *Edward's* Posterity, *John Morton* Bishop of *Ely*, who by his wisedom abused the Duke's pride to his own deliverance, the Duke's destruction, and benefit of such whom the Crown of right appertained. When the Duke was at first become alienated from the King, and come to his own house, he solicited the Bishop his Prisoner to speak his mind freely to him in matters of state; but the Bishop refused, thus answering him, "In good faith, my Lord, I love not much to talk with Princes, as a thing not all out of peril, although the words be without fault; forasmuch as it shall not be taken as the party meant it, but as it pleaseth the Prince to construe it. And ever I think on *Aesop's* tale, that when the Lion had proclaimed that on pain of death there should no horned beast abide in the Wood; one that had in his forehead a bunch of flesh fled away a great pace. The Fox that saw him run so fast, asked him,

" him, Whither he made all that haste ; he answer-  
 " ed, In faith I neither wot not care, so I were  
 " once hence, because of this Proclamation of hor-  
 " ned beasts. What fool ( quoth the Fox ) thou  
 " mayest well enough abide, the Lion meant not  
 " thee, for it is no horn on thy head. No marry,  
 " quoth he, that wot I well enough ; but what and  
 " if he call it an horn, where am I then ? Bytthough  
 the Bishop at the first declin'd talking of State-  
 matters with the Duke, yet afterwards, when by  
 often discoursing with the Duke, and other circum-  
 stances, he found him to be of a proud stomach, and  
 emulated the King's greatness, he would speak his  
 mind frankly enough to him, rendring the Usurper  
 as odious as was possible, by alledging his unnatural-  
 ness to his own Mother, in charging her with de-  
 filing the Marriage-bed, his unnaturalness to his  
 own Brothers and Nephews, in saying they were  
 bastards, his murthering his Nephews, and other  
 enormities. Then, to tickle the Duke's ambition,  
 the Bishop would commend him to be a person of  
 such rare vertues that he merited to wear the  
 Crown himself, inviting him for God's sake and  
 his Countries sake to take the Government upon  
 himself, or otherwise to devise some means how  
 the Realm might be rid of the Tyrant, and brought  
 under some good Gouvernour. When the Duke had  
 pondered a while upon this and the like discourse  
 of the Bishop's, he acquainted the Bishop, That his  
 resolutions were to advance Henry Earl of Richmond,  
 to the Crown, and that the said Earl of Richmond,  
 heir of the Houle of Lancaster, should marry the  
 Lady Elizabeth eldest Daughter of Edward the fourth,  
 by which Marriage the Houses of York and Lancaster  
 should be united into one. All which to effect, the  
 Duke and Bishop first made the Mothers of Eliza-  
 beth and Henry privy hereunto, and employed divers  
 trusty instruments to interest the Nobles and Gentry  
 in the design. Then the Bishop left Brecknock in  
 disguise, and sailed into Flanders, where he did Earl  
 Henry eminent service. Many great persons com-

bined to dethrone the Usurper, which he having  
 knowledge of, sent his loving Letters to the Duke  
 of Buckingham, whom he understood to be head of  
 the Complotters, requesting him most earnestly to  
 come to the Court, for he was in great want of his  
 wise counsel. But the Duke mistrusting his smooth  
 words, excused himself that he was sickly and not  
 well able to travel. The King thierefore sent his  
 commands to him, and threats withall, if he refused  
 to give his attendance ; unto which the Duke sent  
 his resolute answer, That he would not come to  
 his mortal enemy ; and immediately prepared War  
 against him. Then Thomas Marques Dorset came out  
 of Sanctuary, and also gathered a band of men in  
 the North, Sir Edward Courtenay and his Brother the  
 Bishop of Excester, raised another Army, in Devon-  
 shire and Cornwall, and in Kent Sir Richard Guilford and  
 other Gentlemen raised a party, all which was done in  
 a moment. But the Usurper marching with his Host  
 against the Duke's forces, which were most Welsh, they  
 for want of pay and other provision brake up their  
 Camp, and left the Duke to shift for himself, which  
 when the Confederates understood, they also dis-  
 persed themselves. The Duke of Buckingham in dis-  
 guise repaired for security unto a servant of his  
 near Shrewsbury, named Humphrey Banister, but the King  
 by Proclamation promising great rewards to him  
 that should detect the Duke, that wretch Banister  
 for the hope of gain betrayed his Master the Duke.  
 Who with a guard of men was conveyed to Salis-  
 bury, where without arraignment or judgment the  
 Duke lost his head. Howbeit the Traitor Banister  
 did not onely lose his promised reward, but also re-  
 ceived just punishments from Heaven ; for his eldest  
 Son fell mad, and so died in a Hogstie, his second Son  
 became deformed and lame in his limbs, his third  
 Son was drowned in a small puddle of water, his el-  
 dest Daughter was struck with a foul Leprosie, and  
 himself being of extreme age was found guilty of  
 murther, but saved by his Clergy. Divers of the  
 Earl of Richmond's party were put to death, and so  
 jealous

jealous was the King now of his ill-gotten greatness, that he stored the Sea-coasts with Armies of men, furnished the Ports with store of munition, and made all things ready to prevent Earl *Henry's* arrival; caused a Parliament to be assembled at *Westminster*, wherein the said Earl, and all such as had fled the Land in his behalf, were attainted, and were made enemies to their native Countrey, their Goods confiscate, their Lands and possessions condemned to the Kings use. Moreover the Usurper sent his Agents laden with Gold and many gay promises to the Duke of *Britain*, offering what not if he would either send Earl *Henry* into *England*, or commit him there into Prison; but the Duke himself lying extreme sick, his Treasurer *Peter Landoſe*, corrupted with Gold, had betrayed the Earl into *Richard's* hands, had not the Earl had timely notice of it and prevented it by a speedy escape unto the French Court, where he received great favours: Dr. *Richard Fox* then a student in *Paris* was eminently serviceable to the Earl in that Nation. And the Duke of *Britain*, when he understood the treachery of *Landoſe* was highly displeased, and continued a favourer of the Earl and his Cause. But all these things, with many more, were against King *Richard*, which he very well foresaw, though he knew not well how to remedy: yet that he might make his Title and interest as good as he could, he devised to marry with his Neece the Princess *Elizabeth*; but his Queen *Ann* stood in his way to this for the present, though not long, for she fell into the remorseless hands of death, but whether a natural or violent, is not well known. After which *Richard* courts the Lady *Elizabeth*, his own Brothers daughter, though in vain, for she abhorred the motion. Howbeit when *Henry* heard of *Richard's* attempts herein, and not knowing what time, through flattery and persuasions from some persons, might do upon the young Princess her good nature, he hastened for *England*, setting sail from *Harfleſt* with about 200 men, *August 15*, and arrived at *Milford-Haven* the seventh

seventh day following, from whence he advanced towards *Shrewsbury*. On his way to which place there met him Sir *Rice ap Thomas*, a man of great command in *Wales*, with a great body of men, to side in his quarrel, which Earl *Henry* afterwards requited by making this his first Aider Governor of *Wales*: From *Shrewsbury* the Earl marched to *Newport*, where Sir *Gilbert Talbot* met him with two thousand men from the Earl of *Shrewsbury*. Thence he passed to *Litchfield*, where he was honourably received. But when the Usurper understood that the Earl daily increased in strengths, and that he was advanced so far without any opposition, from his Court at *Nottingham*, he set forth his Host to meet the Earl, which he did near unto *Market-Bosworth* in *Leicestershire*. His Vant-guard he disposed of a marvellous length, to strike the more terrore into the hearts of his foes, the leading whereof was committed to *John Duke of Norfolk*. His own Battalion was furnished with the best approved men of War. When he had ordered his Army for fight, he animated his followers to behave themselves gallantly; alledging to them, that it was against a company of *Runnagates*, *Thieves*, *Outlaws*, *Traitors*, *beggarly Britains*, and faint-hearted *French-men*, that they were to fight, who would oppress and spoil them of their Lands, Wives and Children; that these their enemies were such Cowards, that they would fly faster from them than the silly Hart before the Hound; that the Earl of *Richmond*, Captain of the rebellion, was but a *Welſh Milk-sop*. For their love to him their Prince, their zeal to their native Countrey, he wished them that day to shew their *English* valour, assuring them that for his part he would either triumph in a glorious victory, or die in the quarrel with immortal fame. Now *St. George* for us, and us for victory, faith he; Haste therefore forward, and remember this, that I am he that with high advancement will prefer the valiant and hardy, and with severe torture will punish the dastard and cowardly run-away. The Earl of *Richmond's* forefront was commanded by the Earl of *Oxford*, the right wing by Sir *Gilbert Talbot*, the left by Sir

Sir John Savage, the main Battel by the Earl himself, and his Uncle Jasper. When the Earl had ordered his small Host, consisting of about 5000 men, he rode from rank to rank, and wing to wing, encouraging his followers to fight: alledging the justness of their quarrel, which God would bless; assuring them that for so good a cause as to free the Land of a Monster, a Tyrant, a Murtherer, he would that day rather become a dead carrion upon the ground, than a Carpet-Prisoner kept alive for reproach. Advance therefore forward, saith he, like true hearted English-men, display your Banner in defence of your Countrey, get the day and be Conquerors, lose the day and be villains. God and St. George give us a happy success: Then immediately a fierce Battel commenced, and was manfully continued on either part. At length the King having intelligence that Earl Henry was but slenderly accompanied with men of Arms, he therefore with his Spear in the Rest ran violently towards the Earl, in which rage at the first brunt he bare down and overthrew the Earl's Standard, slew Sir William Brandon the bearer thereof, next encountered Sir John Cheyne, whom he threw to the ground, thereby making an open passage to the Earl himself. In which very instant, when the Earl was like to be distressed, the Lord Stanley sent in aids of fresh Souldiers (under the leading of Sir William Stanley) which were raised as he pretended for Richard, but intended them when he should see his time for Richmond's service: These entered the fight with such courage, that they put the Usurper's forces to flight; when the Usurper closing His Helmet, said to such that brought him a swift horse for his escape, This day shall finish all battels, or else I will finish my life. So thrusting into the throng of his enemies, he manfully fighting died in the place. A.D. 1485. Aug. 22. There died with him that day the Duke of Norfolk, the Lord Ferrers of Chartley, Sir Richard Ratcliff, Sir Robert Brakenbury. The number of both parts slain in the field were 4000. Sir William Catesby with two other persons of quality were taken: and two days after were beheaded at

Leicester

Leicester. Thomas Howard Earl of Surrey, the Duke of Norfolk's son and heir, being then also taken prisoner, the Earl of Richmond demanded of him how he durst bear Arms in behalf of that Tyrant Richard? to which he answered, he was my Crowned King, and if the Parliamentary authority of England set the Crown upon a stock, I will fight for that stock. And as I fought then for him, I will fight for you when you are established by the said Authority. King Richard's Crown, which was taken amongst the spoils of the field, the Lord Stanley Earl of Derby set upon Earl Henry's head. The slain body of the Usurper all tug'd and torn, stark naked was trussed behind Blanch St. Lieger a Pursevant at Arms, like a Hog on Calf, the Head and Armes hanging on one side of the Horse, and his Legs on the other, after which manner it was brought to Leicester, where it was buried in the Grey-Friars Church. The stone Chest wherein his Corps lay, was at length made a Drinking-trough for Horses at a common Inn: His body, if you will credit tradition herein, was born out of the City and contemptuously bestowed under Bowbridge.

His Wife was Ann the Daughter of Richard Nevil Earl of Warwick and Salisbury, (Surnamed the Make-King) who was first married to Edward Prince of Wales, Son to King Henry the 6<sup>th</sup>, and after his death to this Usurper, 1472. His Issue was Edward Earl of Salisbury created Prince of Wales 1483, the Crown also being intailed to him by Parliament, but died before his Father.

He founded a College at Middleham beyond York, and a Collegiate Chantry in London, called our Lady of Barking. He endowed Queens College in Cambridge with 500 Marks of yearly revenue. He disforested the great field of Whichwood that King Edward his brother had inclosed for his Game, and made some good Laws; and when divers Shires of England offered him benevolence, he refused, saying, I had rather have your hearts than your money. This scoffing Rhyme was divulged in contempt of the Usurper Richard, and his three principal Creatures:

The

*The Cat, the Rat, and Lovell, the Dog,  
Rule all England under the Hog.*

The Cat and Rat meant of *Catesby* and *Ratcliffe*, the Dog of *Lovell*, that creature belonging to the Lord *Lovell's* Arms, and the Hog of King *Richard*, whose cognisance it was. But *William Collingbourn Esquire* who had been Sheriff of *Wiltshire* and *Devonshire*, was upon *Tower-Hill* executed with all extremity as Authour thereof.

The Usurper borrowed great Sums of Money of the City of *London*, but was cut off before the pay-day came. It may be more of his Quality have died in the City's debt.

Fami-

## Families of *Lancaster* and *York* united.

### HENRY VII.

**H**ENRY Earl of *Richmond* was Son to *Margaret Countess of Richmond and Derby*, Daughter to *John Duke of Somerset*, Son to *John Earl of Somerset*, Son to *John of Gaunt Duke of Lancaster* fourth Son of *Edward the Third*.

October the 30th. A.D. 1485. was Henry crowned at *Westminster*. Then the better to secure his Estate he shut up the Earl of *Warwick*, the onely son and heir of *George Duke of Clarence*, in the Tower of *London*. Then instituted a guard for his person, consisting of a number of choice Archers, with allotment of Fees and Maintenance under a peculiar Captain, by the name of *Yeomen of the Guard* for him and his Successours. November the seventh was a Parliament assembled at *Westminster*, at the sitting whereof *Richard the late Usurper* was attainted, and with him many of the Nobility and Gentry. Free pardon was also given to all such (saving the persons excepted by name) as should presently submit themselves to the King's mercy. Reversed also were all former Acts hurtfull either to the King or his Friends, and the Crown was established upon the King and his Heirs for ever. Next the King assumed into his Council those two renowned Agents in advancing his fortunes, *John Morton* and *Richard Fox*.

A.D. 1486. and January the eighteenth he married the Lady *Elizabeth*, eldest daughter of King *Edward the Fourth*, to the utter abolishment of all Hostilities between the two Houses of *York* and *Lancaster*. But

Aug. 22.  
A.D.  
1485.

John  
Morton,  
A.B. Can.  
~~~~~

But there wanted not some malecontents who assayed to disturb these serene days; for the Lord Lovell, one of the late Usurper's Creatures, with Sir Humphrey Stafford and his brother assembled Forces against the King, which upon but the news of an Army coming against them dispersed themselves. Sir Humphrey was taken out of sanctuary and executed at Tyburn.

When this storm was over, the White Rose or York Faction raised another, procuring one Lambert Symnel to personate one of King Edward's sons. Which Puppet Lambert was conveyed into Ireland where the Irish adhered to him, and in Christ-church in Dublin crowned him King of England. And into Ireland the Dutchess Dowager of Burgundy, sister to Edward the Fourth sent this Impostour two thousand Souldiers under the conduct of Colonel Swart. These with Irish and some English joined to them, landed in Lancashire at the Pile of Fowdray; thence they took their march through York-shire, so toward Newark, every-where as they came proclaiming their new King. Not far from Newark, and near to a little Village called Stoke, the King with his Army encountr'd them, where the Fight continued doubtfull for about three hours, but at last the victory fell to King Henry. On Lambert's part were slain the Earl of Lincoln, the Lord Lovell, Sir Thomas Broughton, Colonel Swart and Maurice Fitz-Thomas with four thousand Souldiers. On the King's side fell not any man of honour, but almost half his Vant-guard was slain, so that the Garland was dipt in bloud. Amongst the Prisoners that were taken was the counterfeit King, who had been a Scholar in Oxford, and his Tutoir Richard Simon a Priest. Lambert confessed his Parents to be mean Persons, and of a mean Calling. Him the King condemned to his Kitchin or Scullery, at length promoted him to be one of his Falconers, in which estate he continued till his death. Sim: Subtle, or Richard Simon was condemned to a Dungeon and perpetual Shackles.

Stokes

Stoken-field battel was fought, A.D. 1487. June 16. being Saturday, A day of the week observed to have been lucky to this Prince Henry; who sent his Royal Standard to our Ladies Church of Walsingham in Norfolk, there to remain as a Monument of this his Victory, and gratitude for it. And now the King dispatcheth his Agent into Scotland, there to settle amity with James the Third, and to prevent the retreat and protection that his Enemies had found therein. Shortly after which some discontented persons in York-shire rose in arms under pretence that they were oppressed in their Tax or Subsidy; but some of these Rebels were routed by the Earl of Surrey, who took their Leader John a-Chamber prisoner, and upon the hearing of the King's approach, the rest of them under the leading of Sir John Egremond dispersed themselves. John a-Chamber with some others of the chief of the Rebels were executed at York. The King's affairs being settled in a present peaceable estate at home, he was next ingaged in a War with France; For the carrying on of which, his Subjects did largely contribute, chiefly the City of London, out of which he received for his furniture in that voyage almost ten thousand pounds from the Commoners, and two hundred pounds besides from every Alderman. And this wise King knowing how great a strength that rich City was to him, humoured the Citizens exceedingly. Himself did not only become one amongst them, causing himself to be entred a Brother of the Merchant-tailour's Company, but also wore the habit at a publick Feast, and sate as Master of the Company.

A.D. 1492. October the sixth, King Henry with his Host landed at Calais, from whence with his whole forces he marched toward Boloigne, which when he had besieged, Articles of Peace were concluded betwixt him and the King of France. For King Henry before his going out of England had been dealt with on the French King's behalf to accept of Conditions, but would not enter into any Treaty with him, till he was in the Field, and that with such a puissance,

as

as was likely enough to force his own Conditions. When Henry had to his advantage settled his trasnaring affairs he returned for *England*, where he was not to remain long in quiet, for the Dutches of *Burgundy* had provided another counterfeit King, a youth of a Princely personage, called *Peter Warbeck* the son of a converted Jew. This her creature *Peter*, or as some called him *Perkin* and *Peterkin*, under the name and title of *Richard Plantaginet*, second son of King *Edward the Fourth*, had great honour given him by the King of *France*. And divers persons of eminency in *England* were so deluded, that they believed him to be the true *Richard*, and thereupon sought to advance him to the Crown, which cost some of them the price of their heads, as the Lord *Fitz-Walter*, Sir *Simon Montford*, Sir *William Stanley* Lord Chamberlain that gained the Victory for King *Henry* at *Bosworth-field*. These with more were put to death for favouring of *Perkin*. The King also for the farther prevention of dangers, caused the Coasts of *England* to be strongly guarded, sent a new Lord Chancellour into *Ireland*, *Henry Denny* a Monk of *Langton-abby*, and Sir *Edward Poynings* with some Forces, whose greatest care and diligence was to punish such as before-time had given any assistance to the Mock-king, and to restrain such as were likely to doe so in time to come. The Earl of *Kildare* falling under suspicion, *Poynings* sent prisoner into *England* where the King did gratisly hear and admit his defences, and returned him with honour and continuation of authority. The *Irish* had formerly exhibited many Articles against this Earl, the last of which was; Finally, all *Ireland* cannot rule this Earl, Then, quoth the King, shall this Earl rule all *Ireland*, constituting him Lord-deputy thereof. But *Perkin* having gained private assistance from the *French King*, and *Maximilian*, to strengthen yet his enterprise, he repairs into *Scotland* unto *James the Fourth*, (having special recommendations from the King of *France*, and Dutches of *Burgundy*) who gave him most curteous entertainment. The rare impudency of the youth, and that

con-

connexion which his darings had with other Princes, drew this King into an error concerning him. When he was first brought to the presence of the King of *Scots*, with a right Princely gracefulness he declared to the said King, That *Edward the Fourth* leaving two sons *Edward* and *Richard* both very young, their unnatural Uncle *Richard* to obtain the Crown purposed the murther of them both; but the instruments of his cruelty having murthered his elder brother the young King were moved with pity to spare his life, and that thus saved by the mercy of God, he was privately conveyed beyond the Seas (the world supposing that himself also had been murthered.) And that *Henry Tudor* Earl of *Richmond*, after he had by subtile and foul means obtained the Crown, he then wrought all means and ways to procure the final destruction of him the rightfull Heir to the *English Diadem*. That his said mortal enemy *Henry* hath not onely falsely surmised him to be a feigned person, giving him Nick-names, so abusing the world; but that also to deprive him of his right, he had offered large Sums of Money to corrupt the Prince's with whom he had been retained, and had employ'd his servants to murther him. That every man of reason might well understand that the said *Henry* needed not to have taken these courses against him, had he been a feigned person. That the Truth his manifest cause had moved the King of *France*, and Dutches of *Burgundy* his most dear Aunt, to yield him their assistance. That now, because the Kings of *Scotland* were wont to support them who were spoiled and bereft of the said Kingdom of *England*, and for that he, the said K. *James* had given clear signs that he was of the like Noble quality and temper with his Ancestours, he so distressed a Prince came to put himself into his hands, desiring his aid to recover his Realms, promising faithfully that when his Kingdoms were regained; he would gratefully doe him all the pleasure that shold lie in his utmost power.

The

## HENRY VII.

The King of *Scots* was so influenced with this Impostour's words, amiable person, Princely deportment, recommendations of Princes; his aids from the *Irish*, and assured hope of aid in *England*, that he honourably received him, as if he had been the very *Richard Duke of York*, and gave his consent that this pretended Duke should marry the Lady *Catharine Gourdon*, daughter to the Earl of *Huntley*, which accordingly he did, and also prepared to invade *England* in his quarrel, although there wanted not them, who with many arguments advised this King to repute him for no other than a Cheat.

King *Henry* that he might be prepared for the *Scots*, called a Parliament which granted a Tax to be gathered of sixscore thousand pounds, the Levy of which money kindled a dangerous fire in *England*; for when the King's Collectours came amongst the *Cornish-men* to receive their proportion of the Tax, they tumultuously assembled under the leading of one *Thomas Flammock* a Lawyer, and *Michael Joseph* a Black-smith of *Bodnam*. Which Captains led their rout towards *Kent*, and at *Wells* James *Tuchet* Lord *Audley* joined with them. From *Wells* they proceeded to *Black-beath*, where the King's Forces defeated them without much labour; fifteen hundred of the Rebels were taken, and the Takers had their Prisoner's goods granted them.

*James Lord Audley* was led from *New-gate* to *Tower-hill*, in a Coat of his own Armories painted on a Paper reverst and torn, where he was executed. *Flammock* and the *Smith* were quartered. Memorably strange was the comfort that the *Smith* cheared himself withall, as he was drawing to his execution, to wit, *That yet he hoped that by this means, his name and memory should be everlasting*.

The King's care was now to order the War against *Scotland*, whither he sent the Earl of *Surrey* with an Army to invade the *Scotch* borders, as they had lately done the *English*. The Earl pursued the revenge with great vehemency, but in short time, by the King of *Spain*'s mediation, a Truce was concluded betwixt the two Nations: One Article of which Truce

## HENRY VII.

Truce was, That *Perkin* should be no longer fostered in *Scotland*. Whereupon he withdraws into *Ireland*, whither the *Cornish-men* sent to him, inviting him amongst them, promising that at his arrival they would venture their lives and fortunes for him, as hoping that under his government they should be eased of their Taxes. *Perkin* accepting their invitation landed at *Whitsand-bay* in *Cornwall*, after whose arrival some thousands of People resorted to him.

When King *Henry* heard of his landing, and making head against him, he smiled, saying, *Loy we are again provoked by this Prince of Rake-hells*; but lest my People should through ignorance be drawn into destruction, let us seek to take this *Perkin* by the easiest way we can. He therefore assembled his Forces, and sent out his Spies to observe the track and hopes of Prince *Peterkin*, who had now besieged the loyal City of *Exeter*, which would neither yield to his fine promises nor his threats and violence, but valiantly withstood him, till they were relieved by *Edward Courtney* Earl of *Devonshire* and other good Subjects, that forced the Rebels away from before the City. Which Rebels now understanding what great preparations were made against them, began many of them to drop away from their new King, and *Perkin* himself secretly fled, and took sanctuary at *Beaulieu* in *Newforest*, out of which sanctuary upon the King's offer of life to him, and oblivion of his crimes, he gladly came forth, and put himself into the King's hands, by whose order he was conveyed to *London*, where the King by curious and often examination of him, came to the full knowledge of that his heart desired. The chief matter of which confession, the King caused to be published in print.

But the Imaginary King *Perkin* indeavouring to make an escape, from such that had the charge of him (after undergoing of some publick shame for that attempt) was committed to the Tower, where he by his insinuations and promises had corrupted his Keepers to set himself and the Earl of *Warwick* at large, (to which design of escaping, the poor Earl is said to have

Thomas have consented.) Perkin for this conspiracy had his Langton. Trial at Westminster, and was condemned, and being A.B. Cant. drawn to Tiburn had the sentence of death executed upon him. At the Gallows Perkin did reade his own confession, therein owning himself to have been born in the Town of Tourney in Flanders, of such parents, whom he named, and that being come into Ireland to see the Countrey, he was there wrought upon to personate Richard Duke of York, &c. Thus died (if I be not deceived) a deceiver, A.D. 1499.

The Earl of Warwick was publickly arraigned for minding to have escaped out of the Tower, and consequently to deprive King Henry of his Crown and Dignity, and to usurp the Title and Sovereign office, all which strained charge the Earl by false friends (tis said) was perswaded to confess. So lost his head upon Tower-Hill, and was buried at Bisham by his Alices stors. Thus died the last Heir Male of the blood and Surname of Plantaginet. It is said, that in the eyes of the Castilians (who had secretly agreed with King Henry to match their Princess Catharine with Prince Arthur) there could be no ground for succession whilst the Earl of Warwick lived. And the said Lady Catharine, when the Divorce was afterward prosecuted against her, by her Husband King Henry the eighth, is reported to have said, That it was the hand of God, for that to clear the way to the marriage, that innocent Earl of Warwick was put to unworthy death.

A.D. 1506. Edmund de la Pole Earl of Suffolk wilfully slew a common person in his fury, for the which King Henry caused him to be arraigned; the fact he was perswaded to confess and had pardon. But the Earl as a Prince of the blood (his mother being sister to Edward the fourth) held himself disgraced, by having been seen at the King's-bench-bar, a Prisoner, therefore in discontent fled to his Aunt the Dutchesse of Burgundy; but within a while after he returned into England, and the year following (his spirit not yet being laid) fled again, after he had first complotted to disturb the King's peace. Whereupon King Henry applied

applied himself to his wonted Art, for learning the Henry secrets of his Enemies, employing Sir Robert Curzon to Dean and feign himself a friend to Pole, thereby to get himself William into his bosome for the finding out of his secret designs and correspondents. Many great persons for A. Bps. Pole's cause were committed to Prison; some were Cant. put to death as Sir James Terrel, and Sir John Windham, who lost their heads on Tower-Hill, and three other persons who were executed in other places. And the more to disanimate de la Pole's complices and favourers, King Henry had procured from Pope Alexander the sixth, an Excommunication, and Curse against Pole, Sir Robert Curzon and five other persons by special name, and generally all others that should aid the Earl against the King. Sir Robert Curzon was named on purpose to make de la Pole secure of him. Neither did the King leave here, for he so prevailed with the Pope, as he decreed by Bull, That no person should afterward have privilege of Sanctuary, who had once taken the same, and came forth again, and that if any Sanctuary-man, should afterward commit any Murther, Robery, Sacrilege, Treason, &c. He should by lay force be drawn thence to suffer due punishment. And now Suffolk perceiving himself stript of all future hope of endamaging the King, he put himself into the grace and protection of Philip King of Spain with whom he remained in banishment, till King Philip was driven by tempest into England, at which time King Henry prevailed with him to deliver Pole into his hands upon promise that he would spare his life. And accordingly at Philip's return home Pole was sent into England, and then committed to the Tower. King Henry thus secured of this hazard, bestowed his ages care in gathering of money, though by some such ways as seemed none of the justest.

Empson and Dudley two Lawyers, were his instruments for the bringing in of Money to fill his Exchequer. These called the richer sort of Subjects into question for the breach of old penal Laws, long before discontinued and forgotten. The courses they

they took in the execution of their employment, was for one of them to outlaw persons privately, and then to seize their Estates, forcing them to chargeable compositions with the King, and heavy bribes to themselves.

Another detestable practice of theirs, was to have false *Jurors* and *King-leaders* of false *Jurors*, who would never give in any verdict against their Patrons *Empson* and *Dudley*, insomuch that if any stood out in Law these Sons of *Belial* squared the destiny of their causes: By these means many honest and worthy Subjects were rigorously fined, imprisoned or otherwise afflicted. But the King falling sick of a consuming disease, by the means of good Counsel, he inclined to grant to all men general Pardons, certain onely excepted, and ordained that all such Moneys should be restored as had been unjustly levied by his Officers. He died A. D. 1509. Apr. 22.

His Wife was *Elizabeth* eldest Daughter of King *Edward* the fourth, who died 1503.

His Issue by her was *Arthur* who died at *Ludlow* 1502. aged fifteen years, and was buried in the Cathedral Church of St. Mary's in *Worcester*; *Henry*, *Edmund* Duke of *Somerset* was born 1495. and died at *Bishops-Hatfield* 1499. *Margaret* was born 1489. and at the age of fourteen was married to *James* the fourth King of *Scotland*, and after his death unto *Archibald Douglas* Earl of *Angus*, to whom she bare *Margaret*, who married *Matthew Steward* Earl of *Lenox*, and had by him *Henry Lord Dernly* who married *Mary Queen of Scots* by whom he had King *James the sixth*.

*Elizabeth* died in her childhood. *Mary* first married to old *Lewis* the twelfth King of *France*, and after his death re-married to that famous *Charles Brandon* Duke of *Suffolk*. *Catharine* who died young.

King Henry left at his death, 180000*l.* in ready money. He founded the *Hospital of the Savoy*, founded six religious Houses for *Franciscan Friars*, built the Palace of *Richmond* where he died, and that Chapel of *Westminster* called by his name, where he was buried. He exceedingly honoured that devout King

King *Henry* the sixth, whom he laboured to have had canonized for a Saint, but *Pope Julio* held that honour at too dear a Rate. His Mother-in-law, Queen to *Edward* the fourth, he deprived of her Estate, and confined to the *Monastery of Bermondsey in Southwark*: one cause pretended for it, was, for that she had yielded up her daughter into the hand of the Usurper *Richard*, contrary to her faith given to them who were in the plot for bringing in of *Henry*. This unfortunate Queen was so wheedled into a Fools-Paradise by the Usurper *Richard*'s instruments, that forgetting the murther of her Sons, the dishonour of the King her Husband, the bastardy of her Children, and her own scandal for Sorcery, also the faithfull Promise she made to Lady *Margaret* the Earl of *Richmond*'s Mother, she delivered her five daughters out of *Sandtuary* into the Usurper's hands. A. D. 1498, A *Cordwainer*'s son was hanged at St. *Thomas Waterings*, for assuming the name and Title of the Earl of *Warwick*, thereby to raise disturbances.

Wheat was sold at *London* in some time of this King's Reign for three shillings a bushel, and at another time for six pence the bushel.

## H E N R Y VIII.

April 22.  
A. D.  
1509.

**H**E NRY the Eighth was born at Greenwich, June 22, 1491. His youth was so trained up in literature that he was accounted the most learned Prince of Christendom. In A. D. 1509, and June 25, he was Crowned at Westminster, together with his Queen Catharine, the Relict of his Brother Arthur, by William Warham Arch-Bishop of Canterbury. His Counsellors he chose of the gravest Divines and wisest Nobility, with whom he not onely often sate to the great encrease of his politick experience, but would also yield his authority to their wisedoms.

Empson and Dudley he caused to be imprisoned, then to be brought to their Trial, and at last to lose their heads. To regain the ancient rites of England he first sent his Herald Clarendieux into France, roughly demanding the Dutchies of Normandy, Guyen, Main and Anjou, and with them the Crown of France: Then sent certain Nobles before him thither, and afterward followed himself pitching down his Tents before Terwin; Where he raised his Royal Standard of the Red-Dragon, and begirt the City with a strait Siege. To which place Maximilian the Emperour repaired, and to the great honour of Henry entred into his pay, wearing the Cross of St. George, with a Rose (the King's Badge) as his faithfull Souldier. The French attempting to relieve the Town with victuals and men, were so encountring by King Henry, that many of their chiefest Captains were taken prisoners and six of their standards won, and the rest of the Monsieurs for safeguard of life so posted away, that this conflict was called the battel of Spurs, shortly after which the Town yielded unto the King. Then was the siege removed to Tournay, which in short time was also surrendered to the King with ten thousand pounds sterlign for the Citizens redemption,

## H E N R Y VIII.

249

demption, who to the number of 80000, then took their Oaths to become his true Subjects, 1513. The safe keeping of this City the King committed to Sir Edward Poynings Knight of the Garter, and ordained Thomas Wolsey Bishop of Tournay.

Whilst King Henry was busie in France, his Lieutenant Thomas Earl of Surrey marched against the Scots who were entred into Northumberland, and at Flodden the Armies engaged in fight, and the English won the day. In this battel King James of Scotland was slain, one Arch bishop, two Bishops, two Abbats, twelve Earls, seventeen Lords, Knights and Gentlemen a great number, in all about eight thousand were slain, and almost as many taken Prisoners in Anno Dom. 1513. Sept. 9.

A. D. 1514. by the procurement of Pope Leo a peace was concluded betwixt the King of France and England, immediately after which, Mary the Sister of King Henry was honourably conducted into France, where at Albeville October the ninth, she was married unto old King Louis, who died eighty two days after the Marriage.

A. D. 1517. by reason of the great concourse of strangers at London to the hindrance of trade, and their insolency towards the English, the youth and vulgar sort of Citizens, upon May-day assaulted these strangers, doing much harm to their Houses, Substance, and some of their persons, for which riotous offence John Lincoln the instigatour thereof was hanged, and four hundred men and youths with eleven women were led in ropes along the City in their Shirts, with halters about their necks to Westminster, where the King pardoned their offence to the great rejoicing of the Londoners.

A.D. 1519. was the City of Tournay delivered back to the French on these Conditions, that they should pay to King Henry six hundred thousand Crowns in twelve years; that the Dauphin should marry the Lady Mary, King Henry's young Daughter, which marriage if it hapned not to take effect at the years of consent, then Tournay should be re-delivered to the English; that Cardinal

## HENRY VIII.

Cardinal Wolsey should have a thousand Marks paid him yearly for the revenues of the said Bishoprick.

A.D. 1521. Edward Stafford Duke of Buckingham was beheaded on Tower-hill, for imagining to destroy the King, and to enjoy the Crown himself. Wolsey was the Duke's grand adversary, because that the Duke had sometime spoken certain words to his disgrace. About this time the Pope sent his Legats about, to incite the Christian Princes to attempt the recovery of the Holy-Land, sending Cardinal Campeius on this errand into England. Which Cardinal and his company being come to London, as they passed through Cheapside, the Sumpture-Mules cast their Carriages and Coffers on the ground, out of which, the lids flying open, fell old Breeches, Boots and broken Shoes, torn Stockins, tattered Rags, old Iron and Horse-Shoes, broken Meat, Marrow Bones, roasted Eggs, and Crusts of Bread, with such-like Treasure.

About A.D. 1521. the Emperour Charles passing toward Spain landed at Dover, where the King met him, and conducted him in great state to London, lodging him in his new Palace in the Black-Friars, then feasted him at Windsor; and in such bands of amity the Emperour and King Henry seemed to be link'd, that in London this Sentence was set up in the Guild-Hall over the Door of the Council-Chamber, *Carolus, Henricus vivant, Defensor uterque, Henricus fidei, Carolus Ecclesiae.* The reason of which Titles Defender of the Faith and Church was, for that Charles the Emperour had directed forth a solemn Writ of Out-lawry against Doctor Martin Luther who had then given a great blow to the Triple Crown; and King Henry had wrote a Book against the said Luther, for the which the Pope gave the Title of Defender of the Church to the Emperour, and Defender of the Faith to the King, and for the same cause he sent King Henry a consecrated Rose.

A new variance hapning again betwixt the Kingdoms of France and England, the King assembled a Parli-

## HENRY VIII.

Parliament at the Black-Friars in London which granted him half of the yearly revenues of all Spiritual livings to be paid for five years continuance, and the tenth part of all temporal substance to carry on the Wars against France and Scotland. When the King being furnished with money sent a great Army into France under the conduct of Charles Brandon Duke of Suffolk, who had married Mary, the King's sister, Queen Dowager of France. This valiant Commander first besieged and won Bell-Castle, then took the Castle of Bonguard, Braie, Roie, Libome, Mondedier and Boghan; which done he returned. King Henry was so enraged against the Scots, that he took from all those inhabiting England all their goods sending them into their Countrey on foot, with white Crosses sewed upon their uppermost garments. But Margaret Queen of Scots soliciting her Brother Henry for a peace; the difference betwixt the two Nations was for a while reconciled.

About A.D. 1525. arose great troubles in Ireland, the wild Irish casting off all obedience and killing many of the King's English Subjects. Gerald Fitz-Gerald Earl of Kildare was sent Prisoner into England, for that the Earl of Offery had accused him of many misdemeanours; as, that he connived at the Earl of Desmond's escape, whom he should have attached by order from the King; That he grew over-familiar with the Irish, and that he put to death the King's best Subjects. When the Earl was brought to London he was committed to the Tower by the Cardinal's means, who did not love him. In the Tower he expected death daily, but with such courageous resolution, that being at slide-groat with the Lieutenant when the Mandate was brought for his Execution on the morrow morning, and seeing the Lieutenant struck into a sudden sadness, he said unto him, *By St. Bride Lieutenant, there is some mad game in that scroll, but fall how it will this throw is for a huddle.* And when the worst was told him, he said, *I pray thee Lieutenant do no more but assuredly learn from the King's own mouth, whether his Highness be witting of this or not.* Whereupon the Lieutenant loving the Earl

Earl well, went to the King, and shewed him the Warrant, which the King seeing, controlled the fawsnes of the Priest (for so he then called the Cardinal) and gave the Lieutenant his Signet for a nullity of the Warrant, so the Earl was delivered from the death threatned, and not long after from his imprisonment.

About or in A.D. 1528. King Henry began to call into question the Lawfulness of his marriage with his Queen *Catharine*, who was Daughter to *Ferdinand King of Spain*, and had been married to Prince *Arthur* (eldest Son of *Henry the seventh*) when he was about fifteen years of age, but he dying e'er he had been married twelve months, King *Henry* his Brother by the advice of his Council took this Prince's *Catharine* to Wife in two days after his Father's death, and enjoyed her nuptial society near twenty years, in which time she had born him two sons, both dying in their infancy, and one Daughter named *Mary*, afterward Queen. But now, he said, his Conscience was much dissatisfyed, doubting it might not be lawfull for him to have his Brother's Wife, notwithstanding he had a dispensation from the *Pope* for it; therefore first he refused his Queens bed, and having moved the doubt to his own Divines, he next sent for the opinion of most of the Universities of *Europe*, which concluded against it, and signified so much under most of their common Seals. He also sent Agents unto *Rome* with an humble request to the *Pope*, that an indifferent Judge might be sent to determine this weighty affair.

Whereupon Cardinal *Campeius* was sent over into *England*, with whom Cardinal *Wolsey* was joined in Commission. These Cardinals had a place ordained them in the *Black-Friars* in *London*, for the keeping of their Court of Judicature. To which Court the King and Queen were summoned to appear personally, which accordingly they did, having several seats prepared for them. When the Court was sate, the Cryer called King *Henry* to appear, who forthwith answered Here; Then was the Queen called, who made

made no answer at all, but presently rose up, and going to the King fell on her knees at his feet, and in the audience of the People, said unto him, "Sir, I desire you to take some pity upon me, and doe me Justice and right; I am a poor woman, a stranger born out of your Dominions, having here no indifferent Council, and les assurance of friendship. Alas! Wherein have I offended, or what cause of displeasure have I given you, that you thus intend to put me away? I take God to my Judge I have been to you a true and humble Wife, ever conformable to your will and pleasure, never gain-saying any thing wherein you took delight. Without all grudge or discontented countenance I have loved all them that loved you, howsoeuer their affections have been towards me. I have born you Children, and been your Wife now this twenty years. Of my Virginity and Marriage-bed I make God and your own Conscience the Judge, and if it otherwise be proved, I am content to be put from you with shame. The King your Father in his time for Wisedom was known to be a second *Solon*, and *Ferdinand of Spain* my father accounted the wifest among their Kings, could they in this match be so far over-seen, or are there now wiser and more learned men than at that time were? Surely it seems wonderfull to me that my marriage after twenty years should be thus called in Question with new invention against me, who never intended but honesty. Alas, Sir, I see that I am wronged, having no Council to speak for me but such as are your Subjects, and cannot be indifferent upon my part; therefore I most humbly beseech you, even in charity to stay this course, until I may have Advice and Council from *Spain*; if not your Graces pleasure be done. Then rising and making low obeisance to the King she departed the Court; and though the Crier called her to come into the Court as she was going away, yet she went on, bidding her Attendant to go forward, and saying to him, This is no indifferent Court for me. When the King per-

## HENRY VIII.

perceived that she was departed, he presently spake thus unto the Assembly; I will, quoth he, in her absence declare before you all, that she hath been to me a most true, obedient and comfortable Wife, endued with all vertuous qualities and conditions according to her birth, and in lowliness equals any of baser sort. Which said, Cardinal Wolsey humbly requested the King, that he would be pleased to declare before that honourable Assembly, whether he had been the cause of this his intended Divorce, wherewith he was charged in the opinions of the People? Whereupon the King said, My Lord Cardinal, I can well excuse you in this, and rather affirm, that you have been against me in attempting it thus far. Then by and by the Court was adjourned till May 28. following, which time being come the King's learned Council alledged many reasons and likelihoods to prove that Prince Arthur had Nuptial knowledge of Lady Catharine's Body, as their being both of years capable to explete the Act, he above fifteen, she above seventeen, and both laid in one bed almost five months together, &c.

From day to day the Pleas proceeded, but nothing was concluded touching the Divorce, therefore the King sent the two Cardinals to perswade with the Queen to put the whole matter to himself, which he said would be far better and more honourable for her, than to stand to the trial of the Law. These Legats accordingly repaired to her, she from among her maids at work came forth of an inner room to them, having a skein of white thread about her neck to whom she said, Alack my Lords, I am very sorry to make you attend upon me. What is your will? Madam, quoth Wolsey, we are come in good will to know your Graces mind in this great matter of your Marriage, and to give you our advice with the best service we can. The Queen thanking them said, That by order of holy Church, she was espoused to the King as his true Wife, and in that point she would abide till the Court of Rome (which was privy to the beginning) had made thereof a final determination and

## HENRY VIII.

and end. The King then hopeless of his Queens consent, hasted his Lawyers to forward the Divorce, which daily they did; but when the day appointed was come for the final determination of the matter in question, then Cardinal Campeius reserved it for the Pope himself to conclude. Which so enraged the Duke of Suffolk, that with a stern countenance he said, It was never merry in England since we had any Cardinals amongst us. And Cardinal Wolsey though he sought to excuse himself herein as not having sufficient authority, yet did he fall under the King's high displeasure. The first step of this great Prelate's fall was his dislike of the King's affection unto *Anne Bullen*, a Gentlewoman nothing favourable to his Pontifical pomp, nor no great follower of the Ceremonies of those times of Popery, which moved the Cardinal to write unto the Pope to defer the judgment of Divorce till he had wrought the King's mind in another mould. Which was not done so secretly but it came to the King's ear, and proved to his ruine. For first the Broad-seal was taken from him, and some of his Bishopricks, his house and furniture seized upon, and shortly after he was suddenly arrested by the Earl of Northumberland at *Cawood castle*, (for arrogant words against the King, importing a desire of revenge) from whence he was conveyed toward *London*, in which journey at *Leicester Abby* he ended his life, by taking an over-great quantity of a Confection to break wind from off his stomach. So ended this haughty Cardinal, who was born at *Ipswich*, his father a good honest Butcher, himself a good Philosopher and Oratour. His education in his youth was at *Magdalen College in Oxford*; his first preferment was from the Lord Marquess of *Dorset*, who bestowed a Benefice upon him. Then Sir *John Napier* preferred him to King Henry the Seventh, (For Bishop of *Winchester* being also Wolsey's great friend) which King, having urgent busines with *Maximilian* the Emperour, he sent this his Chaplain to him post, who posted again back before he was thought to be there, and withall concluded some points forgot in his

Th.Cran. his directions, to the high content of his Sovereign,  
 A.B.Cant. for the which he bestowed upon him the Deany of  
 Lincoln, after which he was preferred to be the King's Almoner, then one of his Council, then Bishop of Tournay, then Bishop of Lincoln, then Arch-bishop of York, whereby he became as it were three Bishops at once; then was made Priest, Cardinal, and Legat *de Latere*, then Lord Chancellour, and Bishop of Winchester, and in commendam the Abbey of St. Albans was bestowed upon him. And with them the Cardinal held in farm the Episcopal Sees of Bath and Wells, Worcester and Hereford enjoyed by strangers incumbents not residing in the Realm. This Prelate raised to this greatness was attended with so many officers and servants as is incredible. And being Ambassador to the Emperour at Brussels, he was there waited upon by many English Nobles, and served at the Table by his Servitours on their knees. Insatiable he was to get, but Princely in bestowing, lofty to his enemies, and not easily reconciled, which hastened his fall when he began. The grudges against this Cardinal were not onely for the especial favour he stood in with the King, and great stroke he bare at the Council-table, but for his intolerable pillings, who to patch up his pride in the raising of his new Colleges at Oxford and Ipswich, suppressed fourty Monasteries of good fame, converting all their goods and moveables to his own use. As also that he emptied the Land of twelve-score thousand pounds, inforced by him from the King, which he employed to relieve and ransome the Pope then in Prison, to the great impoverishing of his Majesty's Coffers. And lastly his so intolerable pride as no less than 1200 Horse for his Retinue, eighty Wagons for his Carriage, and sixty Mules for Sumpture-horses attended him into France, when he went thither Ambassador; but, *sic transit gloria mundi*. He built White-hall and Hampton-court. A prodigal and merry conceited Nobleman having lately sold a Manor of an hundred Tenements, came ruffling into the Court in a new suit: saying, am not I a mighty man that bear an hundred Houses

on

on my back? which Cardinal Wolsey hearing, said, You might have better employed it in paying your debts; Truth my Lord, said the Nobleman, you say well, for my Father owed my Master your Father three halspence for a Calves-head, hold, here is two-pence for it. But now whilst the matter of the King's marriage hung in suspence the space of two years, it hapned that Doctor Cranmer said, That the King's cause would easily be determined by the Law of God; which the King hearing of put the Doctor upon the work, who thereupon penned a Treatise, therein proving by Scriptures, General Councils, ancient and modern Writers, that the Bishop of Rome had no authority to dispence with the Word of God, so as contrary thereunto to grant liberty for a man to marry his brother's Wife. This he presented to the King, which when the King had well read, he demanded of the Doctor if he would abide by what he had writ? That I will, said he, by God's grace, even before the Pope himself, if your Majesty shall so appoint. Marry, quoth the King, to him you shall go. And accordingly the King sent Thomas Bulken Earl of Wilshire, Dr. Cranmer and other Divines to the Pope, who was then at Bonony. But when the day of audience was come, and Cranmer prepared to defend what he had writ, on the sudden all was interrupted by an unmannerly Spaniel of the Earl's, which seeing the *Servus Servorum* put forth his foot to be-kissed, got his great Toe in his mouth, 'tis said. But be it so or not, yet this is sure, that there was no conclusion of the matter made by the Pope; therefore King Henry resolved to cut the *Gordian-knot* himself without more ado; and withall began to call in question what authority the Pope had in his Dominions, which being afterward debated in Parliament, an Act passed against his usurped authority or supremacy, and all persons were prohibited from appealing or making any payments to Rome, and the King's Marriage with the Queen Catharine dissolved, and that from thenceforth she should be called onely Princess Dowager. The Parliament made it appear that

S

in

in forty years last past then, the Court of Rome had received from this Kingdom 160000 pounds for Investitures of Bishops.

Whilst the Divorce was under debate, one *Elizabeth Barton* (commonly called the holy Maid of Kent) made a Votress in Canterbury, was taught by *Bocking* a Monk to counterfeit many Trances, and in the same to utter many pious expressions to the rebuke of sin; under which she was heard the more freely against the Doctrine of *Luther*, and the Scriptures translation then desired by many. Also giving forth from God and his Saints, by sundry pretended revelations, That if the King proceeded in his Divorce and second marriage, he should not reign in his Realm one month after, nor rest in his favour one hour. But the imposturism being detected, she and seven of her complices were executed at *Tyburn*, for Treason, and others of them fined and imprisoned.

A.D. 1533, and November the fourteenth was King *Henry* married with *Anne Bullen* Marchioness of *Pembroke* (solemnly so created at *Windſer* the year before) daughter of Sir *Thomas Bullen* Earl of *Wiltshire*, and June the first she was Crowned at *Westminster*, and on September the seventh following she bare into the World that most excellent Princess *Elizabeth*, A.D. 1534.

And A.D. 1535, January 29, She was again delivered of a Child but that was dead: Nor had the Queen her self long to live, for she was accused of Incest, and adultery with her own brother *George Lord Rochford*, who was beheaded for this fact on *Tower-bill*. And May the 19, 1536, this Queen was brought upon a Scaffold erected on the *Green* within the *Tower*, where in the presence of many Noblemen, the Lord Mayor and others, she said, "Good Christian people, I am come hither to die, for according to the Law and by the Law I am judged to death, and therefore will speak nothing against it: I come hither to accuse no man, nor to speak any thing of that I am accused of, and condemned for. As for mine own offences God knoweth them, and unto God I remit them, beseeching

" beseeching him to have mercy upon my Soul, and if any person will meddle in my cause, I desire them to judge the best. And so I take my leave of the World, and of you all, and do heartily beseech you to pray for me, and I beseech Jesus save my Sovereign and Master the King long to live and reign over you, the most Godliest, No blest and Gentleſt Prince that is. These words she uttered with a smiling countenance, which done she kneeled down, and with a fervent spirit said, To Jesus Christ I commend my Soul, Lord Jesus receive my Soul. And repeating those words very oft, suddenly with the sword the executioner severed her head and body, which were buried in the Quire of the Chapel in the Tower. 'Tis said that the Lord *Rochford* the Queens brother coming to her bed-side to sollicite a suit, leaned thereupon to whisper her in the ear, which the spials gave forth that he did so to kiss the Queen. Most probable it is that the crimes which this Queen was charged withal were matters contrived by Popish instruments, because she gave great encouragements unto many, more publickly and with boldnes to profess the reformed religion, and procured a toleration for the Protestant Divines. Moreover that this Queens death was rather sought for than merited by her, seems also very probable; because that the next day after her death, the King was married unto the Lady *Jane Seymour*, daughter of *John Seymour Knight*.

About this time began to flourish *Thomis Cromwell* a Black-Smith's Son of *Putney*, whom King *Henry* first raised to be Master of his Jewel-house, then Baron of *Okeham*, then Earl of *Essex*, then Lord great Chamberlain, and lastly ordained him Vicar-General over the Spirituality. (Cardinal *Wolsey* had been his great Friend, but he, 'tis said, an instrument of the Cardinal's fall) This great *Cromwell* procured it to be enacted in Parliament, That the Lord's Prayer, Creed and ten Commandments should be read in the English Tongue. Other matters also tending to reforme

form the English Church from the Roman Corruptions, were attempted by Cromwell, which did not at all please the Monks and their party. The Lincolnshire men began a commotion under the leading of one Mackarell a Monk, who named himself Captain Cobler. A Copy of their Grievances they sent to the King, some of which were, The suppression of many religious houses, whereby the service of God, they said, was minished. The King's taking into his Council men of low birth, who sought their own lucre. That there were divers Bishops lately preferred that had subverted the Faith of Christ. That by reason of their loss of Sheep and Cattel, they were not able to pay the Quindecim, or Tax granted to the King, &c. But these Rioters the King soon pacified with good words.

In whose steads others rose up immediately, for forty thousand rusticks assembled in Yorkshire, furnished with horse, armour and artillery. Their pretence was Religion, and defence of holy Church. Their Banners were painted with the five wounds of Christ, the chalice, cake and other Romish inventions. This their Rebellion they termed the holy Pilgrimage. Their General of foot was one James Diamond a poor Fisher-man, stiled the Earl of Poverty, their chief Leader was Mr. Robert Aske, a man it seems of terror: For when Lancaster Herald at Arms was sent to him to declare the King's message, this Aske, did so terribly bluster forth his answers, that the Herald fell before him on his knees, excusing himself to be but a Messenger. Many persons of great note were parties in this insurrection. And to draw the more in to his side with them, Aske and his complices set forth in writing these scandalous untruths against the King.

First, That no infant should be permitted to receive the blessed Sacrament of Baptism, bot onles an trybet to be paid to the King.

Secondly, That no man under twenty pound lands shall eyte no brede made of Wheat ner Capon, Chekyn, Gois, ner Pig, bot onles to pay a trybet to the King.

Thirdly,

Thirdly, That for every Ploghe land the King will have en trybet, with other extreme urgent causes, and heartily, Fare ye well. Their Oath wherein they bound themselves in this League, was the preservation of the King's person, and issue; the purifying of Nobility and expulsing all villain bloud, and evil Counsellours; not for any to enter into their Pilgrimage, or any private commodity, but for the common weal, the restitution of the Church and suppression of Heresie and Hereticks. But a great force being drawn against them, they dispersed themselves, upon promise of pardon and redress in their just complaints, yet notwithstanding this the King's clemency, some of the chief of these Actours ingaged themselves again in a new insurrection in short time after this, for which offence they suffered death. Of Ecclesiastical persons were put to death, four Abbats, two Priors, three Monks, eleven Priestis, also Captain Mackarel; and of Temporal persons were executed Robert Aske, the Lord Dacres, Sir Robert Constable, Sir Francis Bigod, Palmer, Percie, Hamilton, Tempest and Lumley.

These stirs being stited, a commission came forth to purge the Churches of Idols, and to suppress the Monasteries to the King's use, granted him by Parliament. When down went the Rood of Boxely in Kent, commonly called the Rood of Grace, which was made with divers vices to bow down and lift up it self, to shake and stir both head, hands and feet, to rowl the eyes, move the lips and to bend the brows, thereby to cheat silly Souls. So likewise the Images of our Lady of Walsingham and Ipswich, set with Jewels and Gems, also divers others both of England and Wales were brought to London, and many of them burnt before the Lord Cromwell at Chelsey, A.D. 1538.

Then down went the Monasteries to the number of about 645, besides 90 Colleges, and of Chantries and free Chapels 2374. Almost all these were born down in these boistrous times to the Worlds amazement. Amongst the Shrines that of Thomas a Becket was

was defaced, whose meanest part was pure Gold, garnished with many pretious stones ; the chiefest of which, was a rich Gem of *France* offered by King *Lewis*, who asked and obtained of this prime Saint, (believe it who list) that no passenger betwixt *Dover* and *Whitesand* should perish by Shipwreck. But instead of these impertinences, the holy Bible was commanded to be read in English in the Churches, and Register-Books of Weddings, Christnings and Burials to be kept in every of them. If we will credit tradition, shamefull villanies were too frequently perpetrated by the *Monastrycks*, as Whoredoms, Incests, Sodomy and Murthers. Many Infants bones, the products of their wantonnes, were found in many of their religious houses. The Monasteries thus dissolved and the revenues thereof converted to secular uses, King *Henry* hereby ran in great obloquie with many foreign Princes and Potentates, but especially of the Pope. Yea, and home-born Subjects disliking hereof by secret working sought to deprive King *Henry*, and to elevate *Reginald Pole* to the regal dignity, for the which treason *Henry Courtney Marques of Excester*, the Lord *Montacute Cardinal Pole's* brother, and Sir *Edward Neville*, were beheaded on *Tower-hill*.

A. D. 1540, and January the sixth was King *Henry* married unto the Lady *Anne*, Sister to the Duke of *Cleve*, but he restrained her bed, for the dislike he had to her person ; and she, good Lady, no other cause alledged, was divorced by Parliament the June following, when it was also enacted, That she should no longer be called Queen.

In this Parliament was *Cromwell* Attainted for setting at liberty certain persons committed for misprision of Treason, and Heresie ; for favouring and maintaining the Translation of Heretical Books ( so called ) into *English* ; for countenancing and supporting Heretical Teachers ; for being an Heretick himself, and for having spoken great words for the upholding his said Religion, to wit, That the King himself should not change it if he would. The cause

cause why the King fell into dislike of him, and consequently of his ruin, was, because he stood in the defence of the Lady *Anne of Cleve*, and spake not all well of the Lady *Catharine Howard*, whom the King was minded and did take to Wife. Which distast of the King's against him his enemy *Stephen Gardner Bishop of Winchester* did improve to *Cromwell's* destruction, who was beheaded on *Tower-hill*, and with him the Lord *Hungerford of Heitsbury* for buggerery.

Margaret Countess of *Salisbury* daughter of *George Duke of Clarence*, and Mother of *Cardinal Reginald Pole*, being neither arraigned nor tryed, but condemned by Parliament as *Cromwell* had been, was beheaded. And the Lord *Leonard Grey* about the same time lost his head for Treason. And the next day after his death *Thomas Fines Lord Dares of the South* died at *Tyburn* for killing a man in a fray. Nor was the Sword sheathed untill the Heads of *Queen Catharine Howard*, and the Lady *Jane Rochford* were struck off ; the former for Adultery, the other for Concealment as was alledged. The parties offending with *Catharine Howard* were *Francis Dereham* and *Thomas Culpepper*, *Dereham* before she was Queen and *Culpepper* after, who both were executed at *Tyburn*, Decemb. the tenth ; and on Febru. the twelfth following Mrs. *Catharine Howard* ( for so in the Act of her Attainer she is called ) who had been Queen for the space of a year and half, with the Lady *Jane* widow of the Lord *Rochford*, were brought unto the *Tower-hill*, where in lamentable passions they suffered death. This Queen protested after her condemnation to Dr. *White* her last Confessour, that she was guiltless, having never so abused her Sovereign's bed.

But as these in case of Treason, so others in matter of Conscience were put to death by force of the Statutes made under this King. Whereof one was the renouncing the Pope's Supremacy, and owning the King for supreme head of the Church in his own Dominions ; this concerned the Papists. The other

other was the six Articles, this concerned the Protestants. Which six bloody Articles were,

First, That after the words of Consecration there is no other substance consisting in the bread and wine besides the substance of Christ, God and man.

Secondly, That the Communion in both kinds was not necessary to salvation, the flesh only in form of bread being sufficient to the Laity.

Thirdly, That Priests might not marry by the Law of God.

Fourthly, That the Vows of Chastity ought by God's law to be observed.

Fifthly, That private Masses were necessary for the people, and agreeable to the Law of God.

Sixthly, That auricular Confession was expedient to be retained in the Church of God. For offending against the former Law of abjuring the Pope's Supremacy, &c. was John Fisher Bishop of Rochester put to death, and Sir Thomas More Lord Chancellour, so merry-conceited a person that he could not forbear his jests though bloody death stared him in the face : For when on the Scaffold the Executioner desired his forgiveness, he replied, I forgive thee, but I promise thee thou wilt get no honour by cutting off my head, my neck is so short. And when he was to lay his neck on the block he stroakt out his white Beard, and said to the Headsman, I pray let me lay it over the block, lest you should cut it off ; For though you have a Warrant to cut off my head, you have none to cut off my beard. Besides these two there were put to death for the same cause many Abbats, Priors and Friars. For oppugning the six Articles and asserting Gospel-truths did many Christians of the reformed Religion suffer death in the flames. Amongst the rest Dr. Robert Barnes was one, and Mrs. Anne Askue a person of rare wit and elegant beauty, who when she had been twice tormented upon the Rack to the disjoynting of her bones, then gave her body to the flames for Christ's sake. And the life of Queen Catherine

Catherine Parre was hard laid for by Stephen Gardner, but through her wisdom and prudent carriage towards the King it was preserved.

About A. D. 1545, was a match concluded to be made betwixt Prince Edward King Henry's son, and the young Princess of Scotland, the Scotch Nobility approving thereof, and in a Parliament of the three estates the match was confirmed in England, the like also in Scotland : but Cardinal Beton Arch-bishop of St. Andrews, fearing lest hereby Scotland should also change the Church Orders, and the French likewise not liking the union, means was therefore wrought to break the said intended marriage of the two young Heirs, whence wars ensued, and the English invaded Scotland, spoiled Leith, burnt Edenborough, and wasted the Country for seven miles about, set fire upon Haddington and Dunbar, then returned. And because the French refused the performance of certain Covenants, King Henry made war also upon that Nation, and in short time won the strong Town of Bulloign. Then the French King with intent to balance the loss of Bulloign invaded the Isle of Wight, and the Sea-coasts of Sussex, though it proved to the loss of many of his Captains, and thousands of his Souldiers.

A. D. 1546, the Reingrave came with a great force to victual a Fort built near to Bulloign which the Earl of Surrey sought to prevent him from, but was discomfited, with the loss of many brave mens lives. Shortly after which, by the mediation of the Emperour and other Christian Potentates peace was concluded betwixt France and England.

A. D. 1547, and January the twenty eighth Sanguine King Henry yielded to deaths impartial stroke, whose body with great solemnity was buried at Windsor. In his Will he ordained (howsoever titles had been made invalid in Parliaments) That his three Children should succeed each other, for want of other Issue. One thousand Marks he commanded should be given to the Poor ; and to twelve poor Knights at Windsor each of them twelve pence a day for ever, every year a long Gown of white cloth, the Gar-  
ter

ter to be embroidered upon the breast, and therein the Cross of Saint George, and a Mantle of red Cloth to be worn thereupon. His Wives were Catharine his brother's Relict, Anne Bullen, Jane Seymour, Anne of Cleve, Catharine Howard Niece to the Duke of Norfolk, and Catharine Parre the Daughter of Thomas Parre of Kendal. His Issue Henry which lived not full two months, another son not named, and Mary, these by Catharine of Spain, Elizabeth and a son still-born by Anne Bullen; Edward by Jane Seymour. His natural Issue Henry Fitz-Roy, Earl of Nottingham, Duke of Richmond and Somerset.

After the dissolution of the Religious Houses, he erected the Bishopricks of Westminster, Chester, Oxford, Peterborough, Bristol and Gloucester, and also erected the Cathedral Churches of Canterbury, Winchester, Worcester, Chester, Peterborough, Ely, Gloucester, Bristol, Carlile, Durham, Rochester and Norwich. In all which he founded a Dean, with a certain number of Prebendaries. The College of Christ-Church in Oxford begun by Cardinal Wolsey, he ordained to be the Cathedral of that Bishop's See.

I remember I have read this observation of the Letter H respecting England, which may be here inserted.

Not superstitiously I speak, but H this Letter still, Hath been observed ominous to England's good or ill.

Humber the Han with foreign arms did first the Brutes invade.

Helen to Rome's Imperial Throne the British Crown Convey'd.

Hengist and Horsus first did plant the Saxons in this Isle.

Hungar and Hubba first brought Danes that sway'd here a long while.

AS

At Harold had the Saxon end, at Hardy Knute the Dane.

Henry the first and second did restore the English Reign.

Fourth Henry first for Lancaster did England's Crown obtain.

Seventh Henry jarring Lancaster and York unites in peace.

Henry the eighth did happily Romes Irreligion cease.

Bolton Prior of St. Bartholomew in London, for fear of an inundation after a great conjunction of Planets in the Watry Triplicity, built him an house upon the top of Harrow-Hill, storing it with provisions necessary, to keep himself from drowning, in A. D. 1524.

Many died of the sweating sickness in England, especially about London. In the twenty third year of his Reign Richard Rice a Cook was boiled to death in Smith-field for poisoning divers persons. In the thirty seventh of his Reign the Steves on the Bank-side in Southwark were put down by the King's appointment.

A. D. 1546, William Foxley continued sleeping (in the Tower) fourteen days and fifteen nights, and could not by any means be awakened during that time; yet when he did awake he was in very good temper, as though he had slept but one night, and lived forty years after.

King Henry by Act of Parliament assumed the Stile and Title of King of Ireland, former Kings of England bearing onely the Stile of Lords thereof. 'Tis said that now, Turkey, Carps, Hops, Pickarel and Beer, came into England all in a Year.

## E D W A R D . VI.

*Jan. 28.* **E D W A R D** the Sixth was born (but not without the death of his Mother) *A. D. 1537,*  
*Octob. 12.*

*A. D. 1546.* *A. D. 1547*, and *Febr. 20.* he was Crowned at *Westminster*. At which time when three Swords were delivered to him, as King of *England, France and Ireland*, he said, There was yet another Sword to be delivered him, namely, the sacred Bible, which is, said he, the Sword of the Spirit, without which we are nothing, neither can doe any thing. His Mothers brother, *Edward Lord Seymour Earl of Hartford*, and *Duke of Somerset* was by the consent of the Nobles made *Protector* over his Minority, and the Realms. In short time after the King's Coronation, the *Lord Protector* and Council sought to effect the Marriage betwixt the young King and the young *Queen of Scotland*, as it had been formerly agreed on by both Nations; but this the *Scots* refused to yield unto, wherefore the *Protector* led an Army into *Scotland*, and at a Place called *Edmondstone-edge* near to *Musclebrough* fought the *Scots* and vanquished them, following the chase of them almost five miles, wherein the *Lord Fleming* with sundry men of note were slain, and 1000 of the *Souldiers*; and about a 1000 were taken Prisoners, the chief whereof were the *Earl of Huntly*, the *Lords Yester, Hobby and Hamilton*, the *Lord Weems*, and a brother of the *Earl of Cassils*. *Leith* the English sacked and set on fire, took the Island *St. Colmes*, *Broughticrag*, *Roxbrough*, *Humes Castle*, and others, insomuch that many Gentlemen in *Tividale* and the *Meres* came to the *Protector*, and entred into terms and conditions of Peace with him. After the *Protector's* return a Parliament was assembled at *London*, wherein the six Articles were

## E D W A R D . VI.

were repealed, those Colleges and Chapels that King *Henry* had left were given the King, and the Churches ordered to be purged of all Images. And accordingly Commissioners were appointed, who first began at *Saint Paul's in London*, and thence proceeded throughout *England* and *Wales*. But this reformation occasioned great commotions, which began in the West. A Priest stabbed one *Mt. Body* a Commissioner to the heart, for plucking down certain Images; and this fact of his was so favoured by the *Cornish* and *Devonshire Rusticks*, that ten thousand of them rose in Arms, heading themselves under *Mr. Humphrey Arundel*, six other Gentlemen, and eight Priests. These Rebels besieged the City of *Exeter* and sore distressed it, yet did the Citizens loyally hold out against them; for which the King did enlarge their Liberties, and gave unto their City the *Manor of Exilond*. At last the Rebels agreed upon Articles to be sent to the King, therein requiring to have Mass celebrated as in time past it had been. To have holy bread and holy water in remembrance of *Christ's* Body and Bloud. To have the six Articles again in force, &c. To these and the rest of their demands the King sent an answer, Therein pitying their ignorance, reproving their sawciness, and withall a general pardon to as many as would desist in time, concluding thus: *We for our part seek no longer to live than to be a Father to our People, and as God hath made us your King, so he hath commanded you obedience; by whose great Majesty we swear, you shall feel the same power in our Sword, which how mighty it is no subject knoweth, how puissant it is no private man can judge, and how mortal no English heart can think. Therefore embrace our mercy whilst it is offered, lest the bloud spilt by your means cry vengeance from the earth, and be heard in the ears of the Lord of heaven.* Notwithstanding all this, the Rebels still persisted in their Traiterous Attempts; the King therefore sent an Army against them, which put them to flight at *Honiton*, then worst them at *Exeter*, where the Rebels lay siege, and lastly upon *Clift heath* destroyed the greatest part of

of them ; their consecrated Host, Crucifix, Crosses, consecrated Banners, holy bread and holy water (which the Rebels had brought into the Field, thinking by virtue of them to have made all sure on their side) were all trampled into the dirt. *Arundel, Winsland, Holmes and Bury*, four Rebel-Captains were taken and executed at London. Others also of their partakers were executed by Martial Law, amongst whom was *Boyer* the Mayor of Bodmin in Cornwall. Nigh to which Town dwelt a Miller that had been a busie-fellow in the rebellion, but he knowing his own danger, willed his man to take the name of Master if any enquired after him. To this Miller's house Sir Anthony Kingstone, Marshal of the Field came, where calling for the Master, the officious man in his name very bodily presented himself, whom Sir Anthony straight commanded to the Gallows ; and when the poor fellow seeing the danger he was in changed his note, confessing himself to be but the man, Sir Anthony said, Well, thou canst never doe thy Master better service than to hang for him, causing him to be trussed up on the next Tree. Other commotions arose in other parts of the Realm ; but the most dangerous was that in Norfolk headed by Robert Ket a Tanner of Wimonham, who took upon him to be the King's Deputy, giving out Warrants in the King's name for what he pleased. His Tribunal seat was in an Old-Tree, where sat the jolly Tanner accompanied with his Counsellours and Assistants being two chosen men out of every hundred of the Rout. Hither came the complaints of the Camp, and from hence Commissions were issued out to plunder Ships and Gentlemen's houses of Armour and Artillery ; so that this Tree was termed the Oak of reformation. Whence likewise sometimes Sermons were delivered, and once by the Reverend Dr. Parker, for which his life was endangered, his Sermon was so displeasing to the Rabble. To pacifie these Rebels the King caused his general pardon to be proclaimed by an Herald at Arms. Notwithstanding which they still

still proceeded in their Rebellion, and made themselves Masters of the City of Norwich. The King therefore sent William Parre Marques of Northampton against them but him they over-powered. Then the Lord Dudley Earl of Warwick was employed against them, who with small resistence gained the Market-place of Norwich, where he caused sixty Rebels, whom he had taken, immediately to be executed by Martial Law. The main Body of the Rebels entrenched themselves at the foot of the Hill called Duffin-dale, partly upon vain Prophecies given forth amongst them by Wizards, That Hob, Dic and Hic, (meaning the Clowns) should with their Clubs fill up the Valley of Duffin-dale with dead bodies. On August 27, the Earl prepared for fight, the Rebels likewise set themselves in order placing in their fore-rank all the Gentlemen whom they had taken prisoners coupled in Irons. Upon the Rebels Captain Drury with his own Band and the Almains charged courageously, and opened their Battel, to the setting at liberty of the captive Gentlemen, and the Earl's light Horse-men came so valiantly on, that the Rebels gave back and fled, and with the foremost their Captain Ket. The chase held three miles and more with the slaughter of 3500 Rebels. The rest of the Rebels that kept about the Ordnance, by the General's persuasions and promise of pardon, cast away their Weapons, and with one voice cried, God save King Edward. The next day following Ket was apprehended in a Barn where he had hid himself, and shortly after was hanged in Chains upon the Castle of Norwich ; William Ket his brother was hang'd upon the high Steeple of Wimonham, and nine other of them were hang'd upon the Oak of Reformation. This Rebellion was at the first broacht under the pretence of throwing open the Inclosures, which the King by Proclamation had commanded to be done, though it was neglected. These disturbances being settled, others were made in the North by Thomas Dale a Parish Clerk, William Embler a Yeoman, and one Stevenson the Post of Sey-

mour. Their pretences were to restore to the Church her rights, and to disburthen the Land of Grievances ; giving out that the Pope was the man, that King Edward was an Intruder, if not a mere Heretick, that the Church had power of both the Swords. When these fellows were increased to the number of about 3000, the King's pardon being sent to them, they most of them departed to their own homes ; but *Omblie* and *Dale* with four others were executed at *York*, Septemb. 21, 1549. And as the Commons disquieted the Countrey, so did some Lords and Ladies disquiet the Court. The Protectour's brother *Thomas Seymour* Baron of *Sudley*, High Admiral of *England*, had married *Queen Catharine Parre*, which Lady contending for place with the Protectour's Dutchess, occasioned the haughty Dutchess ('tis said) to procure the Lord Sudley's ruin. Which Lord was accused to have designed the getting of the King's person into his custody, and Government of the Realm ; for the which (with some smaller matters charged upon him) he was condemned by Act of Parliament, and by his Brother the Protectour's Warrant was beheaded on *Tower-bill*, March 20. But the Brothers being now disjoyned, Who might have supported each other had they lived together in brotherly love, the Protectour himself is marked out for destruction. Divers Lords article against the Duke, accusing him that he had animated the Rebels in the Rebellion : That he was a fower of Sedition amongst the Nobles : That he had against Law erected a Court of Requests in his own house, inforcing divers of the King's Subjects thither to answer for their Free-holds, &c. And so close and cunningly they prosecuted the matter against him, that they got him into the Tower, Octob. 12, 1549, but the King procured his liberty immediately, though not his former Authority. In the mean space that the Protectour was under these troubles, the *Scots* recovered the places that the English had gained from them. The French also attempted to gain the Fort of *Bulloinberg* by surprise,

prize, unto which enterprize 7000 men were chosen, who secretly marched in the night with ladders and furniture meet for the design, and approached within a quarter of a Mile of the Fort ; but one *Carter* an English man, a Souldier amongst them, understanding what was intended, hastily and privately made from his Company, and gave the Alarm to his Countrey-men in the Fort ; whereupon Sir *Nicholas Arnalt* the Gouvernour made such preparations against the French mens coming, that at their approach he repulsed them with so great a slaughter, that fifteen Wagons went away laden with dead bodies of the French. After this the French assaulted the Isles of *Garnsey* and *Jersey*, but were beaten off, with the loss of a thousand men. Howbeit the French King gave not over till he had recovered by surrender *Bulloinberg*, and the Town of *Bulloin*, which last he purchased at a high price.

A.D. 1550, that mortal disease called the sweating-sicknes raged extremely through *England*, whereof died the two sons of *Charles Brandon*, both of them Dukes of *Suffolk* successively, besides an infinite number in their best strength. And, which is wonderfull, this disease followed onely English men in foreign Countries, no other people being infected thereby. And to fill up the dolours of these dolefull times, the good Duke of *Somerset* was again by the over-reachings of the Earl of *Warwick*, (late-ly created Duke of *Northumberland*) and other his Emulatours committed Prisoner, and not long after put to death. For the Duke of *Somerset* giving ear to such false friends as sought his ruin, privily arm'd himself, and so went to the Council-Table, his flatterers having put him in fear of some sudden attempt intended against him. But at the Council-Table, his bosom being opened, and the Armour found, he was forthwith apprehended as intending the death of some Counsellour, and sent to the Tower, Octob. 16. 1551. and in December following he was condemned of Felony, as seeking the death of some of the King's Counsellours, and on February 22.

## EDWARD VI.

of the same year, he was brought to the Scaffold on Tower-hill, where he thus spake to the people : *Dear-  
ly beloved Friends, I am brought hither to suffer death, albeit  
I never offended against the King, either in word or deed,  
and have always been as true and faithfull to this Realm as any  
man hath been. But forasmuch as I am by Law condemned to  
die, I do acknowledge my self as well as others to be subject  
therunto. Wherefore to testifie my obedience which I owe unto  
the Laws, I am come hither to suffer death ; whereunto I will-  
ingly offer my self, with most hearty thanks unto God, that  
hath given me this time of repentance, who might through sud-  
den death have taken away my life, that I neither should have  
acknowledged him nor my self.* When having uttered  
these words with others exhortatory, That the people would continue constant in the Gospel, suddenly  
there was heard a great noise, whereby the assembly  
was struck into great fear, which noise was made  
by some of the Train-band Hamlets coming hurrying  
on the Tower-hill. This stir being ceased, another  
presently insued, for the people seeing Sir Anthony  
Brown ride towards the Scaffold, they violently ran  
and crowded together thitherward, supposing he  
had brought a pardon from the King, and with a  
sudden shout, cried a pardon, a pardon, God save  
the King. But these interruptions over, the Duke  
proceeded in his Speech ; requesting the people to  
joyn in prayer with him for the King, exhorting  
them unto obedience to him and his Council.  
Which done, asking every man forgiueness, and  
declaring that he freely forgave every man ; he  
meekly submitted his head to the Axe. Whose  
death the people were much grieved for, speaking  
very bitterly against the Duke of Northumberland, and  
the good King sorely mourned because of it, which  
likely did much increase his Consumptive distemper  
that brought him to his end. Whilst he lay in his  
weakness he was over-wrought to disinherit his two  
sisters Mary and Elizabeth, and to ordain by Will for  
his Successour to Englands Diadem Guilford Dudley's  
Wife, Jane the elder Daughter of the Duke of Suffolk,  
whose Mother the Lady Frances, was the Daughter  
of

## EDWARD VI.

of Mary Queen of France, and Charles Brandon Duke  
Suffolk. Unto this Will of King Edward all his Coun-  
cil, the Bishops and all the Judges, saving Sir John  
Hallis, subscribed. When the King drew towards  
his last breath, he prayed as followeth : *Lord God de-  
liver me out of this miserable life, and take me among thy cho-  
sen, bosomeit not my will, but thy will be done. Lord, I  
commit my spirit to thee. O Lord, thou knowest how happy it  
were for me to be with thee, yet for thy Chosen sake, if it be  
thy will, send me life and health that I may truly serve thee.  
O my Lord, bless thy people and save thine inheritance. O  
Lord God, save thy chosen people of England. O my Lord  
God, defend this Realm from Papistry, and maintain thy  
true Religion, that I and my people may praise thy holy Name,  
for thy Son Jesus Christ's sake.* So turning his face and  
seeing some by him, he said, I thought you had not  
been so nigh. Yes, said Dr. Owen, we heard you  
speak to your self. Then said the King, I was pray-  
ing to God. O I am faint, Lord have mercy upon  
me, and receive my Spirit. And in so saying he  
yielded up the Ghost, July 6. 1553. And was inter-  
red in the Chapel of St. Peter's at Westminster. He was  
a Prince very well learned in the Latin and Greek  
Tongues, also in the French, Spanish and Italian,  
adorned with the skill of Logick, Natural Philoso-  
phy, Musick and Astronomy. Of such observation  
and memory that he could tell and recite all the  
Ports, Havens and Creeks belonging to England,  
Scotland and France, what coming in there was, how  
the tide served in every of them, what burthen  
of Ship, and what Wind best served the coming  
into them. Of all his Nobles, chief Gentry and  
Magistrates, he took special notice of their Hospi-  
tality, and religious conversations. He was very  
sparing of his Subjects blood though Rebels, or Her-  
etics. When Joan Butcher was to be burnt for He-  
resie, all his Council could not move him to sign the  
Warrant for her execution, till Dr. Cranmer A. B. laboured  
with him therein ; to whom the King said,  
What, my Lord, will you have me send her quick  
to hell ? And taking the Pen he used this Speech,  
T 2 I will

I will lay all the charge thereof upon *Cramner* before God. So zealous he was for the reformed Religion, and against Popery, that he thrust out all the Roman fopperies out of the Churches ; and superstitions out of the English Church ; nor would he permit his sister *Mary* to have Mass said in her house, though the Emperour *Charles* made suit for it in her behalf. So charitable that he conferred on the City of *London Christ's-Hospital*, and *St. Thomas-Hospital* for the relief of the impotent, fatherless Children, and wounded Souldiers, and *Bridewell* for vagabond and idle persons ; and so circumspect as to himself and publick, that he kept a Journal-Book written with his own hand, how all things proceeded with him and the state, even from the first day of his Reign unto his death.

At *Feversham* in *Kent* one Mr. *Arden* was murthered, for which fact his Wife was burned at *Canterbury*; one *Mosby* and his Sister were hanged in *Smithfield* at *London*, a Maid burnt, and *Michael Mr. Arden's* man was hanged in chains at *Feversham*; one *Green*, that had fled, came again certain years after, and was hanged in chains in the High-way over against *Feversham*, and *Black Will* the Ruffian, that was hired to doe the cursed act, was burnt in *Zealand* at *Flushing*.

## M A R Y.

## M A R Y.

Pious King *Edward* having exchanged this wretched life for an happy, the Council in the first place perswaded the Lord Mayor, and certain of the Aldermen of *London* to take their Oaths to be faithfull to the Lady *Jane Gray*; then caused the said Lady *Jane* to be proclaimed in *London Queen of England*. But when Queen *Mary* heard the news of her Brother's death, and the Councils proceeds, by her Letters she required the Council as they tended her displeasure, and their own safeties, to proclaim her Queen and Governour of the Land. Unto which Letters the Lords forthwith answered, That by good Warrant of Ancient Laws of the Realm, besides the last Will of King *Edward*, the right was in the Lady *Jane* to govern *England*, unto whom therefore and none other they must yield subjection. They also remembred the Queen of the unlawfull marriage and divorce of her Mother, of her own illegitimation, desiring her to forbear any farther claim, and to submit her self to the Queen *Jane* now her Sovereign. Which Letters sent to Queen *Mary* were subscribed by *Tho. Canterbury* Archbishop, *Thomas Ely* Chancellour, *Henry Suffolk* Duke, the Duke of *Northumberland*, Marques of *Winchester*, &c. Upon the receipt of the Letters the Queen removed from *Kenningal* to *Fremingham-castle*, unto whom the *Suffolk* men first reported, offering their service with condition that they might still embrace the Gospel, in the same manner that King *Edward* had established it. To which she then condescended, though afterward being petitioned to perform her promise herein, she both punished the Writer, and answered, that they should one day well know, that they being but members should not direct her their head.

July 6.  
A. D.  
1553.

July the twelfth the Earl of Oxford and other Lords came in to the Queen's assistance, and proclaimed her at *Norwich*, and July the fourteenth the Duke of *Northumberland* with an Army set forth of *London* towards *Norwich*; but few or none of the People bade this ambitious Duke God-speed, which himself took notice of as he marched out of *London* with his Army.

But whilst *Northumberland* was on his way, the Lord *Windsor* and other Gentlemen raised the Commons of *Buckinghamshire* for Queen *Mary*; so Sir *John Williams*, and Sir *Leonard Chamberlain* of *Oxfordshire*, and Sir *Thomas Tresham* in *Northamptonshire*. And at *London* the Tide turned, and Queen *Mary* was there proclaimed, and many of the Lords deserted the Duke, insomuch, that the Duke himself, thinking it the easiest to swim with the stream, even fairly in the Market-place at *Cambridge* proclaimed *Mary Queen of England*, throwing up his Cap in token of joy. The way thus made free, Queen *Mary* repaired to *London*, and there set at liberty *Edmond Bonner* imprisoned in her Brother's time, restoring him to the See of *London*, which Dr. *Ridley* had possessed, and made him a Prisoner. Other Protestant Bishops she removed, placing Papists in their steads. Dr. *Cranmer* Archbishop of *Canterbury* she committed to the Tower, and Stephen *Gardiner* she made Lord Chancellour. And to assure her estate the better, the Duke of *Northumberland* was arraigned and condemned, and brought upon the Scaffold on *Tower-hill*, to suffer death. Where this Duke having promise of life if he would recant the reformed Religion, did so, and withall exhorted the People to follow the Romish way, though when he had so done the Executioner made him shorter by the head; with him suffered Sir *John Gates*, and Sir *Thomas Palmer*, August 22.

A few days after which the Queen was crowned at *Westminster* by Stephen *Gardiner* Bishop of *Winchester*. And October the 18<sup>th</sup> began a Parliament, wherein that Act was repealed which was made in *Edward the Sixth's* time, intituled, An Act for the uniformity of Common Prayer and Administration of the Sacraments.

Then

Then came all the Popish Trinkets into fashion again, the Mass-book, Crucifixes, *Agnus Dei's*, Reliques, with all the Idols and Abominations. And the temporising Priests were forced to forego their Wives, though not to live honestly: For, as Master *Heywood* merrily said to the Queen concerning these men, when she told him that the Priests must no longer have their Wives, Your Grace then must allow them Lemmons, for the Clergy cannot live without fawce.

A.D. 1553. was the Lady *Jane Grey* and her Husband arraigned and condemned at the *Guild-ball* in *London*, and February the 12<sup>th</sup> her Husband *Guilford Dudley*, 4<sup>th</sup> son to the Duke of *Northumberland*, was had to the *Tower-hill*, where with Prayers and great signs of Repentance he ended his life. Whose Body all bloody laid in a Cart, together with the Head wrapt in a cloth, was brought into the Chapel of the Tower, even in the sight of this sorrowfull Lady his Wife, who was now to mount the Scaffold raised upon the Green within the Tower, whither being ascended, she with a cheerfull countenance spake unto the Spectatours, declaring that her Offence was onely in consenting unto others, That she never sought that greatness; Then desired the People to bear her witness, that she died a true Christian woman, and looked to be saved by no other means but onely by the mercy of God in the Bloud of Christ Jesus his onely Son; confessed that when she did know the word of God, she neglected it, and loved the world and her self, and that therefore this plague and punishment justly happened to her for her sins. Lastly, desired the People to pray for her whilst she lived. Then kneeling down said in English the 51<sup>st</sup> Psalm, which done, she stood up and gave her Book to Mr. *Bridges* Lieutenant of the Tower; then by the help of her two Gentlewomen made her self ready for the Block, and commanding her spirit into the hands of the Lord Jesus, her head was severed from the body. Thus ended the life of this most ingenious and vertuous Lady, ruined by the ambition of her夫君.

T. 4

ambition of her own, especially Husband's Father.

On the 23d of the same month, her Father *Henry Duke of Suffolk* for a second offence, the promoting an insurrection to hinder the Queen's marriage with *Philip of Spain*, was beheaded on the *Tower-hill*. And *A.D. 1554. April 23.* was his Brother the Lord *Thomas Grey* beheaded in the same place. Against this foresaid match with *Spain* many Combinations were made, and many Persons in divers Places of the Realm were up in Arms. And amongst the rest Sir *Thomas Wiat* with the *Kentish* men, against whom the Duke of *Norfolk* was sent, but many of his Followers forsook him and joined with *Wiat*. Then *Wiat* advanced to *Dartford*, and from thence to *Deptford* by *Greenwich*, at whose approach so nigh the City, the fears were there so great, that the Lord Mayor, Aldermen, and most of the Citizens were in Armour, and the Serjeants and Lawyers in *Westminster* in the *Hilary-Term* pleading their Causes in harness. The Queen to make the City sure on her side, came unto the *Guild-hall*, where she made an Oration to the Citizens, therein acquainting them, That though the Rebels pretence was to resist the marriage with *Spain*, yet that their intention was against her Religion. That they arrogantly demanded the possession of her Person, the keeping of the Tower, the placing and displacing of her Counsellours. She also therein alledged her right to the Crown, professed her intire love and affection to her Subjects, promised them in the word of a Queen, that if it should not probably appear before the Nobility and Commons in Parliament, that her designed marriage with Prince *Philip*, would be for the profit of the Nation, she would abstain from it. Wherefore, saith she, good Subjects pluck up your hearts, and like true men, stand fast with your lawfull Prince against these Rebels, both Ours and Yours, and fear them not, for I assure you, I do not. Against these Rebels the Earl of *Pembroke* was made General, and a hundred pound Lands by the year was promised to be

be given to him and his Heirs for ever, that should bring *Wiat* either alive or dead.

Howbeit, *Wiat* with fourteen Ensigns, and about five thousand men advanced to *Southwark*, where he made Proclamation, that no Souldier should take anything without due payment. *Southwark* he fortified, planting divers great Guns therein. And *London* was fortified against him, and the Draw-bridge cut down. Wherefore when *Wiat* perceiving that he could have no access into the City that way, he in the night marched round about by *Kingstone*, thinking that way to have surprized the City on the sudden; but staying to remount a great Gun that was dismounted by the way, by that means he could not reach the City so soon as he had expected, nor till his coming was discovered and preparations on that side the City made against him.

The Earl of *Pembroke* possessed himself of *St. James's*, which *Wiat* at his coming perceiving marched a little aside toward *Charing-Cross*. At *Charing-Cross* the Lord Chamberlain and Sir *John Gage* stood to resist *Wiat*, but the Kentish men rushing violently into the Streets, forced their opposites into the Gates of *White-Hall*, where was a great distraction within, and no other voice heard than *Treason, Treason*. Mean while *Wiat* with such small company as he had with him hasted to *Ludgate*, where he knocked to have entrance, but was debar'd. In the interim those his followers that had turned to *White-Hall* were dispersed, about twenty of which dirty, bemired Rebels were slain in the conflict, and no other cry heard on the contrary part, but, down with the *Dagle-tails*.

*Wiat* returning from *Ludgate* sate down upon a Stall against *Bell-Savage-Inn*, where he mused awhile, then retired towards the Court, and was not opposed till he came to *Temple-Bar*; where began some Bickering, but *Clarendieux King at Arms* coming to him persuaded him to submit to the Queens mercy. To whom Sir *Thomas Wiat* said, If I must yield, I will yield to a Gentleman, and yielded himself to *Clarendieux*. Then was he mounted behind Sir *Maurice Berkley*, and

so carried to the Court, and in the afternoon to the Tower. About fifty of his fellow Rebels were hanged in *London*, and four hundred more were led through the City with Halters about their Necks to *Westminster*, where they were all pardoned by the Queen.

A. D. 1554. and April the 11th, Sir Thomas Wiat was beheaded on *Tower-Hill*, where at his death he warned the People to beware how they took any thing in hand against the higher Powers, and excused the Lady *Elizabeth*, and the Lord *Courtney* of having any hand in his Rebellion. Alexander Bret and twenty two Kentish persons more were executed in divers parts of that County. These Commotions were the occasion of great troubles to the Lady *Elizabeth*, for the great difference in judgment that was betwixt her sister the Queen and her, caused the Queen to suspect that she was a principal mover in them. Wherefore the good Princess was in all haste sent for from her Manor of *Ashbridge*, where she then lay sick, and was committed Prisoner to the Tower of *London*, at her first coming being kept a close Prisoner under Locks and Bolts; but at length the Lord *Shandois* obtained liberty for her to walk in the Queens Chamber and in the Garden. About May the 9th, she was removed to *Woodstock* where her liberty was not much enlarged. In this her confinement, as she sate looking out of the Window, she hapn'd to see a Maid milking in the Park, and merrily singing over her Pail, which struck this pensive Prisoner into a deep muse, preferring the Maids fortunes above her own, and heartily wishing that her self was a Milk-maid. Perhaps this might be the place, where *Stephen Gardner* (with intent to insnare her life) caused her to be examined what she thought of those words of *Christ*, *Hoc est Corpus meum*. This is my body. To which, after some pause, the Princess thus warily, and wittily answered.

*Christ*

*Christ was the word that spake it,*  
*He took the bread and brake it;*  
*And what the word did make it,*  
*That I believe and take it.*

A. D. 1554. and April the 16th, a disputation began concerning Transubstantiation betwixt certain learned men of the Popish persuasion, and *Thomas Cranmer* Arch-bishop of *Canterbury*, *Nicholas Ridley* late Bishop of *London*, and old Father *Latimer* sometime Bishop of *Worcester* of the reformed Religion; which dispute ended on the 20th of the same month, and a year and six months after the aforesigned Bishops gave testimony to the truth in the flames, in the *Townditch* of *Oxford*.

A. D. 1554, and July the 25th, was the marriage betwixt *Philip of Spain*, and *Mary Queen of England* with great state solemnized, and their Titles by Garter King at Arms, solemnly proclaimed with these following stiles, *Philip and Mary by the grace of God King and Queen of England, France, Naples, Jerusalem and Ireland, Defenders of the Faith, Princes of Spain and Sicily, Arch Dukes of Austria, Dukes of Milain, Burgundy and Brabant, Counts of Hapsburg, Flanders and Tyrol*. In the November next following this marriage, the Queen was reported to be with Child, for joy whereof *Te Deum* was commanded solemnly to be sung, and Processions and Prayers were made for her safe delivery.

The Queen took her Chamber, the Court was full of Midwives, all due provisions made against the good hour. And so certain it was taken to be, that some were punished but for questioning the contrary, and the Parliament enacted, That if God should take away Queen *Mary*, this their young Master coming into the World should succeed, and that King *Philip* should be Protectour during the Prince's minority. Howbeit, though they had this confidence to trust *Philip* with the government of *England*, if such a case should happen; yet had *Philip* little confidence in the

the *English*, first, because they would have hindred the marriage betwixt him and the *Queen*, and then because a Nobleman had given his counsel to cut off the Lady *Elizabeth's* head, whence he assured himself, that those so bad-minded to their natural Princess, could not be well-minded to him a stranger. A great friend 'tis said, King *Philip* was to the said Princess *Elizabeth*, nor would he cease soliciting his Queen till he had gained her some freedom from her close restraint. But now the expected time of Queen *Mary's* deliverance being come, a rumour was spread that a Prince was born, for joy whereof the Bells were rung, Bonfires flamed, Processions were made, and some in their Sermons fondly described the beauty of this young Prince. Notwithstanding at last it proved no such matter. Some said this rumour was spread in policy, and that the Queen to have put the Lady *Elizabeth* besides the Crown, would have mothered another bodies Child; but King *Philip* scorn'd to father it. Others said, that the Queen miscarried; others, that she had a Tympany.

A. D. 1557. the Queen to take part with the Spaniard and Pope proclaimed Wars against *France*, and King *Philip* crossed the Seas into *Flanders*. After whom his Queen sent a thousand Horsemen, four thousand Foot, and two thousand Pioneers under the conduct of the Earl of *Pembroke*, who came with his Forces before the Town of St. *Quintins*, (at that time besieged by the Dukes of *Savoy* and *Brunswick*) and in short time by their manly courage forced the Town to yield; for joy whereof great triumphs were made in *England*, which lasted not long; For this success made the *English* too secure, insomuch, that through neglect of Seafonable and fitting Supplies the Town of *Calais* was forced to yield to the French, upon but indifferent terms on the English part. Thus the Town of *Calais* won by the Victorious King *Edward* the third, and that by no less than eleven months siege, was now in the compass of eight days besieged, and regained, and that in the depth of Winter, it being surrendered on *January* the 17<sup>th</sup>, 1557. And in the same Month and

and year were also the strong Forts of *Guise* and *Hames* taken by the French, whereby all the English footing was lost in *France*. This loss, with the absence of King *Philip*, (who did not passionately love his consort the Queen,) is thought to have hastened the death of Queen *Mary*. She was heard to say, That the loss of *Calais* was written in her heart, and might therein be read when her body should be opened. She died of a burning Fever, Nov. the 17<sup>th</sup>, 1558. and was buried at *Westminster*. The Church-possessiones which this Queen had in her hands, she freely resigned with this saying, That she set more by the Salvation of her own Soul, than she did by ten Kingdoms. Though she was of no bad natural temper, yet through a blind zeal, she dealt so rigidly and cruelly against those called *Sacramentarians*, the Protestants, that in less than four years space she caused to be put to death of them 277. In *Smithfield* and other parts of the Land were consumed of them in the flames for *Christ's* sake, 5 Bishops, i. e. *Cranmer* Archbiishop of *Canterbury*, *Ridley* Bishop of *London*, *Latimer* Biishop of *Worcester*, *Hooper* Bishop of *Glocester*, and *Farrar* Biishop of *St. David's*; 21 Ministers, 8 Gentlemen, 48 Artificers, 100 Husbandmen, Servants and Labouurers, 26 Wives, 20 Widows, 9 Virgins, 2 Boys, and 2 Infants, one of them whipt to death by bloody *Bonner*; and the other springing out of its mother's Womb, as she burned at the Stake, was thrown again into the fire. Sixty four more were persecuted for their profession of the true Christian Doctrine, whereof 7 were whipped, 16 perished in Prisons, and were buried in Dunghills, and many lay in captivity condemned till the coming in of Queen *Elizabeth*, and many fled the Realm in those scorching times, amongst whom was *Catharine Dutches* of *Suffolk*, the last wife of *Charles Brandon Duke of Suffolk*. Pray God of his great mercy defend *England* from the Religion and Cruelties of Antichristian *Rome*.

On the self-same day that Queen *Mary* died, died also Cardinal *Pole*, Arch-bishop of *Canterbury*, and was buried at *Canterbury*.

In the reign of this Queen extreme dearths raged; also Quartan Agues, of which many old people died, especially Clergy-men.

At a little Town about a mile, and eastward from Nottingham, a Tempest of Thunder did great harm, beat down many Houses, forced the Bells out of the Steeple, carrying them to the outside of the Church-yard, and some Webs of Lead four hundred foot into the Field. A Child by the violence of it was taken out of a man's Arms and carried a hundred foot. Five or six men besides the Child were slain by it. Some Hail-stones fell that were fifteen Inches about:

E L I Z A-

---

QUEEN Elizabeth the Restorer and Defender of Nov. 17.  
the publick profession of the Apostolical Religion in England, begun her reign A. D. 1558. Nov. 17. A. D. 1558.  
Upon the death of her Sister Queen Mary, she removed to the Charter-house of London, and from thence was royally attended through the City unto the Tower. In which triumphal State as she passed through the Streets of London, when the Book of God was presented to her at the little Conduit in Cheapside, she received it with both her hands, and kissing it, laid it to her Breast, saying, That the same had been her chiefest delight, and should be the Rule by which she meant to frame her Government. January 15. was the Crown-Imperial set on her head by Dr. Oglethorpe Bishop of Carlile. Shortly after which a Parliament sat, wherein the Title of the Supremacy was restored to the Crown, with the Tents and First-fruits of all Ecclesiastical Livings, and the Book of Common Prayer (set forth in Edward the sixth's time) was ratified, as also those Acts repealed which were enacted in Queen Mary's time in favour of the Romish, and against the reformed Religion. During this Parliament a Petition was made unto her Majesty to move her unto Marriage, in hope of royal Issue from her. To which she replied, That she best liked a Virgins life; but that if it hapned that her affection should change, her choice should be onely of such an one as should be as carefull as any of themselves for the publick good. As for her Issue, she said, if she should have any it might grow out of kind, and prove ungratioust; and therefore to leave behind her a more lasting and gratefull remembrance, she held it sufficient, that a Marble-stone should declare to posterities, that she a Queen had reigned, lived and

Matthew and died a Virgin. This Maiden-Queen the better Parker. <sup>A.B. Cant.</sup> to secure her self against the Bishop of *Rome*, who sought to disable her Title by the calumny of illegitimation, entred into a league with some Princes of *Germany*. This done, she claimed the restitution of *Calais* as her right, having been lawfully granted and assured by the French themselves unto the Crown of *England*. But the *English* Queen was not more desirous to have *Calais* than the *French* was unwilling to part with it; howbeit at length it was thus concluded, That *Calais* should remain French the term of eight years, and then to return to the English, else the French to pay 500000 Crowns, which they never performed though the agreement was sealed and sworn unto. Next, her Highness proceeds to purge the Clergy of *England*, ordering the Oath of Supremacy and other Articles to be tendred them, which many refusing were forthwith deprived of their Ecclesiastical Benefices and Promotions. Then went forth Commissioners to suppress those Monasteries restored by Queen *Mary*, and to cast out all Images set up in Churches; and after the reducing of Church-matters into order, this happy Queen brought her Coins into fine and pure Sterling, debasing of Copper-coins, causing likewise great store of Munition, Armour, and Powder to be brought into the Land, and laid up in readiness against a time of need.

*A.D. 1562.* Her Majesty sent aids into *France* to support the reformed Religion there. These with great joy were received into the Towns of *Newhaven*, *Roan* and *Deep*; but within the space of twelve-months they were forced back into *England*, bringing thence many sick Souldiers, which dangerously infected the Nation with a long continuing Plague.

About the year 1564. the *Irish* sought to shroud themselves from their obedience unto Q. *Elizabeth*, under the shelter of *Shan O-Neal*, a man cruel by nature, and claiming an Hereditary right to the Province of *Ulster*, as the *O-Neals* formerly had done to all *Ireland*. Against this rebel so great preparations were made, that he

terrified

terrified therewith came over into *England*, and on his knees begged the Queens pardon, which she granted him. Howbeit not long after he rebelled, but at length was slain by some of his own Countrymen.

*A.D. 1567.* so great civil dissentions were in *Scotland*, that outrages were not onely committed upon the best Subjects, but even upon the King and Queen themselves; him they barbarously murthered, and forced her to leave *Scotland*. Which unhappy Queen having embarked her self for *France*, hoping there to find many friends, was by cross winds drove upon the English Coasts, from whence she might not return, but was detained Prisoner in *England*.

*A.D. 1568.* By the working instruments of the old Dr. at *Rome*, there were discontents bred and nourished in some great persons of *England*, as the Earls of *Northumberland* and *Westmerland*, *Leonard Dacres*, *Nevil*, &c. who had in readines certain *English* Priests, *Morton* and others, with Bulls and instruments of Absolution, Reconciliation, and Oaths to be taken to the Pope. These Romish Rebels raised forces, and with Banner displayed entred *Burrowbridge*, old *Morton* being their Ensign-bearer, in whose Colours were painted the Cross and five wounds of Christ. But at the approach of her Majesty's Forces, the Captains of the Rebels fled into *Scotland*, and their followers were taken without any resistance. Of these Traitors were put to death at *Dubham* by Martial Law, an Alderman, a Priest, 66 Constables, besides others of them in other places about.

*A.D. 1570.* *Leonard Dacres* of *Harlsey* renewed the rebellion, and had amongst his followers many women Souldiers; but upon a Moor nigh unto *Naworth* the Lord *Hunsdon* dispersed them in fight.

*August 22.* of this year, was the Earl of *Northumberland* beheaded at *York*; where in his last speech he avowed the Popes Supremacy, denied that subjection was due to the Queen, affirmed the Realm to be in a Schism, and that obedient Subjects were no better than Hereticks. For you must know that Pope *Pius*

U

the

Edward  
Grindal,  
*A.B. Can.*

the fifth had by his Bull dated 1569. deprived the Queen of her Kingdoms, absolved her Subjects of all subjection to her, and pronounced all that yielded her obedience accursed. As appears by the latter part of the said Bull in these words, ----- *Being therefore strengthened with his Authority, who hath pleased to set us in this Supreme Throne of Justice, though unfit for so great a burthen, we by the fulness of our Apostolick Power, do declare the foresaid Elizabeth an Heretick, and a maintainer of Hereticks, and those that take her part in the things aforesaid [ that is, in using wicked Rites and Institutions according to Calvin's Prescription, and commanding them to be observed by her Subjects, and abolishing the Sacrifice of the Mass, Prayers, Alms, difference of Meat, Single life, and Catholick Rites, and compelling many to forswear and abjure the authority and obedience of the Bp. of Rome, &c.] to have incurred the sentence of Anathema, and to be cut off from the unity of Christ's Body.* And moreover that she is deprived of the pretended right of her said Kingdom, and also from all rule, dignity and preheminence whatsoever, and also her Nobility, Subjects and People of the said Realm, and all others which have sworn unto her by any manner of means, are absolved for ever from such Oath, and from all duty of Empire, fidelity and obedience, in such sort as we do absolve them by these presents, and deprive the said Elizabeth of the pretended right of the Kingdom, and of all other things aforesaid. And we do command and forbid all and singular of the Nobility, Subjects, People, and others aforesaid, that they presume not to obey her admonitions, commands or laws. Whoever shall doe otherwise, we do enwrap them in the like Curse, &c. Given at Rome at St. Peters, in the year of the Incarnation of our Lord, 1569. the Fifth of the Calends of March, and of our Papacy the Fifth. Which Bull was privately hung upon the Bishop of London's Palace-gate at the West-end of St. Paul's. And such influence it had upon the spirits of many persons disaffected to the Reformed Religion, that they sought by divers means to work the Queens destruction. Many were the projects and devices to ruin the Church and Queen, but by the good providence of Almighty God, the projectors were defeated in their purposes, and suffered deserved punishment. In Norfolk John Throgmorton, Brook, Redman, and others sought

sought to raise a commotion, for the which they suffered death. Dr. Story executed for his treason 1571. John Sommervil instigated by one Hall a Seminary Priest, to murther the Queen, was executed. John Payn employed to murther her as she took her recreation abroad, was executed; so was Edmond Champion a Seminary Priest also executed. Francis Throgmorton for endeavouring to procure an Invasion, was executed. William Parry, who purposed to have murthered the Queen, was executed. Henry Percy Earl of Noribumberland, being privy to the Plots of Throgmorton for the bringing in of foreign Powers, was committed to the Tower, where to save the hangman a labour, he shot himself to the heart. Thomas Howard being too busie in some popish designs was also put to death. Other popish Traitors were likewise deservedly executed, whose names, facts and places, and times of execution for brevities sake are omitted.

A. D. 1572. Nov. 18. appeared a strange Star or Comet Northward, in the Constellation of Cassiopeia, not much less than the Planet Venus, never changing place, fixed far above the Moon's Orb, the like to which never did appear since the beginning of the World, that we reade of, saving that at the birth of Christ.

A. D. 1573. was built at London the Royal-Exchange (so named by her Majesty) whose founder was Sir Thomas Gresham.

A. D. 1576. Sir Martin Frobisher sailed into the Northeast Seas, far farther than any man before him had done, giving to those parts the name of Queen Elizabeth's Foreland. He brought from the farthest Northern Countries a Ship's lading of Mineral-Stones (as he thought) which were afterwards cast out to mend the High-ways.

A. D. 1577. and Nov. 15. Capt. Drake set sail from Plymouth, and in three years wanting twelve days he encompassed the Earth, landing again in England on Nov. 3. 1580. In America in the Countrey which he named Nova Albion the King thereof presented unto him his Network Crown of many coloured Feathers,

and therewith resigned his Sceptre of Government unto his dispose. The people there so admired the English men, that they sacrificed to them as to their Gods. At his departure from thence he reared a Monument to witness her Majesty's right to that Province, as being freely given to her Deputy both by King and People. The little Ship called the *Pelican* wherein this admirable Voyage was performed, was at her Majesty's command laid up in the Dock by *Deptford*, as a Monument of *England's* fame, and Captain *Drake* was honoured with Knighthood.

A.D. 1581. was the motion renewed for a marriage betwixt *Francis Valois* Duke of *Anjou*, and Q. *Elizabeth*; and so effectually was the suit moved, and acceptably heard of her Highness, that the Monsieur came over in person, though to the little liking of many of the English Nobles, and to the great discontent of the Commons, as was made known by a Book written against it, which cost *William Stubbs* the inditer thereof the loss of his right hand.

About A.D. 1583. the Pope and King of *Spain* sent supplies to the Irish Rebels, under the command of *Thomas Stukely* an English fugitive, whom the Pope had stiled Marques of *Ireland*. These landing in *Ireland* raised their consecrated Banner, built their Fort *Del Ore*; but the Lord *Grey of Wilton* Lord Deputy quickly put most of them to the Sword.

A.D. 1585. after several suits made unto the Queen by the distressed States of the *Netherlands*, and their Grievances recommended to her by the King of *France*, with promise of his own assistance; her Majesty was gratisly pleased to undertake their protection, sending to their assistance Sir *John Norris*, with 5000 Foot, and 1000 Horse, all retained at her Highness pay during those Wars against *Spain*, which monthly amounted to 12526 li. Sterling. For which monies so disbursed the Towns of *Flushing* and *Brill*, with two Sconces, and the Castle of *Ramekins* in *Holland*, were delivered to the Queen's use in pledge, until the money was repaid. The considerations moving her Majesty to assist the United Pro-

Provinces were, The defence of the reformed Religion; because of the bloudy Inquisition, that without respect had persecuted her Subjects; Because the King of *Spain* had sent forces into *Ireland*, and lastly, to prevent her enemy the *Spaniard* from being so nigh a neighbour to her.

A.D. 1587. and Feb. 7. was *Mary Queen of Scotland*, King *Jame's* Mother beheaded at *Fotheringhay Castle*, to the great discontent, 'tis said, of Queen *Elizabeth*, who committed Secretary *Davison* to the Tower, thereupon, and never admitted him more to his place, because of his forwardnes in promoting the death of that Roman-Catholick Queen. But what is above us is nothing to us. The matters for which she was condemned in the Star-chamber Court at *Westminster*, were her pretending title to the Crown of *England*, her being privy to certain Treasons of *Anthony Babington*, and others tending to the hurt and death of the Royal person of Queen *Elizabeth*. This she absolutely denied, affirming, that she never attempted any thing against the Queens person; though for her own delivery out of prison, she confessed she did make some attempts. *Babington* with thirteen other Traitors were executed.

A.D. 1588. *Henry III.* King of *France*, who ever honoured Queen *Elizabeth*, and not the least because of her Religion, sent speedy and secret notice unto her of the *Spaniards* intentions to invade her Realm of *England*. Against whose coming the Queen caused her Trained bands to be in readiness, *Tilbury* in *Essex* was the Place for her Camp, whereunto were appointed to march 1500 Horse, and 22000 Foot. And for her special Guard out of the several Counties of the West, East and South parts of *England*, were selected 2352 Horsemen, and 34500 Footmen. The Queen her self was Generalissimo, and *Robert Dudley* Earl of *Leicester* Lieutenant-General.

A.D. 1588. and May 19. the Armado, or invincible Navy of the *Spaniards* (as they termed it) loosed Anchor from *Lisbon*, and on July 20. it passed by *Plimouth* towards *Callia*, hoping about those Coasts to have met

met with the Prince of *Parma*, but in their way the English Fleet changed some Bullets with them. Jul. 21. the two Fleets fought within Musket-shot, when the English Admiral, Lord *Charles Howard*, fell most hotly on the Spaniards Vice-Admiral. In this fight they well perceived how that their great unwieldy Ships were unfit for service in those narrow Seas, the English smaller Ships being too nimble for them, as well in respect of saving themselves as in annoying the Spanish.

July 22. Sir *Francis Drake* Vice-Admiral took one of their great Gallions, wherein was Don *Pedro de Valdez*, with divers other Noblemen. The Souldiers had the spoil of this Ship, in which was 55000 Duckets of Gold.

July 23. The Spaniards came right against *Portland*, when the sorest fight was performed; and the English gained a great *Venetian* Ship, with other lesser ones.

July 24. The Fight was onely betwixt the four great Galleasses, and some of the English Ships.

July 25. The Spaniards came against the Isle of *Wight*, where was a terrible encounter, till at length the English so battered the Spanish tall Ships, that they were forced to secure themselves in an Half-moon posture.

July 28. As the Spanish Fleet lay at Anchor within sight of *Calais*, the English sent in amongst them eight Fire-ships filled with Gun-powder, Pitch, Brimstone, and other combustible matter, their Ordnance charged with Bullets, Stones, Chains, and the like. These being drove with wind and tide unto the Spanish Fleet, and then taking fire, such a sudden roaring clap was given, that the Spaniards affrighted, in the dead of the night, were struck into an horrible fear lest all their Ships should be fired by these, wherefore in great haste they cut their Cables, hoisted their Sails, and drove at randome into the Seas.

Jul. 29. Ranging themselves in order they approached over against *Grieveling*, where the English again getting

getting the wind of them, discharged upon them from morning till night, to the confusion of divers of the Spanish Ships. The Hollanders with thirty five of their Ships watched the Coasts about *Dunkirk*, to prevent the Duke of *Parma* from having any intercourse there.

July 30. The Spanish Dons having gotten more Searoom for their huge-bodied Hulks, spread their Sails, and made away as fast as wind and water would permit them, fearing the small Fleet and Forces of the English; whereas, had they known but the want of Powder that was on the English side, they would sure have stood longer to their Tacklings. The English Admiral followed now the Vincible Armado towards *Norway*, and the Spaniards for the saving of their fresh-water cast all their Mules and Horses over board. The Duke of *Medina* their Admiral when he at last arrived in *Spain*, was deprived of all his Authority; and other ways disgraced. Many of the Spanish Ships in their flight perished through tempest upon the *Irish Seas*, others were driven into the Chanel of *England*, where part of them were taken by the English, others by the *Rochellers*, and some arrived at *Newhaven*. Of 134 Ships which had set sail from *Lisbon* onely 53 returned into *Spain*. Of the four Galleasses of *Naples* but one, and of the ninety-one Gallions and great Hulks from divers Provinces onely thirty-three returned. Of the four Gallies of *Portugal* but one. In brief, there was missing of their whole Fleet eighty one Vessels, and of the 30000 Souldiers, 13500 and odd. Of Prisoners taken in *England*, *Ireland*, and Low-countries were 2000 and upwards. So that it appears there was small virtue in the Pope's Crusado, wherein he published a safe Pass-port for his Spaniards to enter *England*. The English Fleet was betwixt fourscore and a hundred Sail. Captains therein were the Lords *Howard* and *Sheffield*, Sir *Francis Drake*, Sir *John Hawkins*, Sir *Walter Raleigh*, Sir *Martin Frobisher*, &c. For this Deliverance the 19th of Novem. was appointed a day of Thanksgiving: *Blessed be the Lord who gave us not a prey into their teeth*, &c. *Psal. 124.*

*Octogesimus octavus, mirabilis annus.*

*Clade Papistarum, faustus ubique p[ro]s. Dr. Fulk.*

The Thunder-clap of this Armado being thus over, and the Invincible become Vincible, the Queen determined to assist Don Antonio the expuls'd King of Portugal, for the re-gaining of his Kingdom; to which end a Fleet was sent out under the conduct of Sir Francis Drake, and Sir John Norris for the Land-service was General. These landing in a Bay of Galicia near to the *Groin*, took the Base-town by surprise, which they found well victualled and stored with Wine, to the damage of the English, who taking too immoderately of it, so inflamed and infected their bloud, that it caused great sickness and mortality in the whole Army. After some conflicts with the High-town, they fired the Base-town or Suburbs, and put again to Sea; and when some struglings with the Winds were over, they recovered the *Burings*. In which passage Robert Earl of Essex with his Brother Mr. Walter Devereux, accompanied with other Gallant men came Volunteers to the Fleet, which landing in Portugal won the Town and Castle of *Peniche*. Then the English Army marched over-land to *Lisbon*, where a strong Sally was made upon the English, but the Earl of Essex chased them back to their very Gates. And the mean while Admiral Drake with his Fleet were come to *Cascais*, and possessed the Town without any resistance, and during the stay there, the English took three-score Hulks from the Spaniards laden with Corn, Masts, Cables, Copper and Wax.

About A.D. 1591. Queen Elizabeth sent Aids into France in the behalf of Henry the IV. whom the Popish Party would not admit to the Crown of France, though his absolute right, because he leaned to the Reformed Religion; nor was he admitted till he had taken Oath to defend the Roman Faith against all oppugners.

A.D.

A.D. 1596, and June the first, did Charles Lord Howard, and the Earl of Essex, with a gallant Fleet begin their Voyage for *Cadiz*, which in a short time after their coming to it, was surrendred to them. The spoil thereof was given to the English Souldiers, the wearing clothes of the inhabitants onely excepted, and the Citizens upon the payment of 120000 Duckets for their ransome had their liberty. The Spanish Fleet which lay in the Harbour valued at twelve Millions of Duckets was fired by the Admirals command, to the end it might not become a prize to the English. The Town the English burnt, and spoiled the Island, then set sail towards *Faro* a Town in *Algarve*, where the English landed, forraged the Countrey for about three leagues, burnt the Town *Lotha* and then returned for England. But the wrongs which had been offered by the Spaniards seeming far greater to the English, than was yet the justice upon them, and the wise Queen holding it best to keep the Spanish King employed at home, the Earl of Essex was therefore Commissioned with a well-furnished Fleet to sail for the *Azores* Islands. Which Fleet upon Septemb. 15. 1597, fell with the Isles of *Flores*, *Evernes*, *Fyall* and *Pike*, all which submitted to the Earl. Then he sailed for *St. Michaels*, where Sir Walter Rawleigh kept the Seas with the Ships, whilst Essex landed and sacked the rich Town *Vila Franca*; but the Winters storms approaching the Earl returned home, bringing with him a *Brazil*-ship of War, with three other prizes, valued at 400000 Duckets. The Pope and Spaniard though they had hitherto been frustrated in all their mischievous designments against the Queen and Church of England; yet still they hoped that by one treacherous means or other they might at length effect the ruin of both, though praised be God the ruin proved to their own vile instruments. Patrick Cullen, hired to murther the Queen, was executed at Tyburn. Philip Earl of Arundel, and Sir John Perrot were both condemned for high Treason, but died by course of nature. Roderick Lopez a Spaniard, one of

of the Queens Physicians, undertaking to poyson her, was with his two complices executed at Tyburn. Edmund York and Richard Williams, hired by one Holt an English-Jesuit, were executed for their Treasons. Edward Squire was executed for impoysoning the pommel of the Queens saddle, and pommels of the Earl of Essex his Chair, though by God's providence the poyson effected not what was intended by it.

One Wallpoll a Jesuite animated him to the fact, by alledging that he might do it without much danger of his life; but though he should lose his life for it, yet he should be assured that in exchange of this transitory one, he should enjoy the estate of a glorious Saint in Heaven. So meritorious it seems it is, to murther Catholick Princes, so they be not Roman-Catholick ones. But besides all these Romish-Agents there was the Irish Tir-Oen, who used his greatest endeavours to divert subjection from the English Crown, against whom that Martial Knight Sir John Norris was sent General, who after he had brought Tir-Oen to a submission (though as it after proved, but a feigned one) ended his days. The Irish Rebelling again, the Earl of Essex was sent thither, where in the Province of Munster he became terrible to those wild Irish Rebels, chasing them before him into the woods, though with more expence of time and losse of men, than was well liked by some Statists in England: Then the Earl advanced into Leinster Province against the O-Coners, and O-Moils. Then made towards Ulster where he entred into Parley with Tyrone. But her Majesty being informed (likely by some that envied the Earls being so highly in her favour) that the Spring, Summer and Autumn were spent without service upon the Arch-Traitor Tir-Oen, that her men were diminished and large sums of money consumed without the Earls doing that he was sent for; That without her Highness order he entred into Parley with the Rebels. Hereupon her Majesty sent sharp Letters unto the Earl, upon the receipt whereof, in discontent he hasted into England, well hoping to pacifie the

the Queens displeasure; but after a short verbal welcome from the Queen he was commanded to his chamber, and soon after committed to the custody of the Lord-Keeper, 1599. In the Earls stead Charles Blount Lord Montjoy was sent into Ireland, who held Tir-Oen very hard, and forced him to withdraw into his old lurking places. But to strengthen the Irish part, the King of Spain sent into Ireland two thousand old trained Spanish Souldiers, with certain fugitive Irish under the command of Don d'Aquila, who straight after his arrival published a writing, wherein he stiled himself Master-General and Captain of the Catholick King in the Wars of God, for preserving the faith in Ireland. Unto these two thousand Spaniards more were shortly sent under the conduct of Alphons O-Campo; but Alphonso had not long nested in Ireland e'er himself and three of his Captains were taken, and twelve hundred of his Spaniards were slain.

And at the siege of Kingsale the Spaniards made suit to the Lord General for a peace, which was yielded unto; whereupon the Spaniards departed, and the Irish submitted themselves to the mercifull Queen.

The Earl of Essex who had been committed to the keeping of the Lord Keeper, was by her Majesties clemency quit of that durance, and onely commanded to his own house; but the Earl of a daring spirit, and exasperated by his Martial followers, likewise presuming upon the Queens high respect towards him, resolved by force and violence to have personal conference with the Queen, and to remove from about her, such as he deemed his enemies. To effect which many of his favourers assembled at his house, as well Noble-men and Knights, as Captains and other Officers; but this being understood by the Statists, they made it known to her Majesty, who thereupon sent four of her Honourable Counsellours to the Earl to offer him Justice, and to command the Assembly to depart. These Counsellours accordingly went to the Earl of Essex-house, where they did their message to the Earl, and commanded his

his followers whom they saw about him to lay down their weapons and depart, but the Earl leaving these Counsellours under custody in his own house, with his attendants in tumultuous manner made into London, his followers crying through the streets, that the said Earl of Essex should have been murthured by Cobham, Cecill and Rawleigh.

Howbeit instead of finding that friendship in London which they expected, the Earl was proclaimed Traitor in divers places thereof. Wherefore the Earl made haste back, and fortified his own house in the Strand; but after some little resistance yielded himself to the Lord Admiral, and the same night was sent Prisoner to the Tower. And upon February the nineteenth the Earls of Essex, and Southampton were Arraigned and condemned at Westminster, and on February 25, 1600, the Earl of Essex suffered death on the Green within the Tower, whose dying Speech was to this effect, That his punishment was just, his sins innumerable, his last sin for which he died, a great, crying, bloudy and infectious sin, that had drawn others for love to him, to offend God, their Sovereign, and the World. He prayed God to forgive his sins, and her Majesty and the State to forgive him. Prayed for them, thanked God that he was never Atheist in denying the Scriptures, nor Papist in trusting to his own merits for Salvation, but in the merits of Christ Jesus his Saviour. Prayed the people to joyn with him in Prayer, that his Soul might be lifted up by faith above all earthly things, desired forgiveness of all the World, as he from his heart forgave all men.

His head was with three strokes severed from the body, and his death generally lamented. For Accessories and Abettors in the offence were executed first Captain Lee, and after him Sir Gilliam Merrick and Henry Cuff, a learned man, were executed at Tyburn, and on Fother-hill were beheaded Sir Charles Davys, and Sir Christopher Blant. But as the death of this noble person was much bewailed of the Subjects, so was it likewise of her Majesty, who would oftentimes

times shew Passions of her grief for his death, even untill her own death, which to the great sorrow of her people befell on the 24 of March, 1602. Her body was buried in Henry the seventhis Chapel at Westminster, where her Successour King James erected her a Princely Monument, *Memoriae Sacrum*, &c. She was tis said,

*Spains rod, Romes rhin, Netherlands relief,  
Earths joy, Englands gem, Worlds wonder, Natures chief.*

In her Reign were executed in England of Jesuites and Seminary-Priests, for sowing Sedition and plotting Treason the number of sixty seven, and fifty three more of them were banished.

A.D. 1571, and February the seventeenth at Kingstone near Marlech in Herefordshire, the ground opened, and certain Rocks, with a piece of ground removed and went forward the space of four days. It removed it self betwixt six of the Clock in the Evening, and seven the next morning forty paces, carrying great Trees and Sheep-coats, some with Flocks of sheep in them. It overthrew Rinnastone-Chapel, also two High-ways were removed nigh an hundred yards with Trees and Hedges. The ground thus carried being in all twenty six Acres, and where Tillage-ground was, there pasture is left in place, and where pasture there Tillage.

A.D. 1578, Mark Scalot a Black-Smitb of London made a Lock of Iron, Steel and Brass of a eleven severall pieces, and a Pipe-Key, all which weighed but one grain of Gold. He also made a Chain of Gold of forty three links, which Chain being fastned to the Lock and Key, and put about a Flea's neck, the Flea drew them with ease. Chain, Key, Lock and Flea weighed but one grain and an half.

A.D. 1580, In the Marshes of Dainsey in Essex was so infinite a number of Mice, that they almost covered the whole Marsh, and so tainted the Gras with their venomous teeth, that the Cattel grazing thereon were infected with the Murrain and died.

And

And by no Art could men destroy these Mice, but at length Owles in abundance, to the great admiration of the Countrey, came and devoured them.

In or nigh the Year of our Lord, 1591, was *William Hacket* a hot-headed Sectarist Arraigned, and found guilty of having spoken many Seditious and Traitorous words, &c. For the which he was brought from *New-gate* in *London* to a Gibbet in *Cheapside*, and there executed. Divers persons called *Brownists* were executed in several places of *England* for sowing Sedition, namely *Henry Barrow* and *John Greenwood*, one *Penrie a Welshman*, *Elias Thacker* and *John Copping*.

A. D. 1600, and August the fifth did *James* the sixth King of *Scotland* narrowly escape a grand Conspiracy, practised by the Earl of *Gowry* and his brother.

A. D. 1586, that Mirrour of men for Letters and Arms Sir *Philip Sidney* died of a wound received at *Zutphen-fight in Guelderland*.

• JAMES

---

## JAMES I.

**K**ING *James* his Title to the Crown of *England* sprung from *Henry* the seventh, whose Issue by the Male, failing in the late deceased Queen *Elizabeth*, the off-spring of *Margaret* his eldest daughter was the next Heir, which Lady *Margaret* being married unto *James* the fourth King of *Scotland* by him had Issue *James* the fifth, whose onely daughter and Child Queen *Mary* was the Mother of King *James* the sixth of that name that had swayed the Sceptre in *Scotland*. Which learned Prince when he heard of the death of Queen *Elizabeth*, set forward out of *Scotland*, and was with great joy received of all his English Subjects in his way to *London*; and at his approach unto that honourable City, the Lord Mayor and Aldermen, with five hundred choice Citizens, all in Chains of Gold and well-mounted, met his Majesty, and with all solemn observance attended him unto the *Charter-house*. Then preparations were made for his Coronation, but before the day appointed thereunto, a Proclamation came forth, that no Citizen should presume to approach the Court, the City having buried in one week above one thousand of the plague. And yet a greater plague than this was intended against *England* about the Kings coming in, had not God in his mercy prevented it, For *Pope Clement* the eighth having sent unto *Henry Garnet* Superior of the *Jesuites* in *England* two Bulls, therein prohibiting any to be admitted to the Crown, unless he would first tolerate the *Romish Religion*, and by all his best endeavours advance that *Catholick* cause; Hereupon the *Pope's* creatures, to do their unholy Father the best service they could, combined with some (whom private discontents had discomposed) to surprize the King's person and

A.D.  
1602.

and Prince Henry, intending to retain them Prisoners in the Tower, or if they could not gain the Tower then to carry them to Dover-Castle, and there to keep them till they had brought the King to their own terms, and completed their designs. The Persons accused for this Conspiracy were Henry Brook, Lord Cobham, Thomas Lord Grey of Wilton, Sir Walter Raleigh, Sir Griffin Markham, Sir Edward Parham, George Brook, and Bartholomew Brooksby Esquires, Anthony Copley Gentleman, Watson and Clark Priests.

A. D. 1603, and July 21, King James and Queen Anne were Crowned at Westminster by John Whitgift Arch-bishop of Canterbury, and when the Coronation was over the Conspiratours were conveyed to Winchester, (where the Term was then kept, because of the plague at London) and there had their Tryal, and were all condemned by their Jury, save Sir Edward Parham: Howbeit onely three of them were executed, namely, Watson, Clark and George Brook. This business thus Transacted for the safety of King and Kingdom, his Majesty to gratifie the Puritan, or Presbyterian party, (that had petitioned for a reformation in the English Church) commanded an Assembly of selected Divines to appear in his Royal presence at Hampton-Court, whither the summoned accordingly repaired. Persons summoned to maintain the cause of the Church of England were the Arch-bishop of Canterbury, Bishops of London, Durham, Winchester, &c.

Persons for the reformation of the Church were Dr. Reynolds, and Dr. Sparks of Oxford, Mr. Knewstubs and Mr. Chaderton of Cambridge. At this conference his Majesty notably vindicated the Church of England: See the conference at Hampton Court Printed, 1604. After an indeavour of setting Church-peace, the King commanded a new Translation of the holy Scriptures, which was accordingly done.

A. D. 1604, and August the nineteenth was Peace proclaimed betwixt the two Nations of Spain and England. And the King to joyn the Nations of England and Scotland into an happy unity, caused himself by Proclamation to be styled King of Great Britain.

Britain. A Proclamation also came forth commanding all Jesuits and Seminary Priests out of the Land; Bancroft but these underminers of Church and State, mean A.B.Cant. not to leave England so, but design to stay and triumph in its ruins, purposing by one fatal-blow to destroy the King, the Prince, the Peers both Temporal and Spiritual, the Knights, and Burgeses of Parliament.

And the Traytors intent, when that damnable villany should be effected was, to surprise the Queen, and remainder of the King's Issue, to bring in foreign powers, and to alter Religion. Sir Edward Baynham an Attainted person was sent to the Pope to acquaint him with the designed Gunpowder-Treason, and Thomas Winter brought with him out of Flanders, Guy Fawkes as a fit Executioner of their hellish project. The Conspiratours resolved among themselves, that it was lawfull for ease of Conscience to destroy the innocent with the nocent, and this by the Authority and judgment of Garnet himself.

Then they took Oath of secerseie, swearing by the blessed Trinity, and the Sacrament they then were about to receive, never to disclose directly or indirectly, by word or circumstance, this their Plot in hand, nor any of them to desist from the Execution thereof, untill the rest of the Conspiratours should give leave. This done Mr. Thomas Piercy hired an house next adjoyning to the Parliament-house, pretending it to be for his Lodgings, and Guy Fawkes, who changed his name into Johnson, was to be his man, and to have the keeping of the Keys of the House. Decemb. 11. 1604. the Traytors entred into their work of darknes, beginning their Mine, and by Christmas Eve they had brought their work under an entry unto the wall of the Parliament-house, underproppiug all still as they undermined. The wall which was very hard and nine foot thick with great labour they wrought half-way thorow; but then it happennig that a Cellar was to be lett, which was under the Parliament-house, they ceased their under-mining, and Thomas Piercy hired X the

the Cellar for the laying in of his Winter-fuel, Wood and Coal. But instead of these, they stored it with thirty six Barrels of Gun-Powder, upon which they laid bars of Iron, logs of Timber, Massie stones, Iron-crows, Pick-Axes, with the rest of their undermining Tools, and, to cover all, store of Billets and Fagots: So that now all was in readiness against the next meeting of the Parliament. The secular Traitors had hitherto done their parts, nor were the Jesuitical Priests wanting on their parts in doing their utmost. Their Masses and Sacrifices they usually concluded with Prayers for their brethrens good success, supplicating their God to prosper their pains who laboured in his cause day and night, and that Heresie might vanish away like smoke, and their memory perish with a crack, like the ruin and fall of a broken House: But through the goodness of the God of Heaven these Romish-Saints were taken, in the snare that they had laid for the just. They wrought their own destruction; For upon Thursday in the evening ten days before the Parliament were to convene, a Letter directed to the Lord Mont-Eagle, was delivered to a Footman of his in the Street, by an unknown person, with a charge to deliver it into his Lords own hand. This Letter, without date or subscription of name, somewhat unlegible and of strange contents, perplexed the Lord; he hastes therefore to White-hall there to impart it to the Lord Cecil Earl of Salisbury principal Secretary, who shewed it to the Lord Chamberlain and other Lords, and then conveyed it to the King. The Letter was as followeth.

*My Lord, Out of the love I bear to some of your Friends, I have a care of your preservation. Therefore I would advise you, as you tender your life to devise some excuse to shift your attendance at this Parliament. For God and Man have concurred to punish the wickedness of this time, and think not lightly of this Advertisement, but retire your self into the Countrey, where you may expect the event in safety. or though there be no appearance of any stir, yet I say, you shall perceive a terrible blow this Parliament, and yet they*

*shall*

*shall not see who hurts them. This council is not to be condemned, because it may do you good, and can do you no harm, for the danger is past, so soon as you have burnt the Letter. And I hope God will give you the grace to make good use of it, to whose holy protection I commend you.*

His Majesty after he had read this Letter, first paus'd a while; then reading it again, delivered his judgment upon it; That he apprehended by these words of receiving a terrible blow this Parliament, and yet should not see who hurt them; That a sudden danger by blast of Gun-powder should be intended by some base Villain in a corner, no Insurrection, Rebellion, or desperate attempt appearing. And therefore he wished that the Rooms under the Parliament-House might be throughly searched, which accordingly was done Novemb. 4<sup>th</sup>. about Midnight, at which time Sir Thomas Knevet went to search those under Rooms; Where at the entrance into the Cellar he found Guy Fawkes at so unseasonable a time, cloaked and booted, whom he apprehended, then entring the Cellar he found therein under the Billets thirty six Barrels of Powder; and when he came to search the Traitor Fawkes, he found about him a dark Lanthorn, three Matches and other instruments for blowing up of the Powder. And the Villain no whit daunted, instantly confessed himself guilty; but so far from repentance, That he vowed, if he had been found within the Room, he would have blown up himself and them all.

And when he was brought before the Lords of the Council, he lamented nothing so much, as that the deed had not been done, saying, That the Devil and not God, was the discoverer of the Plot. But the news of the Plots discovery coming to the ears of Catesby, Piercy, Rookwood, the Wrights, and Thomas Winter, they posted into Warwickshire to other of their associates, who now began an open Rebellion, pretending that all the Catholicks throats were appointed to be cut. And after that they had hovered about a while, they fled to Holdbeth in Herefordshire, whither they were pursued, and where John Wright and Christopher

*Christopher Wright* Gentlemen making opposition were slain, and *Thomas Piercy* and *Robert Gatesby* Esquires fighting back to back were both of them slain with one Bullet, others were there taken.

A.D. 1605, and January 27th. Sir *Everard Digby* Knight, *Thomas Winter*, *Robert Winter*, *Ambrose Rookwood*, *John Grant* Gentleman, *Robert Keys*, *Thomas Bates*, and *Guydo Fawkes* were tryed, found guilty and condemned, and on Thursday following *Digby*, *Grant*, *Bates* and *Robert Winter* were hang'd and quartered at the West-end of Saint Pauls, and on Friday the rest were executed in the Parliament-yard at Westminster. In memory of this great deliverance, the fifth of November (being the day appointed for the execution of this Hellish Plot) was by Authority of Parliament Enacted to be observed a day of Thanksgiving.

A.D. 1606, March 28th, was *Henry Garnet* Provincial of the English Jesuites Arraigned for concealing the foresaid Treason, and on May the third was executed at the West-end of St. Pauls. At his death confessing his fault, asking forgiveness, and exhorting all Catholicks never to attempt any Treason against the King or State, as a thing which God would never prosper.

A.D. 1607, was an Insurrection in Northampton, Warwick, and Leicester-shires, about the throwing down of Inclosures. At first the rout was without any particular head, but at length one *John Reynolds* undertook to be their Captain, affirming to the company, that in his great Pouch hanging by his side, he had sufficient to defend them against all opposers; though afterwards being apprehended, and his Pouch searched, there was nothing found in it but a piece of green Cheese.

June 12th, King James was entered a brother of the Cloth-workers, when also many Lords and Gentlemen were made free of the same Company.

A.D. 1608, *George Jervis* a Seminary Priest, and *Thomas Garnet* a Jesuit were executed at Tyburn, the last of which had pardon offered him, if he would take the

the Oath of Supremacy; but the Traitor would hang rather.

About this time were many famous English Pirates, some of whom denied their faith and turned Turks, living in great State at Tunis, as Captain *Ward*, *Bishop*, *Sir Francis Verney* and *Glanvil*. Nineteen of the Pirates were taken, and hanged at Wapping.

A.D. 1609, was the New-Exchange built, the King naming it Britains-Burse. In the same year the King by Proclamation prohibited all foreign Nations from fishing on any of the the coasts of England, Scotland, Ireland, or the Isles adjacent, without special License from his Commissioners. In this year also the King according to an ancient custome had aid of his Subjects through England, for making his eldest Son Prince *Henry* Knight.

A.D. 1610, Inne the 4th, all Roman Priests, Jesuites and Seminaries, as being the Incendiaries of disturbances, were commanded to depart the Realm. Then the Oath of Allegiance was ministred to all sorts of the People.

His Majesty caused to be built the goodliest Ship of War that had ever been built in England, being of the burthen of 1400 Tun, and carrying 64 pieces of Ordnance, Prince *Henry* named it the Prince.

A.D. 1612, The Corps of *Mary* late Queen of Scotland, The Kings Mother, was translated from Peterborough to the Chapel-Royal at Westminster. On November the sixth following Prince *Henry* died of a malignant Fever, which reigned that year in most parts of the Land. Some said that he died by poisoned Grapes which he eat; others, by Gloves of a poisoned perfume given him for a present: but be his death by what means it would, certain it is, that he was infinitely beloved of the people, as one that had given great hopes of proving a wise and Martial Prince.

February 14th, the Marriage of the Prince Palatine of the Rhine with the Princess Elizabeth was solemnized in the Chapel at White-Hall. She was attired all in white, having a rich Crown of Gold upon her head;

head; her hair hanging down at length, curiously beset with Pearls, and pretious stones; her train supported by twelve young Ladies all in white. In this same year, the City of *London*, having before had the Province of *Ulster* granted them by the King for a plantation sent thither about three hundred persons of all sorts of Handy-crafts-men, chiefly to inhabit the Cities of *London derry* and *Coleraign*. And for the advancing of this or the like Plantation in *Ireland*, the King about this time began a new Order of Knights called Baronets, which Order he stinted within the number onely of two hundred; and as the Issue should fail, the Order to cease. About this time also an exemplar Punishment was imposed upon Sir *Peckshall Brockas*, which was to stand at *Pauls-Crof* in a white sheet, holding a wand in his hand, he having been formerly convicted before the High-Commissioners, for many notorious adulteries with divers Women.

About A. D. 1614, Mr. *Hugh Middleton* Citizen and Goldsmith of *London*, with infinite cost and labour brought the New-River to the City of *London*, from the two great Springs of *Chadwell* and *Anwell* in *Hartfordshire*. And about the same time was the *Moor-Fields* by *London* converted from deep stinking Ditches, and noisome Common-shores, to pleasant sweet Walks.

A. D. 1615, *Smithfield* which was before a rude dirty place, was paved all over, and the middle part thereof railed in.

September 27th, the Lady *Arbella* the Kings Cousin-German died. She had sometime before, without the Kings privity, secretly married the Earl of *Hartfords* younger Son, for which they were both committed to the Tower.

Sir *Edward Cook* the famous Lawyer, upon some displeasure was discharged from being Lord Chief Justice.

In this year was a divorce made betwixt Robert *Devereux* Earl of *Essex*, and his Countess, for his Insufficiency, and she left free to marry any other.

After

After which divorce Robert *Carre* Earl of *Somerset* George took her to Wife. But Sir *Thomas Overbury* the Earls Abbot, special friend having dissuaded the match, and perhaps laid some imputation on the Ladies fame, according to desert, did by this means so incense these Lovers against him, that they first made means to have the said ingenious Gentleman committed to the Tower, and then by their instruments to have him poisoned; some say, by a *Tansey* sent him to eat; some, by a Clister ministred to him. For which fact Sir *Gervas Elwes* then Lieutenant of the Tower, and Mrs. *Turner*, with others, were put to death. The Earl and his Countess were also arraigned and condemned, but had a lease of their lives granted them for ninety-nine years, yet so as after never to see the Kings face more. This made way for the advancement of Mr. *George Villiers*; for this great favorite the Lord *Carre* being upon this occasion laid aside, the said Mr. *Villiers* was accepted in his stead. Whom the King first of all Knighted and made Gentleman of his Bed-chamber, soon after Viscount and Master of his Horse, a while after Earl of *Buckingham*, then Marquis of *Buckingham* and Lord High Admiral, and lastly Duke of *Buckingham*. A person, tis said, he was of delicate composure of body, and of excellent natural parts, and one that was very mindfull of his Relations and Kindred, most of whom he procured to be advanced.

A. D. 1618, Sir *Walter Razeigh*, who had lived a condemned man many years in the Tower of *London*, now to procure some liberty, propounded to the King a project for the fetching of Gold from a Mine in *Guyana*, and that without any wrong to the King of *Spain*. This the King condescended unto, and Sir *Walter* set forward in his Voyage; but when after a real, or onely a shew of search no treasure could be found, he fell upon St. *Thome* belonging to the King of *Spain*, which he plundered and burnt, then returned, though to his ruin. For though Sir *Walter* sought to excuse his spoiling of St. *Thome*, by alledging that the *Spaniards* had first assaulted him;

X 4

an*i*

and moreover, that he could not come at the Mine without first winning of that Town ; yet did the Spanish Lieger Gundamore so aggravate this his fault, and prevailed so with the King, who preferred the publick peace, before the life of a man already condemned, that he gave way to have the Sentence of his former condemnation executed upon him. And accordingly this man famous for Letters and Arms was beheaded in the Parliament-yard at Westminster. His own Epitaph he had framed himself in these Lines;

*Even such is time which takes in trust,  
Our youth, our joys, and all we have,  
And pays us nought but age and dust,  
When in the dark and silent grave.  
When we have wandered all ~~our~~ ways,  
Shuts up the Story of our days.  
And from which Grave, and Earth, and Dust.  
The Lord will raise me up, I trust.*

In this Year 1618, and March the second, Queen Anne died at Hampton-Court, and was buried at Westminster. The November preceding her death a famous Comet or Blazing Star appeared.

A. D. 1620, July the seventeenth, Bernard Calvert of Andover, rode from St. George's Church in Southwark to Dover, from thence passed by Barge to Calais in France, and from thence returned back to St. George's Church the same day. This his journey he performed betwixt the hours of three in the morning and eight in the afternoon.

A. D. 1621, Sir Francis Michel a Justice of the Peace of Middlesex, was Sentenced by Parliament to Ride with his face to the Horse-tail through the City of London, for practising sundry abuses in setting up new Ale-houses, and exacting Monies contrary to the Law. This Sentence was executed upon him. Sir Francis Bacon Viscount St. Albans, Lord Chancellor of England, was for bribery (but it was his Servants that were bribed) put out of his place, and committed to the Tower for some days.

*A. D.*

A. D. 1621, the Count Palatine of the Rhine was elected King of Bohemia by the States of that Kingdom ; but immediately after, the Emperour with great forces assaulted him in Prague, drove him, with his Wife and Children from thence, and deprived him of his Patrimony the Palatinate. Prince Charles about this time by great Gundamore's persuasion, was sent into Spain in order to the gaining of the Infanta to Wife, it being suggested that by that match with Spain, a re-settlement of the Prince Palatine in his Patrimony might have been procured. But when the Prince was arrived in Spain, though he found Royal entertainment in the Conrt, yet was he suffered to have little acquaintance with the Infanta, insomuch that in all his eight months stay in Spain, he never spake with her but twice, and that before company, with certain limitations also what he should speak to her. Some thought that a difference betwixt the Duke of Buckingham (then with the Prince) and Count Olivares the King of Spain's great Favorite, was no small obstruction to the match. Others thought that the King of Spain never intended any such thing, but meant only by this Treaty to spin out time till he had compassed some designs in the Low-Countries and Palatinate. But howsoever it was, Gundamore made some good improvement of the Treaty to himself, for he persuaded some English Ladies of the certainty of the match, and they gave him good Sums of money to be put in such or such an Office when the Spanish Prince should come to the English Court. King James at last wearied with delaies, if not angered with the delusion, sent for the Prince to return, which accordingly he did ; and not long after, this Treaty of marriage with Spain was utterly ended, and the King made preparations both of men and money to recover the Palatinate, and sent to Treat with a marriage with France.

A.D. 1625, and March 27th, this Politick and Peaceable Monarch King James died of an Ague at Theobalds, and was buried at Westminster with great solemnity, and

and greater lamentations of his Subjects. His Wife was *Anne* the Daughter of *Frederick* the Second, King of Denmark, His Issue were *Henry*, *Charles*, *Elizabeth*; and *Mary* and *Sophia* who both died young.

Two obstinate *Arian-Hereticks Bartholomew Legate*, and *Edward Wightman* were burnt, the first in *Smithfield*, the other at *Lichfield*. *George Abbot* Arch-bishop of *Canterbury* being on hunting, as he shot at a Deer, his Arrow by mischance glanced and killed a man, but he was cleared; yet out of a Religious tenderness, he kept the day of the year on which the mischance hapned, with a solemn fast all his life after.

The murther of one *Walters* murthered by his Wife, was discovered by a dream. One of the said *Walters* neighbours dreamed that *Walters* was strangled and buried in such a certain dung-hill, which upon search was found true, and the Wife was burned for the fact.

*Robert Dove*, Merchant-Taylor of *London*, gave competent means for ever for the tolling of a Bell in *S. Sepulchers Church*, to mind good people to pray for such Malefactors as are to be executed out of *Newgate*, and to cease when they are executed. Every Execution day this Bell should begin to toll at Six in the morning.

The Wife of *Richard Homewood* of *East Grinstead* in *Sussex*, without any known cause, murthered her own three Children, and threw them into a Pit, and then cut her own throat.

*A. D. 1606*, *Virginia* was planted with an *English Colony*. It was first discovered *A. D. 1584*, by *Sir Walter Rawleigh*, who is said to have first brought that charming weed *Tobacco* into *England*. The *Bermudas* and *New-England* were also made *English Plantations*. King *James* for a Sum of money quit the *Cautionary Towns*, *Brill*, &c.

*A. D. 1608.* and *April 11.* hapned a dreadfull Fire at *St. Edmondsbury* in *Suffolk*, which did much spoil to many fair Buildings, and consumed One hundred and sixty Houses, &c. The damage amounting to the value of Threescore thousand pounds and upwards. To the

the repairing of which los, his Majesty himself contributed very liberally, as also the Gentry of that County, and City of *London*.

*A.D. 1612.* A blazing Star was seen streaming toward the West; infinite slaughters and devastations following both in *Germany* and other places.

## CHARLES

## C H A R L E S I.

March  
27. 1625.  
*A. D.*

**C**HARLES the First was born at *Dunferling* in *Scotland* on *November* the nineteenth *A. D.* 1600. but in so much weakness that his Baptism was hastned. In the second year of his Age he was created Duke of *Albany*, Marques of *Ormond*, Earl of *Ross*, and Baron of *Ardmonack*.

In the fourth year of his Age he was brought to the English Court, and made Knight of the Bath, and invested with the Title of Duke of *York*. In his eleventh year he was made Knight of the Garter, and in his twelfth year Duke of *Cornwall*. In his sixteenth year he was created Prince of *Wales*, Earl of *Chester* and *Flint*, the revenues thereof being assigned to maintain his Court. In his nineteenth year he performed a Jousting at *White-hall*, wherein he acquitted himself with a bravery equal to his dignity.

*A. D.* 1622. he was sent into *Spain* there to contract a Marriage with the *Infanta*, whither he was to pass *incognito* through *France*, accompanied only with the Marques of *Buckingham*, Mr. *Endymion Porter*, and Mr. *Francis Cottington*. But this attempt of King *James* in sending him to the Court of *Spain* raised the censures of the World upon him, as being too forgetfull of the inhospitality of Princes to each other, when they have been found in another's Dominions. And this none other daring to mind the King of, his Jester *Archee* did it after this manner: He came to exchange Caps with the King; Why so? said King *James*? Because, said *Archee*, thou hast sent the Prince into *Spain*, from whence he is never like to return. But, said the King, what wilt

## C H A R L E S I.

317.

wilt thou say when thou seest him come back again? Marry, said the Jester, I will take off the Fool's Cap which I now put upon thy head for sending him thither, and put it on the King of *Spains* for letting him return.

When the Prince was returned from *Spain*, a Wife was sought for him from *France*, by a Marriage with *Henrietta Maria*, the Daughter of King *Henry* the fourth. The love of whom the Prince had received by the eye, and she of him by the ear: For having formerly received impressions from the reports of his gallantry, when he was told of his passing through *Paris*, he answered, That if he went to *Spain* for a Wife, he might have had one nearer home, and saved himself a great part of that labour. Prince *Charles* after the celebrating of his Father's Funeral, whereat himself was chief Mourner, he next hastned the coming over of his dearest Consort the Princess *Henrietta Maria*, whom the Duke of *Chevereux* had in his name espoused at the Church of *Nostredame* in *Paris*; and he receiving her at *Dover*, the next day after *Trinity-Sunday* at *Canterbury* began the Nuptial embraces.

In the eighteenth, a Parliament was assembled, at the opening of which the King acquainted them with the necessities of supplies for the War with *Spain*, which themselves importunately had ingaged his Father in, and made it as hereditary to him as the Crown. But through the practice of some unquiet persons of that Parliament, two Petitions, one respecting Religion, the other, redress of Grievances, were brought into debate, both formed in King *James* time, which delayed the succours and increased the necessities; Yet at length the Parliament granted two Subsidies. Which done, and divers Acts passed, the Parliament was adjourned till *August*, and their Convention to be at *Oxford*, by reason of the Plague then raging in *London*. When the Parliament was met again according to the time appointed, there were high and furious debates of grievances, as, That evil Councils

Councils guided the King ; That the Treasury was misemployed , with reflections on the Duke of Buckingham's miscarriages. The Commons consulting to divest the Duke of his Admiralty, and to demand an account of those publick moneys where-with he had been intrusted. The King hereupon dissolved the Parliament. And the infection decreasing at *London*, his Majesty was crowned at *Westminster*, February the second, and February the sixth another Parliament was begun, wherein the Commons voted, the King four Subsidies. But some of the Members highly taxed the Duke of *Buckingham*, and Articles were carried up against him to the Lord's House- for his ill management of the Admiralty , his ingrossing Offices , preferring his Kindred to places unfit for them, making sale of places of Judicature, and his Mother and Father in law's fostering of Popish Recusants.

These leading Commoners were Mr. *Cook*, Dr. *Turner*, Sir *Dudley Diggs*, Sir *John Elliot*, and Sir *William Walter*. And to make the Faction more sport, the Duke and Earl of *Bristol* did mutually impeach each other. But his Majesty to put a stop to these contests, dissolved the Parliament June 18. 1626. before the Bill for the Subsidies was passed. Therefore the King by the advice of his Council took care to provide money some other way; hence followed the levying of Customs and Imposts upon all such Merchandizes as were imported and exported. Then Compositions to be made with Recusants for the Leases of their Lands and Tenements, for forfeitures due since the tenth year of King *James*. Also Privy-Seals were issued out, and Benevolence proposed, &c. The several Maritime Counties and Port-Towns were ordered by the Council to set out Ships for the guarding of the Sea Coasts, against the attempts of *Spain* and *Flanders*, which they very unwillingly, if at all yielded unto. A Royal Fleet was also preparing to be set out, designed for *Barbary*, as was given out. But at last as the most expeditious way for raising of money,

money, a general Loan was resolved upon, and Commissioners forthwith appointed for the purpose; which grand Assessment of the Loan met with much opposition from People of all sorts and degrees, upon which divers Gentlemen were committed Prisoners, and George Abbot Archbishop of *Canterbury*, refusing to license a Book in behalf of the Loan, was suspended for a time from his Archiepiscopal jurisdiction ; and Dr. *Williams* Bishop of *Lincoln* for speaking some words concerning the Loan in disadvantage of the King , fell into some disfavour; and Sir *Randolph Crew* for being backward to promote it, was displaced from his Office of Lord Chief Justice.

A. D. 1627. His Majesty being now sued by the French Protestants of *Rochel* for his protection, and because the King of *France* had seized on the English Merchants goods in the River of *Burdeaux*, therefore sent the Duke of *Buckingham* to attack the Isle of *Rhee*, which had now submitted to the English valour, had not the Duke managed that War more with the *Gayeties of a Courtier*, than the Arts of a Souldier. In this expedition many brave Englishmen lost their lives, from which when the Duke was returned, those poor remains of his Army, most of them Irish and Scots, were billeted in divers Villages of *England*, to the great discontent of the Country. This Expedition being so unhappy , and the miseries of *Rochel* making them importunate for the King's assistance, he therefore summoned a Parliament to meet March the 17<sup>th</sup> 1627. He also passed a Commission under the great Seal to levy moneys throughout the Nation by impositions in nature of Excise.

Not long before the convention of the Parliament there were apprehended a company of Jesuits at *Clerkenwell* by *London*, where amongst the rest of their Papers, there was found the Copy of a Letter written to their Father Rector at *Brussels*, in which the Author of it acquainted Father Rector with

with all the subtle Plots their Society here had laid for the embroiling this State, and for the erecting of an universal Catholick Monarchy, and to this end, he said, they chiefly made use of Arminians and Projectours; also how that many times, to bring their Purposes about, they pretended themselves to be Puritans.

When the Parliament were met at their prefixed time, there was forthwith presented to the House of Commons a certain Paper, called a Speech without-doors. Wherein was laid open the miscarriages of many Persons in places of Trust, with several sorts of National grievances. The first matter that the Parliament took into their consideration, was the grievances of the Country, and the first grievance they debated was the Case of those Gentlemen, who having refused the Loan, were notwithstanding their *Habeas Corpus* committed to prison. This business took up a long debate and earnest, which was chiefly managed by Sir *Francis Seymour*, Sir *Thomas Wentworth*, Sir *Benjamin Rudyard*, Sir *Edward Cook*, and Sir *Robert Philips*. Next the House proceeded to the drawing up of a Petition against Recusants, to which Petition the King gave a satisfactory answer. Then after the granting of the King five Subsidies, they took into debate the Petition of Right, wherein they prayed his most Excellent Majesty,

First, That no man hereafter be compelled to make or yield any Gift, Loan, Benevolence, Tax, or such like charge, without common consent by A&E of Parliament, and that none be called to make answer, or to take such Oaths, or to give attendance, or be confined, or otherwise molested concerning the same.

Secondly, That no Freeman be taken and imprisoned, or be dispossessed of his freedom or liberty, or his free customes, or be outlawed, or exiled, but by the lawfull judgment of his Peers, or by the Laws of the Land.

Thirdly, That the Souldiers, and Mariners now billeted in divers Counties, might be removed; and

and the People not be burdened so in the future.

Fourthly, That the late Commissions for proceeding by Martial-law might be revoked and annulled, and that hereafter no Commission of like nature might be issued forth. To all which the King at last yielded his consent; sending this Answer to the Parliament, *Soit droit fait comme il est desiree*. And to the Peoples further satisfaction, his Majesty received into his favor the Archbishop of Canterbury, the Bishop of Lincoln, the Earls of Essex, Lincoln, Warwick, Bristol, and the Lord Say.

The Parliament next resume their accusation of the Duke of *Buckingham*, against whom they drew up another Remonstrance; the like they did against Bishop *Neal*, and Bishop *Laud*, and at last were about to take away the King's right to Tunnage and Poundage; whereupon the King adjourned them till October the 20th. and afterward by Proclamation till the 20th. of January following.

About this time Dr. *Lamb* a favorite of the Duke of *Buckingham's*, and supposed Necromancer, was killed in *London* by the rout of People, who hated him both for his own sake and the Dukes, A.D. 1628. During the last Session a Fleet of fifty Sail was sent to the relief of *Rochel*, but was repelled with much loss. Then another expedition was agreed on, and a more formidable Fleet was prepared; but as the Duke of *Buckingham* was at *Portsmouth*, halting his preparations for Sea, he was suddenly stab'd by Lieutenant *Felton*, who after his apprehension being demanded what invited him to the bloody fact, boldly answered, That he killed him for the Cause of God and his Country. The murderer was hang'd at *Tyburn*, his Body sent to *Portsmouth*, where without the Town it was hanged up in Chains.

In the Dukes place the Earl of *Lindsey* an excellent Souldier was sent for the aid of *Rochel*, who after some Valiant, yet fruitless Attempts, returned into *England*, and the *Rochellers* to the Obedience of the French King. And within a short time after

Peace was concluded betwixt *France* and *England*. January the 20th. The Parliament Assembled again, when they prepared a Bill against Tunnage and Poundage, and the Commons made a Protestation amongst themselves, That whosoever should seek to introduce Popery or Arminianism, or other Opinions disagreeing from the true and Orthodox Church, should be reputed a capital Enemy to the Commonwealth; That whosoever should Counsel or Advise the taking or levying the Subsidies of Tunnage or Poundage, not being granted in Parliament, or should be an Actor or Instrument therein, should likewise be reputed an Enemy to the Commonwealth; or whosoever should voluntarily pay the same not being granted by Parliament, should be reputed a betrayer of the Liberties, and an Enemy of the Commonwealth. Hereupon his Majesty presently Dissolved the Parliament. After which he called to question certain refractory Members at the Council Table; Namely, Sir *John Elliot*, Sir *Miles Hobard*, Mr. *Denzil Hollis*, Sir *Peter Hayman*, Sir *John Barrington*, Mr. *Selden*, Mr. *Stroud*, Mr. *Coriton*, Mr. *Long*, Mr. *Valentine*, and Mr. *Kirron*, who were all committed to Prison. But by the Dissolving of the Parliament 1629. the popular odium was in a high measure stirred up against the great Ministers of State, as was manifested by certain invective Libels published against Bishop *Laud*, and the Lord Treasurer *Weston*.

Some there were in those times, who considering how little success the Kings Affairs had by this and the two former Parliaments, 'tis said, advised his Majesty never for the future to call any more Parliaments. And for the better carrying on of the design, a Book of Projects was published and dispersed in several places, containing a Proposition addrest to the King, how he might so order the matter as not to be troubled in the future with the impertinencies (as 'twas worded) of Parliaments. Some of those Projects for the avoiding of Parliaments were, For the King to demand the tenth part of Mens Estates;

Estates; To take the benefit of Salt into his own hands; to demand a Rate for the sealing of Weights every Year; To demand an Impost for Wools; At the Princes Marriage to raise the Degrees of Men, as from Earls to Marquesses, &c. and to make rich Yeomen and Farmers Esquires, each paying for their Honors according to their several degrees. With many like conceits.

This year a Peace was concluded with *Spain*.

A.D. 1630. and May 29. was Prince Charles Born and about Noon of the same Day was a Star seen in the Firmament.

In this Year was the old Prerogative Statute for Knighthood put in execution, whereby those who had Estates of 40*l. per annum*, were summoned to appear to receive Knighthood, and upon default to be fined; by which means one hundred thousand pounds was brought into the Exchequer. Sir *Thomas Wentworth* was now made Viscount *Wentworth* and Lord President of the North.

A.D. 1631. Mervin Lord *Audly Earl of Castlehaven*, was Arraigned for Rape and Sodomy, when divers unnatural and Beastly Acts were proved against him; for the which he was Condemned, and on May the fourteenth Beheaded on *Tower-hill*. He so pleased himself in his Impieties, that he boasted, that as others had their several delights, some in one thing, some in another, so his whole delight was in damning Souls, by enticing People to such Acts as might surely effect it. He was educated a Protestant, but turned Papist, and so died.

A.D. 1632. His Majesty recalled the Lords Justices out of *Ireland*, tho then had the Government thereof, and in their stead sent thither the Lord *Wentworth*, as Lord Deputy.

The King recommended to the Nobility and Gentry, theraising amongst themselves a large contribution towards the reparation of St. Paul's Church in London; which motion was so far entertained, that a considerable sum was gathered, and the work had a fair progress.

A.D. 1633. and May 13. the King took a Journey into *Scotland* there to be Crowned, and it was but time for him so to do; for not long before this, he had received a Letter from a Scotch Lord, wherein was this expression, That shou'd he longer defer his coming to be Crowned, the People might perhaps be inclined to make choice of a new King. As soon as the Coronation Rites were accomplished, the King summoned a Parliament, and past an Act for the ratification of all those Laws that King *James* had made in that Nation, for the better regulation of that Church, both as to the Government and Worship of it. Which Act too many sinister persons opposed, because it favored of establishing Episcopacy.

October the 13<sup>th</sup>. was *James Duke of York* Born, the Book for tolerating Sports on the Lord's day, first published by King *James*, was now ratified, which greatly distasted the Puritanical Party, and many Episcoparians also.

A.D. 1634. The English Coasts being infested with Pickeroons, Turks, and Dunkirk Pirates, and the Fishing usurped by the Hollanders, on the Kings Dominions, in the narrow Seas, and the Kings Exchequer not being able to furnish out a Fleet sufficient for the repressing these Incroachers, his Majesty hereupon consults his Attourney-general *Noy* what might be done herein; *Noy* acquaints him with ancient Presidents of railing a Tax upon the Nation, for setting forth a Fleet in case of danger, and assures him of the legality of the way in proceeding by Writs to that effect; which Counsel being imbraced, there were Writs directed to the several Counties, for such a contribution, as might in the whole build, furnish, and maintain 47 Ships for the safety of the Kingdom: but this Tax was by many disrellished, and censured as a breach of the civil liberties, and to be against Law, because not laid by Parliament; and Mr. *John Hampden* and others refused to pay this Ship-money, standing it to a Tryal of Law; against whom several of the Judges to whom

the

the King had referred the Cause, gave Judgment, *Hutton* and *Crook* excepted.

The Pirates were curb'd by the Kings Fleet, and the Hollanders reduced to a precarious use of the English Seas.

A.D. 1637. Mr. *Pryn*, Dr. *Bastwick*, and Mr. *Burton*, a Lawyer, Physician and Divine, for writing against Episcopacy and Bishops, were sentenced to pay 5000*l.* to the King, to lose their Ears in the Pillory, which they did, and then were sent into banishment, or remote confinement. Dr *Williams* Bishop of *Lincoln* was fined, and suspended from his Offices and Benefits, and imprisoned, for underhandly fomenting popular Disaffections, and venting some dishonorable Speeches concerning the King.

Now about these times many of those called Puritans, by reason of the severe proceeds against them, passed over into *New England*, and there seated themselves; others into *Holland*.

July 13. While the Dean in his sacerdotal Habiments was reading a new composed Liturgy, in St. *Giles*'s Church at *Edinburgh*, the common People both Men and Women flung Cudgels, Stones, Stools, or any thing that came next hand, at him; and after that was done, reinforced their assaults upon the Bishops then present. Nor was it the Rabble only, that were disaffected to the Church Liturgy and Discipline, but Persons of all Degrees and Orders, who mutually obliged themselves, and the Scottish Nation, in a Hellish Covenant to extirpate Episcopacy, and to defend each other against all Persons. To reduce this People to a more peaceful practice, the King sent Marques *Hamilton* as his Commissioner; but he secretly encouraged the Covenanters, directing by his Counsels the first motions of those his Dependents, the Lords *Traquaire* and *Roxbrough*. All his Allies were of the Covenanting Party. Tis also said, that his Mother rid Armed with Pistols at her Saddle-bow for the defence of the Covenant, and his Actings such, that new Seeds of Discontent and War were

were daily Sown; so that to pacifie the Discontents of the Scots, his Majesty at length gave order for revoking the Liturgy, the High Commission, the Book of Canons, and the five Articles of *Perth* made by King *James*; also granted, that a general Assembly of the Kirk should be holden at *Glasgow*, November 21. 1638. and a Parliament at *Edinburgh* the 15th. of May 1639.

When the Assembly were met, they fell to declare against Bishops, to Excommunicate them and their Adherents, and to abolish Episcopacy; and the Covenanters were also so daring, that they seized upon the Kings Revenue, surprized his Forts and Castles, and at last put themselves in Arms; Cardinal *Richelieu* of *France* heightning them, 'tis said, in their Factious proceeds, by promising them assistance from the French King.

King *Charles* now well perceiving that his Clemency to the Scots was converted to his own prejudice, raises therefore a gallant Army, with which he marches within two miles of *Berwick*, within sight of the Rebel Scots; but they petitioning for a Pacification, the King yielded therunto.

A. D. 1639. June 17. the King disbanded his Army, expecting that the Scots would have done the like, according to the Articles of Accord; but the Covenanters instead of keeping those Articles, retained their Officers in pay, changed the old form of holding Parliaments, invaded the Prerogatives of the Crown, and solicited the French King for an aid of Men and Money. His Majesty hereupon calls a Parliament in *England* to sit April the 13th. 1640. and another in *Ireland*. The Irish Parliament granted Money to raise and pay 8000 Men in Arms, and to furnish them with Ammunition; but the English Parliament were not so free in granting supplies against the Scots, although the King promised them for ever to quit his claim of Ship-money, and give satisfaction to their just demands, if now they would supply him. When His Majesty sent old Sir *Henry Vane*

*Vane* unto them to demand six Subsidies, he either purposely or accidentally (the first is rather thought) named twelve, which put the Commons into such a heat, that they were about to remonstrate against the War with *Scotland*. Whereupon the King was forced to dissolve the Parliament May the 5th. 1640. Howbeit he continued the Convocation of the Clergy, which granted him four Shillings in the Pound for all their Ecclesiastical promotions. Soon after this, a tumult was stirr'd up against the Bishop of *Canterbury*; insomuch, that a great number of Apprentices and vulgar persons assaulted his House at *Lambeth*; some of whom being apprehended and imprisoned, were by their Companions rescued out of Prison; for which, one of the Ringleaders was Hang'd and Quartered.

The People were now much dissatisfied, because some obsolete things were revived and severely enforced by some Ecclesiasticks (the Popularity call'd them Introductions to Popery) as the raling in of the Communion Table, and raling of Steps to it, &c. It hath been the judgment of some, reputed of good judgment, that if moderate Bishop *Fuxon* had been in these times Primate of all *England*, this Kingdom had not been made so unhappy by a Civil War as it was.

Now whilst these things were acting at home, the turbulent Scots had entred *England*, and defcated a part of the King's Army before the whole could be imbodyed, and had gained *Newcastle* and *Durham*. And no sooner was his Majesty come to his Army in the North, but there followed him from some English Lords a Petition conformable to the Scotch Remonstrance, which they called the Intentions of the Army (*viz.*) not to lay down Arms till the Reformed Religion (meaning Scotch Presbytery) was settled in both Nations; and the causers and abettors of their present troubles were brought to publick Justice, and that in Parliament. The King therefore summons the Lords to appear at *York*, September the 24th.

24th. 1640. who accordingly met, where it was determined that a Parliament should be called to meet November the Third following; then a Treaty was agreed upon betwixt the English and Scotch for the ceasing of all Acts of Hostility; and one of the Articles was, That the contribution of 850*l. per diem*, should be raised out of the English Northern Counties, to maintain the Scotch Army during the Treaty, and till Peace was secured.

A.D. 1640. The fatal long Parliament began November the Third; which day, 'tis said, was looked upon by the Archbishop of *Canterbury* as an unlucky day for meeting of Parliaments in reference to Church-affairs, having proved so in the time of King *Henry the Eighth*: Whereupon he advised the King to put off their sitting to another day; which his Majesty inclined not unto, but at their meeting acquainted them, that he was resolved to put himself wholly upon his English Subjects, that he would satisfie all their just grievances; then commended to their care, the chasing out of the sawcy Scots, making provisions for his own Army, and relieving the oppressed Northern Counties. But the Parliament, instead of complying with their Sovereign in his just Proposals, they first set upon purging their House of such whom they thought wou'd not comply with their designs, finding fault either with their Elections, or else making them Criminals in some publick Grievance; then settled Committees for Grievances, and receiving Petitions; Voted down Monopolies, impeached the Lord *Wentworth* Earl of *Strafford* of High-Treason, and committed him to the black Rod; committed Archbishop *Laud* likewise to the black Rod, and ten Weeks after Voted him guilty of High-Treason, and sent him to the Tower. In the mean while *Pryn*, *Burton*, and *Bastwick* were freed from their confinement, and conducted into *London* in great state and triumph.

Sir *Francis Windebanck* Secretary of State, fearing to be called to an account by the Parliament, for re-

reprieving Jesuits and Priests, fled over into *France*. The Lord Keeper *Finch* Sailed over into *Holland*.

Alderman *Penington* with some hundreds attending him, presented the Commons with a Petition from the Citizens of *London* against the present Church-government. Divers Petitions from other places came before them of the like Nature: And now the Parliament well perceiving their own strength and interest, drew up a Bill for Triennial-Parliaments; wherein the power of calling that great Council of the Nation, was upon refusal of the King and neglect of others, devolved upon Constables. This the King through their importunities granted unto them. February the 16th. the Parliament Voted, That no Bishop should have any Vote in Parliament, nor any Judicial power in the Star-Chamber Court, nor have any sway in temporal Affairs; and that no Clergyman should be in Commission of Peace. The Popes *Nuncio Rosetti* that was here in *England* to preserve Correspondencies betwixt the Queen and the Key-keeper of Purgatory, was sent away to *Rome*. And after about five Months from their sitting, the Earl of *Strafford* Lord Deputy of *Ireland* was brought to his Tryal, in *Westminster Hall*, before the Lords as his Judges. The King, Queen, and Prince sitting behind a Curtain in an adjoining Gallery; and round about the Court stood the Commons his Accusers, and the Witnesses against him were English and Scotch Anti-Episcoparians and Irish Papists, his Charge consisted of 28 Articles; to all which the Earl answered with such firm reasons, that he could not be found guilty of Treason, either in particulars, or in the whole. The Parliament therefore resolved (for right or wrong this wise Man must fall) to proceed against him by Bill of Attainder, and upon April the 19th. by making a Law after the Fact, Vote him guilty of High-Treason, yet withal add a caution for the security of themselves, that it should not be drawn into a president. Which Vote of theirs passed not without a long debate and contention, and 59 of the Members honestly

honestly dissented from the Vote, whose names were afterwards posted and marked for the fury of the Rabble. In the Bill of Attainder, the Earl was charged for endeavoring to subvert the ancient Fundamental Laws and Government of the Realms, and for exercising a tyrannous and exorbitant power over the Liberties and Estates of his Majesties Subjects; and for having by his own Authority commanded the laying and assailing of Soldiers upon his Majesties Subjects in *Ireland*. And also for that upon the Dissolution of the last Parliament, he did slander the House of Commons to his Majesty, and did advise his Majesty that he was loosed and absolved from Rules of Government, and that he had an Army in *Ireland* which he might employ to reduce the Kingdom. And that the said Earl had been an Incendiary of the Wars betwixt *England* and *Scotland*, &c.

*May the 1.* His Majesty called both Houses together, and told them, that he had been present at the hearing of the great Cause, and that in his Conscience positively he could not Condemn the Earl of Treason, and yet could not clear him of Misdemeanors, but hoped a way might be found out to satisfie justice and their fears, without oppressing his Conscience.

*May the 2.* the Prince of Orange was Married to the Princess Mary at *White-hall*.

*May the 3.* there came a seditious Rabble of about 5 or 6000 of the dregs of the People, Armed with Staves, Cudgels, and other Instruments of outrage, to the Parliament-doors, clamouring, Justice, Justice; and posted upon the Gate of *Westminster* a Catalogue of Names of those that would have acquitted the Earl, whom they stiled *Straffordians*. Then at the Doors of the House of Peers, they affronted some of the Lords, especially the Bishops, at their passing in and out; after this they forced open the Doors of the Abby-Church, where they broke down the Organs, spoiled the Vestments and Ornaments of Worship. From thence they hurried to the Court, and there most impudently and traiterously cried out, That

That they would have *Strafford's Head*, or a better; upbraiding the King himself (who perswaded them as they passed by, to a modest care of their own private affairs) with an unfitness to Reign; and when some Justices of the Peace, according to their Office, endeavored to suppress those tumults, by Imprisoning some of the Leaders of them; they themselves were Imprisoned by the command of the Commons, upon pretext of an injury offered to the Liberties of the Subject; one of which was, (as they then dictated) that every one might safely Petition the Parliament; howbeit afterwards they Acted quite contrary to such whose Petitions were too honest to please them. But notwithstanding these tumultuous inforcements, His Majesty would not sign the Bill of Attainder till he had consulted both with the Judges, as to matter of Law, and the Bishops as to matter of Conscience. When the Judges told His Majesty, that in point of Law (according to the Oath made by Sir *Henry Vane* of the Earls advice to raise Horse to awe this Nation) the Earl was guilty of Treason; 'tis said, an eminent Bishop did answere the King, that he had a Conscience as a private Man, and as a publick; and though by his private Conscience he could not yield to the Earls death, yet by his publick (considering the present state of things) he might.

*May 10.* With much reluctance the King signed a Commission to some Lords to pass that Bill of Attainder, and another of ill consequence also, which was for continuation of the Parliament during the pleasure of the two Houses.

*May 12. 1641.* Was the Earl of *Strafford* strongly guarded to the *Tower-hill*, and there with courage befitting a Christian, he suffered the severing of his Head from his Body. The Death of which great and able Minister of State, did so terrifie the other Ministers of State, that many of them made a voluntary resignation of their Offices. At the request of the House of Commons, the King for peace sake, relinquished

quished his claim to Tunnage and Poundage, and yielded to sign the Bills for taking away of the High-Commission and Star-Chamber Courts.

*October 12.* The Natives, or wild Irish, began a most bloody Rebellion throughout the whole Kingdom of *Ireland*, on a sudden invading the unprovided English that were scattered amongst them, despoiling them of their Goods, and Massacring 200000 of them, without any respect of Sex, Age, Kindred, or Friendship, making them as so many sacrifices to their Bloody superstition, the Popish Religion. The chief heads of this Rebellion and Massacre, (besides the Priests) were Sir *Phelim O-Neal*, *Turbough O-Neal* his Brother, *Rowry Mac-Guire*, *Philip O-Rely*, *Moelmurry*, *O-Rely*, Sir *Conno Mac-Gennis*, *Mac-Brian*, and *Mac-Mahon*. His Majesty then in *Scotland* having intelligence of the dismal fate of the English in *Ireland*, sent Post to the Parliament of *England* to have them send reliefs thither; but differences still heightning betwixt the King and his Parliament, succours were not seasonably sent, by which the Rebels much strengthned themselves. At the Kings return from *Scotland*, the Parliament presented him with a Petition for taking away the Votes of Bishops in the House of Lords, and the Ceremonies of the Church, and for the removing of evil Counsellors from about him. Their Grand Remonstrance they also presented him, wherein were reckoned up the offences of the Courtiers, the unpleasing resolves of some Judges, the neglects or rigors of some Ministers of State, the undigested Sermons of some Preachers, the Positions of some Divines in the Schools; unpleasing accidents they therein represented as designs of Tyranny; and those things which had been reformed, were yet mentioned as burthens. To this Remonstrance His Majesty answered, That he thought he had given satisfaction to his Peoples fears and jealousies concerning Religion, Liberty and Civil Interests, by the Bills he had past this Parliament; desiring that misunderstandings might be removed on either side, and that the bleeding

ing

ing condition of *Ireland* might perswade them to unity, for the relief of that unhappy Kingdom. But this modest Answer of his Majestie's did not at all satisfie the factious. The Apprentices and Rabbel in great numbers and much confusion resorted again to *Westminster*; some crying out against Bishops and Liturgy of the Church; others boldly menacing, that the *Militia* should be taken out of the Kings hands. Affronting the Bishops at their passing in and out of the Lords House; and before *White-hall* behaving themselves very insolently. His Majesty hereupon took a Guard of such Gentlemen as offered their service for his safety; but the Factious made use of this to raise the rage and jealousie of the whole City against the King; for at midnight there were out-cries made in the Streets, that all People should rise to their defence, for the King and his Papists were coming to fire the City, and to cut their Throats in their Beds. The King therefore not always to incourage these Indignities with his Patience, resolved by a course of Justice to punish the Authors and Countenancers of these Seditious Practices; so Commanded his Attorney General to accuse five Members of the Lower House of High-Treason, namely, Mr. *Denzil Holles*, Sir *Arthur Hazelrig*, Mr. *John Pym*, Mr. *John Hambden*, and Mr. *William Stroud*, and the Lord *Kimbolton*, Earl of *Manchester*, of the House of Peers. He also sent some Officers to Seal up their Trunks and Cabinets in their several Lodgings, and to secure their persons. To this the Commons Voted, That all those persons were Enemies to the Commonwealth that should obey the King in any of his Commands concerning them; and that it was lawful for any person to assist the said Members. And because the King came into the House of Commons, and there demanded to have the five Members delivered up to him (though he left his Guard of Pensioners, and Lords and Gentlemen without upon the Stairs) the Commons Voted this proceeding of the Kings, a breach of the Privilege of Parliament; and withall published a Declaration, That who soever

soever should Arrest any Member of Parliament by Warrant from the King only, was guilty of the breach of Parliamentary Privileges ; and likewise, That all they who attended the King when he came to demand the five Members (then hid in the City) were guilty of a Trayterous design against King and Parliament. The *Londoners* came thronging to *Westminster* in a tumultuous sort, to Petition for the Impeached Members, behaving themselves very rudely towards the Bishops. And such increase and numbers of the heady common People assembled in a tumultuous manner about *White-hall* and *Westminster*, that the King justly mistrusting some danger from them, withdrew himself, with the Queen and their Children, to *Windsor*. The next day after which, the five Members were Triumphantlly guarded from *London* to *Westminster* by Water. Strange reports were these times given out concerning dangers from the King ; how that Troops of Papists were gathered about *Kingston upon Thames*, under the Command of Colonel *Lunsford*, who was Charactered to be of so monstrous an Appetite, that he would eat Children, and other like false and ridiculous stories. Petitions were presented the Parliament, requiring that neither the Bishops nor Popish Lords should continue to Vote amongst the Peers. Women also presented a Petition to the like purpose. The House of Commons Petitioned his Majesty that they might have the Tower and *London Militia* put into their Hands ; which he denied to grant : Yet did they place Major General *Skippon* over that *Militia*.

The King in hopes to stay the fury of the Faction, consented to almost all that they desired. Howbeit, notwithstanding all his gracious condescensions, endeavors were still used to create an hatred of his Majesty. Mr. *John Pym* publickly charged Him with a connivance at least, if not with contrivance of the Irish Rebellion ; and when the King required satisfaction for the calumny, the Commons justified *Pym's* Speech to be the sense of their House. The Irish Rebels,

belz, indeed, to dishearten the English from any resistance, boasted that the Queen was with their Army, that the King would come with Auxiliary Forces, that they did but maintain his cause against the Puritans, that they had the Kings Commission for what they did, shewing a Patent to this purpose, but 'twas of their own drawing ; to which they affixed an old Broad-Seal that had been taken from an obsolete Patent out of *Farnham Abbey*, by one *Plincket*, in the presence of many of their Lords and Priests, as was afterwards attested by the confession of many. And now the breach, through bad Mens practices, growing still wider and wider, betwixt his Majesty and his two Houses of Parliament, his Majesty resolved to withdraw into the North, there to abide till he saw what issue this storm would have ; taking with him the Prince, and Duke of *York*. The Queen he had afore sent with the Princess of *Orange* into *Holland*.

When the King was departed, the Parliament made preparations both by Land and Sea, upon pretext of great dangers at home, and more prodigious terrors from abroad ; pretending, that by intelligence from *Paris*, *Rome*, and *Venice*, they were assured of great designs to overthrow the Parliament, together with the Protestant Religion, and strange unheard of Plots, they said, were made to murther the most eminent Patriots.

In this year the Parliament ordered, that all superstitious Pictures, and Crosses within Churches and without, should be pull'd down and defaced.

A.D. 1642. And April 23. The King attended with his Guard, consisting for the most part of Lords and Gentlemen only, would have entred into his Town of *Hull*, but Sir *John Hotham* insolently shut the Gates against him, and kept him out ; whereupon the King proclaimed him *Traytor*, and complained to the Parliament of this indignity ; but they justified *Hotham's* act, and Authorized him to strengthen the Garrison of *Hull*. In short time after this, *England's* miseries

series commenced by an intestine War. A little before which, were strange sights seen in the Air in many parts of *England*, as Musqueters, Harnessed-men, and Horse-men, moving in Battle-array, and assaulting one the other in divers furious Postures. The King and the two Houses now began to make all the speediest Warlike preparations to defend themselves, and offend each other; but the two Houses had a great advantage of his Majesty, both in respect of Monies, and the speedy raising of Men, and also Arms and Ammunition for War of all sorts, through their having the City of *London* on their side, the Citizens whereof were very free in parting with their Plate upon the public Faith; and their Wives were so zealous for the good Cause (as that of the two Houses was then miscalled) that they gave their very Bodkins and Thimbles towards the maintaining of it, and were forwards to have Husbands and Children to venture their lives in this Rebellion.

His Majesty in the mean time to secure Himself, and Rights, procures Arms and Ammunition out of *Holland*, upon pawn of the Crown Jewels, and by degrees raiseth a considerable Army.

*June 2.* Both Houses of Parliament send 19 Propositions to the King's Majesty, for a Reconciliation of the differences between his Majesty, and the said Houses, &c.

I. That the Lords, and others of the King's Privy-Council, and such great Officers and Ministers of State, might be put from his Privy-Council, and from those Offices and Employments, excepting such as both Houses should approve of, &c.

II. That the great Affairs of this Kingdom might not be concluded or transacted by the advice of private Men, or by any unknown or unsworn Counsellors, but that such matters as concern the Publick, and are proper for the HighCourt of Parliament, his Majesties great and supreme Council might

might be debated, resolved and transacted only in Parliament, &c.

III. That the Lord High-Steward of *England*, Lord High-Constable, Lord Chancellor or Keeper of the Great-Seal, Lord Treasurer, Lord Privy-Seal, Earl Marshal, Lord Admiral, Warden of the Cinque-Ports, Chief Governor of *Ireland*, Chancellor of the Exchequer, Master of the Wards, Secretaries of State, two Chief Justices and Chief Baron, may all be chosen with the Approbation of both Houses of Parliament, &c.

IV. That he or they to whom the Government and Education of the Kings Children shall be committed, shall be approved of by both Houses of Parliament, and in the Intervals of Parliament, by the assent of the Major part of the Council, &c.

V. That no Marriage shall be concluded or treated for any of the Kings Children, without the consent of Parliament, under the penalty of a *Premunire* unto such as shall so conclude or treat any Marriage, as aforesaid, &c.

VI. That the Laws in force against Jesuits, Priests, and Popish Recusants, be strictly put in Execution, without any Toleration or Dispensation to the contrary, &c.

VII. That the Votes of Popish Lords in the House of Peers be taken away so long as they continue Papists, and that the Children of Papists be educated in the Protestant Religion.

VIII. That such a Reformation be made in the Church Government, and Liturgy, as the Parliament shall advise, &c.

IX. That his Majesty would rest satisfied with that course that the Parliament have appointed for ordering the *Militia*, until the same should be further settled by a Bill, &c.

X. That such Members of either House of Parliament, as have during this present Parliament been put out of any Place and Office, be either restored to that Place and Office, or have satisfaction for the same, &c.

Z XI. That

XI. That all Privy-Counsellors and Judges take an Oath, for the maintaining of the Petition of Right, &c.  
XII. That all the Judges, and all Officers placed by approbation of both Houses of Parliament, may hold their places, *Quam diu bene se gesserint.*

XIII. That the Justice of Parliament might pass upon all Delinquents, &c.

XIV. That the general Pardon offered by his Majesty might be granted, with such exceptions as should be advised by the Parliament.

XV. That the Forts and Castles of this Kingdom be put under the Command and Custody of such persons as his Majesty shall appoint, with the approbation of his Parliament, &c.

XVI. That the extraordinary Guards, and Military Forces then attending his Majesty, be removed and discharged; and that for the future he shall raise no such Guards, or extraordinary Forces, but according to Law, in case of actual Rebellion or Invasion.

XVII. That his Majesty would be pleased to enter into a more strict Alliance with the States of the United Provinces, and other neighbor Princes and States of the Protestant Religion, for the defence and maintenance thereof, against all designs and attempts of the Pope, and his Adherents, to subvert and suppress it, &c.

XVIII. That his Majesty would be pleased by Act of Parliament to clear the Lord Kimbolton, and the Five Members of the House of Commons in such manner, that Future Parliaments may be secured from the consequence of that evil precedent.

XIX. That his Majesty would be graciously pleased to pass a Bill for restraining Peers made hereafter from Sitting or Voting in Parliament, unless they be admitted thereunto with the consent of both Houses of Parliament.

To these Propositions his Majesty returned Answer, but not satisfactory.

On August 22. 1642. did his Majesty set up his Standard-Royal at Nottingham, and after three Days sends

a

a Message to the Parliament to propose a Treaty. To which the Parliament Answered, That until his Majesty shall recal his Proclamations and Declarations of Treasons against the Earl of Essex, and Themselves, and Adherents, and that the Kings Standard of War be taken down, they cannot by the fundamental Privileges of Parliament, give his Majesty another Answer. The King replies, That he never intended to declare the Parliament Traytors, or set up his Standard against them; but if they shall resolve to Treat, either Party shall revoke their Declarations against all Parties as Traytors, and the same Day to take down his Standard. To this they Answered, That the differences could not any ways be concluded, unless he would forsake his evil Counsellors, and return to his Parliament. And accordingly, Septemb. 6. they order and declare, That the Arms which they have taken up, or shall take up for the Parliament, Religion, Laws, and Liberties of the Kingdom, shall not be laid down until the King withdraw his Protection from such Persons as are and shall be declared Delinquents, and shall leave them to Justice, to the end, that their Estates may discharge the Debts, and Loam-money of the Common-wealth; so no Accord would be. His Majesties General was the Valiant Earl of Lindsey; the Parliaments General was Robert Devereux Earl of Essex, and their Admiral the Earl of Warwick. The first Blood that was spilt in this unhappy War, was near unto Hull, whither some of the Kings Forces were drawn, upon whom Sir John Hotham and Sir John Meldram fellied, taking some, and killing others.

Sept. 9. 1642. The Earl of Essex set forth with his Army out of London, and October 23. the Caveliers (so called) which were the Kings Party, and the Round-heads, (so called, from the custom of the Puritans cutting their Hair short to their Ears) which were the Parliaments Party, met between Keinton and Edeghill in Warwickshire, and there ingaged in Fight, which was acted

Z 2

with

## CHARLES I.

with such fury, that near 6000 were slain upon the place. The King had so much the better of the day as to keep the Field. Persons of remark slain on his Majesties side, were the Earl of *Lindsey*, and Sir *Edward Varney* Standard-bearer; but Mr. *John Smith* immediately recovered the Standard, for which service he was Knighted in the Field. On the Parliaments part were slain the Lord St. *John of Bletso*, and Colonel *Essex*. From this fight at *Edgehill* the King marched to *Banbury*, which was surrendred to him; then entred *Oxford* triumphantly, and having secured that place, he advanced toward *London*, and at *Brantford* fell upon two Regiments of his Enemies, taking about 500 Prisoners. The Parliament to increase their Numbers, declared that all Apprentices that would list themselves in their service for the Publick Cause, should be secured from the injury of their Masters, and their time to go on toward their Freedom; by which means multitudes of Youth forsook their Masters to fight for the Parliament. They also invited their Brethren the *Scots* (as they call'd them) to come into *England* to their aid. And to animate the People to take up Arms for the Parliament, some busie Clergy-men made great (not good) use of that sacred Text in their Pulpits, *Curse ye Meroz, &c. Judg. 5.23.* But *blessed are the Peace-makers*, saith the Prince of Peace. About the beginning of *March*, Commissioners were appointed to treat at *Oxford* in order to a reconciliation, when the two Houses of Parliament humbly besought his Majesty (so they worded it) graciously to accept and grant these most humble Desires and Propositions.

I. That his Majesty would be pleased to disband his Armies, as they likewise would be ready to disband all their Forces, and that he would be pleased to return to his Parliament.

II. That he would leave Delinquents to a Legal Tryal, and Judgment of Parliament.

III. That the Papists may not only be disbanded, but disarmed according to Law.

IV. That

## CHARLES I.

IV. That his Majesty would be pleased to give his Royal Assent unto the Bill for taking away superstitious Innovations, to the Bill for the utter abolishing and taking away of all Archbishops, Bishops, their Chancellors and Commissioners, &c. to the Bill against scandalous Ministers, to the Bill against Pluralities, &c.

V. That his Majesty would be pleased, for the better discovery and speedier conviction of Recusants, that an Oath might be established by Act of Parliament, to be Administred in such manner as by both Houses should be agreed on, wherein they shall adjure and renounce the Popes Supremacy, Doctrin of Transubstantiation, Purgatory, &c.

VI. That the Earl of *Bristol* be removed from his Majesties Counsels, and that both he and the Lord *Herbert*, Eldest Son to the Earl of *Worcester*, may likewise be restrained from coming within the Verge of the Court, &c.

VII. That the *Militia* both by Sea and Land, and for the Forts and Ports of the Kingdom, be settled in such a manner as should be agreed on by both Houses, &c.

VIII. That his Majesty would be pleased by his Letters to make Sir *John Brampton* Chief Justice of the Kings Bench, and to make Mr. Serjeant *Rolls*, and Mr. Serjeant *Atkins*, Justices of the Kings Bench, &c.

IX. That all such persons as have been put out of the Commission of Peace, &c. since the first day of *April*, (other than such as were put out by desire of the Parliament) may again be put into those Commissions, &c.

X. As the 18th. Proposition of the 19. Propositions.

XI. That the Royal Assent be given unto such Acts as shall be advised by Parliament, for satisfying the Debts whereing the Parliament had engaged the Publick Faith of the Kingdom.

XII. The same with the 17th. of the 19. Propositions.

Z 3

XIII. As

XIII. As the 14th. Proposition of the 19. Propositions.

XIV. The same with the 10th. Proposition of the 19. Propositions sent to the King, June 21. 1641. But this Treaty became fruitless.

A.D. 1643. In the beginning of the Spring, the Queen returned into *England*, bringing with her considerable supplies of Men, Money, and Ammunition out of *France*; and that year his Majesty became Master of the North and West, some few Garrisons excepted. July 5. Sir *Ralph Hopton* with his Cavaliers, routed Sir *William Waller* at *Lansdown* near *Bath*; and July 15. he again defeated him at *Roundway-bill* by the *Devizes*, killing many hundreds in the place, and taking many more Prisoners. *Bristol* and *Exeter* were yielded to those two Martial Princes, *Rupert* and *Maurice*, Sons of *Frederick Prince Palatine* of the *Rhine*, and *Elizabeth* his Wife, Sister to King *Charles the First*. *Gloucester* the King besieged with a brave Army; and the besieged under the Colonel *Edward Massey* defended themselves with great bravery, till the Earl of *Essex* came with an Army and raised the Siege. From this Siege the two Armies marched within few Miles each of the other without any Engagement, (save a little skirmish by *Alborne Chace*) till they came to *Newbury*, where a sore Battle was fought. On the Kings part were slain the Earls of *Carnarvon*, and *Sunderland*, and the Learned Lord *Faulkland*; *Essex* lost many of his Officers.

January 22. Those Loyal Members of Parliament who dissented from them at *Westminster*, met at *Oxford* by the Kings Summons; of these besides the Prince and Duke of *York*, the Lord Keeper *Littleton*, Treasurer *Cottington*, Duke of *Richmond*, and Marquess of *Hartford*, there were nineteen Earls, and as many Lords, and one hundred and seventeen Knights and Gentlemen. Other Loyal Lords, Knights and Gentlemen, Members of Parliament, were at this time employed in the Kings service in divers places of the Nation.

In

In this Month and Year the Scotch Army, under the Conduct of the Earl of *Leven*, entered *England* for the Parliament, being about 18000 Foot and 2000 Horse.

About this time was Loyal *Newark* besieged by Sir *John Meldram*; but by Prince *Rupert's* coming it was relieved, and the Parliamentarians forced to march away after great losses, on such conditions as the Prince would grant them.

This Year upon a cessation of Arms in *Ireland*, some Forces came over to the Kings affiance.

This Year also that Rebellious thing called a Parliament at *Westminster*, and their Adherents, and some to save themselves from punishment, took the Scottish Solemn League and Covenant, with Hands lifted up to the most High God, swearing to endeavor the preservation of the Reformed Religion, the extirpation of Popery and Prelacy, to preserve the Rights and Privileges of Parliament, and Liberties of the Kingdom, and to defend and preserve the Kings Majesties person, and Authority, to make discovery of all Incendiaries, Malignants, or evil Instruments, dividing the King from his People, to maintain a firm Peace betwixt the confederate Nations of *England* and *Scotland*, to assist and defend all those that enter into this Solemn League and Covenant, in the maintaining and pursuing thereof, to endeavor the amending of their lives, and each one to go before another in the example of real Reformation, that the Lord might turn away his wrath and heavy indignation, and establish these Churches and Kingdoms in Truth and Peace. All the Parliaments pretence in raising Arms, was Reformation, for the defence of the Kings person, to rescue him from his evil Council, and to make him a glorious King; which at length they did, when they deprived him of his natural life.

A.D. 1644. Sir *William Waller* defeated Sir *Ralph Hopton* about *Brandon-Heath*. The Lord *Fairfax* and his Son, Sir *Thomas*, took divers of the Kings Garrisons in

Z 4

the

the North. Prince *Rupert* raised the Siege of *Latham* House, which *Garrison* had been defended the space of about eighteen Weeks, by that Loyal and Magnanimous Lady the Countess of *Derby*. June 29. The Kings Forces gave a great defeat to *Waller's* Army at *Cropredy-bridge*. And presently after this, the King drove the Earl of *Essex* up into *Cornwall*; but the Earl deserted his Army, passing by Water to *Plymouth*; and his Horse taking the advantage of a dark night, escaped, leaving the Foot to shift how they could, who capitulated for their lives, leaving their Arms, Cannon, Ammunition, and Baggage, to the Kings disposal. Then *Ilfordcomb*, *Barnstable*, and *Saltash* yielded to the King, who now victoriously marched towards *London*.

July the third, was a great fight at *Marston-Moor*, where the Parliament obtained a very considerable Victory. And October 27. *Essex*, *Waller*, and the Earl of *Manchester* met the King, as he came out of the West, at *Newbury*, where a sharp Battle was fought, and the Kings party forced out of the Field.

In November, *Mac-Mahon* an Irish Rebel was Hang'd and Quartered at *Tyburn*. And December 23. Sir *Alexander Carew* was Beheaded on *Tower-hill*, for attempting to give up the Island of *Plymouth* to the Kings Forces.

January the first, *Hotham* the Son, and January the second, *Hotham* the Father, were Beheaded on *Tower-hill*, for designing to betray *Hull* to the Royalists, and for other Treacheries.

*William Laud* Archbishop of *Canterbury*, having been Voted guilty of High Treason by the House of Commons, and condemned by the House of Peers to be drawn, hang'd, and Quarter'd, (though upon his Petition they changed the manner of his Execution) was brought to the Scaffold on *Tower-hill*, January 10. where he Preached his last Sermon, taking for his Text, *Heb. 12. ver. 2.* So yielding his Neck to the stroke of the Executioner. The Charge against him was, endeavoring to subvert the Laws, Religion, and Privileges of Parliament.

January

January 30. By his Majesties procurement a Treaty was held at *Uxbridge*, where the Parliaments demands were, That Episcopacy might be extirpated, that Presbytery might be establisht, and that the King should yield up the *Militia* solely into the Parliaments dispose, &c. as in the 19 Propositions, and those in the Treaty at *Oxford*, with some Additional; As, that his Majesty, according to the Laudable example of his Royal Father of happy memory, would be pleased to swear and sign the late Solemn League and Covenant, and that an Act of Parliament be passed in both Kingdoms respectively, for enjoyning the taking of the same, by all the Subjects of the three Kingdoms; That the Persons who shall expect no Pardon, be only these following, *Rupert* and *Maurice*, Count Palatine of the Rhine, *James Earl of Derby*, *John Earl of Bristol*, *William Earl of Newcastle*, *Francis Lord Cottington*, *John Lord Pawlet*, *George Lord Digby*, *Edward Lord Littleton*, *Matthew Wren Bishop of Ely*, *Sir Robert Heath*, *Dr. Bramhall Bishop of Derry*, *Sir John Biron*, *William Widdrington*, *Colonel Geor. Goring*, *Henry Fermin Esq;* *Sir Ralph Hopton*, *Sir Francis Doddington*, *Mr. Endymion Porter*, *Sir George Ratcliffe*, *Sir Marmaduke Langdale*, *Sir Henry Vaughan*, *Sir Francis Winden-banke*, *Sir Richard Greenvile*, *Mr. Edward Hide*, *Sir John Marley*, *Sir Nicholas Cole*, *Sir Thomas Riddle, jun.*, *Colonel Ware*, *Sir John Strangewaines*, *Sir John Culpeper*, *Sir Richard Floyd*, *John Bodvile Esquier*, *Mr. David Jenkins*, *Sir George Strode*, *Marquess of Huntly*, *Earl of Montross*, *Earl of Niddifdale*, *Earl of Traquair*, *Earl of Carnwath*, with some other Scotch Lords and Gentlemen (named.)

2. All Papists and Popish Recusants who have been, now are, or shall be actually in Arms, or voluntarily assisting against the Parliament, or Estates of either Kingdom.

3. All Persons who have had any hand in the Plotting, designing, or assisting the Rebellion in *Ireland*.

This Treaty also proved fruitless.

February

February 20. The Lord Mac-Guier, another of the grand Irish Rebels, was Executed at Tyburn.

About this time was the Parliaments Army new modeled. The Earl of Essex and the other Commanders who were Parliament-men (Oliver Cromwell was excepted) were by the self-denying Ordinance (lately made) to attend in Parliament, in whose steads other and more active persons were appointed. Sir Thomas Fairfax was constituted Captain-General, Oliver Cromwell (then the Sectaries Darling) was made Lieutenant-General, Henry Ireton Commissary-General, &c. After which model the King's Affairs of the Nation began fatally to decline.

A.D. 1645. His Majesty drew his Army out of Oxford, in order to relieve his Northern Counties, and Garisons; but after he had stormed and taken Leicester, in his way, he was called back to secure Oxford, which the Parliament Army threatened with a Siege. This while Sir Thomas Fairfax had intercepted a Letter of the Lord Goring to the King, wherein that Loyall Subject had desired of his Majesty to forbear engaging with the Enemy till he could be joyned with him. Hereupon Fairfax left his Sieg afore Oxford, and made directly towards the King with a purpose to fight him, before that addition of strength should come in. And at a place near Naseby in Northamptonshire, both Armies met on Saturday, June 14. 1645. His Majesty commanded the main Body, Prince Rupert and Prince Maurice the right wing, Sir Marmaduke Langdale the left, the Lord Ashly the right-hand reserve, and Sir George Lisle the left. Of the Parliament Army Fairfax and Skippon had the ordering of the main Battle, Cromwell the right wing, and Ireton the left. Prince Rupert charged that wing commanded by Ireton so home, that he disordered it, taking Ireton Prisoner; and for a while he followed the Parliamentarians towards Naseby; but in the interim Cromwell worsted the Kings right wing, and then came in to Fairfax his assistance, who together charged upon the Kings main Body; and they no longer able to stand it out, retreated out

of

of the Field, leaving a compleat Victory to the Disloyal Party, who pursued them within two Miles of Leicester, killing in their way many Women that had followed the Cavaliers Camp. On the Parliaments side were wounded and slain above 1000. On the Kings side were slain 20 Knights, Colonels, and Officers of note, and 600 private Souldiers; and of Prisoners were taken 6 Colonels, 8 Lieutenant-Colonels, 18 Majors, 70 Captains, with many other Officers, 4500 common Souldiers, 13 of the Kings Household-servants, 12 Pieces of Ordnance, 8000 Arms, 40 Barrels of Powder, 200 Carriages, store of rich Pillage, 3000 Horses, the Kings Standard, one of his Coaches, his Cabinet of Letters, which the Parliament caused to be made publick.

April 16. Leicester was yielded up to Sir Thomas Fairfax, which accomplished, he marched into the West to relieve Taunton then besieged by the Royal Party. At Langport he discomfited the Lord Goring's Forces, taking 1400 Prisoners. Then Bridgwater and Bath yielded to him. Then he besieged Sherbourn Castle, and sent Cromwell to suppress the Wilts, and Dorsetshire Clubmen, associated about Shaftesbury, which he did; killing some, taking others, and dispersing the rest. These Clubmen declaring themselves Neutrals, pretending only to secure their own Properties. August 15. Sherbourn Castle was surrendred upon promise of Quarter.

At Rowton Heath, near Chester, Colonel Poyns worsted his Majesties Forces.

In Yorkshire, Colonel Robert Lilburn routed the Royalists commanded by the Lord Digby, and Sir Marmaduke Langdale. Colonel Birch and Colonel Morgan by a stratagem took Hereford for the Parliament. At Bovet-Tracy, Oliver Cromwell surprised the Lord Wentworth, took three Regiments, dispersing two others. Fairfax took Dartmouth, defeated the Lord Hopton at Torrington, and immediately after blocks him up at Truro, inflicting him to Disband his Army. March 21. Jacob Lord Ashly was routed at Stow in the Wold, by Sir Wil-

Sir *William Brereton*, and Colonel *Morgan*. The Loyal Lord himself was taken Prisoner, with 1500 others. Many of the Kings Garrisons fell this year into the hands of the Parliamentarians; as *Bristol*, the *Devizes*, *Winchester Castle*, *Basing House*, *Laycock House*, *Berkeley Castle*, *Chepstow*, *Westchester*, *Belvoir Castle*, *Latham House*, *Monmouth*, and *Welbeck House*, &c.

A.D. 1646. This year the Parliament begin with disabling all such of their Fellow-members as were with the King, from ever sitting in the House again, impowering the Speaker to give Warrants to the Clerk of the Crown for new Elections in their places; and also commanded all Cavaliers to depart the City of *London* betwixt the thirtieth of *March* and sixth of *April*. And in *London* a Court-Marshal was erected, who made it death for any to repair to the King, Queen, Prince, or Malignant Lords and Commanders; for Malignant was a term applied by the Parliamentarians to the Kings Loyal Subjects. And now his Majesty was reduced into a very low condition. His Forces beaten out of the Field in all places, and his Garrisons surrendered and taken daily, as *St. Michael's Mount*, *Ruthen Castle*, *Woodstock*, *Excester*, and *Barnstable*; and General *Fairfax* approaching to besiege *Oxford*, the King upon thoughts of providing for himself, went in a disguise to the Scotch Camp that was then before *Newark*. May 4<sup>th</sup>. the Scotch Officers engaging to secure both him and as many of his party as should seek for shelter with them, and to stand to him with their lives and fortunes. But upon his Majesties departure from *Oxford*, divers of the Noblemen, as if they had been deserted by the King, yielded themselves to *Fairfax*. And June 24<sup>th</sup>. the most Loyal University and City of *Oxford* was surrendered upon Honorable terms by Sir *Thomas Glinham*. After which a number of the Kings Garrisons yielded to the Parliament, as *Banbury*, *Ludlow*, *Borftal*, *Carnarvan*, *Lichfield*, *Worcester*, *Wallingford*, *Gothridge*, *Ragland*, *Pendennis*, and *Newark* by the Kings order was delivered up; and the Lord *Montrois* in *Scotland*, and Lord *Ormond*

*mond* in *Ireland*, by the Kings command desisted their Hostilities. After the surrender of *Newark*, the Scotch Army marched back towards their own Country as far as *Newcastle upon Tine*, where when they were come, they tendered their Covenant to the King, pretending that unless he would take that, they durst not bring him into *Scotland*. This the King refused not, if they would first satisfie those scruples concerning Church Government which lay upon his Conscience; which to effect, Mr. *Alexander Henderson* a Minister, the Oracle of the *Kirk*, was employed to converse with him. But his Majesties parts were so great, and Cause so good, that made all Mr. *Henderson's* attempts successles. See the printed Papers of their Disputations.

Whilst these things were acting at *Newcastle*, the bargain was struck at *London* betwixt the Parliament and Scotch Commissioners; and for 200000*l.* the Scots delivered the King up to the English Parliament. Yet to mask their Perfidy, the Scots added this caution, That there should be no attempt made upon the Kings person, but being entertained at one of his own Palaces, he should be there treated with upon Propositions from both Nations, which should be speedily sent unto him.

July 24. Were 19 Propositions presented to his Majesty from the Parliament, for a safe and well-grounded Peace; the heads of which Propositions were as followeth.

- I. That his Majesty call in his Declarations and Proclamations against the Parliaments of both Kingdoms.
- II. That his Majesty swear and sign the Covenant.
- III. That he pases a Bill for abolishing Bishops.
- IV. To confirm the sitting of the Assembly of Divines, (which Assembly the Parliament had called to meet together, July 6<sup>th</sup>. 1643.)
- V. That Religion be Reformed as the Parliament agree.
- VI. That such Uniformity be passed into Act.
- VII. To

VII. To pass an Act against Popish Recusants.  
 VIII. An Act for education of the Children of Papists by Protestants.  
 IX. An Act for laying Penalties on Papists.  
 X. An Act for prevention of Popish practices.  
 XI. And the like for the Kingdom of *Scotland*.  
 XII. An Act for the due observation of the Lord's day, for Preaching against Pluralities, &c.  
 XIII. For settling the Militia and Navy in the Parliaments hands.  
 XIV. For nulling all Honors conferred since 1642.  
 XV. For confirming the Treaties, &c. passed betwixt the two Kingdoms.  
 XVI. For exempting certain Persons from Pardon, &c.  
 XVII. For making void the Cessation of *Ireland*.  
 XVIII. For settling the *London* Militia.  
 XIX. The great Seal to be with the Commissioners of Parliament, and all Acts by it to be made good.  
 These sent to his Majesty to *Newcastle*.

*February the 6th.* The Scots left *Newcastle* and marched homeward; and two days after the King set forward with the Parliaments Commissioners for *Holmby*, attended with 900 Horse. And now the Parliament, because they wanted others to quarrel withal, fell to quarrel amongst themselves, dividing into two Parties, Presbyterians and Independents, with Anabaptists and the other Sectarists; (for the Independents comprehended all the several Sects.) The Presbyterians were then powerful in the House, but the other in the Army, and were a subtle and resolute People. The former of these Parties seeing themselves in danger of being supplanted by the other, Voted in Parliament, to have part of the Army Disbanded, another part of it sent over into *Ireland* towards the reducing that Country, and the remainder to be disposed into several places of *England* to keep the Royalists in awe. This put the Army into a heat, who to make

make their part sure, sent a party of Horse, commanded by Cornet *Joyce*, to seize upon the Kings person, and to bring him from *Holmby* into their own quarters, which was done, June the third, 1647. From *Holmby* they conveyed his Majesty to *Childersley*, and thence to *New-market*, the Grandees of the Army pretending to him, how they were grieved for his imprisonment and sufferings, professing they would never part with their Arms, till they had made his way to his Throne: (but it must be a Throne in Heaven.) *Oliver Cromwel* the grand Grandee to clear himself from dissimulation herein, 'tis said, did afterwards pretend, that as he was Praying for a 'blessing from God on his undertakings to restore the King to his pristine Majesty, his Tongue did cleave to the roof of his Mouth, that he could not speak one word more, which he took as a return of Prayer, and that God had rejected him from being King. And the more to palliate their evil meanings, they permitted him the service of his own Chaplains, (which he had been denied at *Holmby*) the commerce of Letters with the Queen, the visits of his own Party, and attendance of his Courtiers. The Parliament Voted, that the General should be required to deliver the King to their Commissioners, who were to bring him to *Richmond*, to the end that Propositions of Peace might be speedily presented 'him. Hereupon the Army drew up Articles against eleven of the Members of the Commons House, Namely, Mr. *Denzil Hollis*, Sir *Philip Stapleton*, Sir *William Lewis*, Sir *John Clotworthy*, Sir *William Waller*, Sir *John Maynard*, Colonel *Massey*, Colonel *Long*, Colonel *Harley*, Mr. *Glyn*, and Mr. *Anthony Nichols*. Nor would the Army be satisfied till the House was purged of these Members. Which being done the Army-party became something prevalent, who Voted that the *London*-Militia should be taken out of the hands of the City, and transferred to others better affected to the Army; and that it should be Treason to seek for Subscriptions to Petitions. Hereupon great multitudes of Apprentices

tices and others in a tumultuous sort resorted to the Parliament House, and there kept the Speaker in his Chair till this Vote was past; That the King should come to *London* to treat, and that the City should have the ordering of their own Militia. *Fairfax* understanding this, hast with his Army to *London*, and at *Hounslow* was met by the Speaker, and such of the Members as sided with the Army, who complained of the violence that was offered them. In the mean while the Citizens and Presbyterian part of the Parliament made some preparations to oppose the Army; but upon the Generals approach to the City, the Gates were thrown open, and the Army marched in triumph through the City, seized upon the Tower, dismantled the Fortifications, imprisoned the Mayor, and divers of the chief Citizens, and committed some Noblemen to the black Rod.

In September the Members at *Westminster* sent Propositions to his Majesty then at *Hampton-court*, which were the same in substance with those formerly offered, as for the abolishing Episcopacy, the Parliament to have the disposal of all great Offices of Trust and Militia.

About this time the Parliament Voted, That 6000 Foot and 2400 Horse and Dragoons should be sent into *Ireland*, and 18000 Foot and 7200 Horse, and 1000 Dragoons should be kept up as a standing Army for *England*, the rest of the Souldiers to be disbanded. The Army also for the better carrying on of their designs, about the same time elected out of every Regiment a certain number of Souldiers to meet and consult by the name of Adjutators; which were a Military Common-Council, being two Commission Officers, and two private Souldiers out of every Regiment to consult for the Armies good, to draw up their grievances and present them to the General, and he to the Parliament. These *Oliver* and his Assistant *Ireton* encouraged as long as suited their Designs, and then laid them aside.

November

November the 6th. The Scotch Commissioners sent a Letter to the Speaker of the Lower House, that the King might be admitted to a Personal-Treaty; at least, that the Army might not remove him from *Hampton-Court*; but some of the Army Officers having informed his Majesty (on design to have him the surer at their dispose) that his Person was in some hazard from the Adjutators and Levellers, he therefore with three of his most trusty Attendants, Sir *John Berkley*, Mr. *Ashburnham*, and Colonel *Legg*, in the dark and tempestuous night of November the 11th. escaped from *Hampton-Court*, and after some wandering committed himself to Colonel *Hammond* Governor of the Isle of *Wight*, who conveyed him to *Carisbrook-Castle*, the very Pit, 'tis said, that his enemies had designed for him: for it was rumor'd above a fortnight before in the Army, that the King should be in the Isle of *Wight*: And the very night he departed from *Hampton-Court*, the Centinels were withdrawn from their usual standings, on purpose to facilitate his escape thence.

Whilst his Majesty was at *Hampton-Court*, Propositions (being the same with those at *Newcastle*) were presented to him by the Earls of *Pembroke* and *Lauderdale*, Sir *Char. Erskin*, Sir *Job. Holland*, Sir *Job. Cook*, Sir *James Harrington*, Mr. *Rich. Brown*, Mr. *Hugh Kenedy*, and Mr. *Robert Berkley*, in the names of the Parliament of *England*, and in behalf of the Kingdom of *Scotland*.

From *Carisbrook-Castle* his Majesty wrote a Letter to the Parliament, wherein he professed, he could not either, as a King or Christian, consent to the abolishing of Episcopacy, because he esteemed it to be Apostolical, and at his Coronation was sworn to maintain it; yet he was willing Presbytery should be settled for three years, and that a free debate should be had by such a number of Divines, about the settlement of Church-Government for the future. And was willing also that the Parliament should dispose of the Militia, and should have the choice of his Privy Council by grant of Patent from him during his Reign: withal earnestly

Aa

earnestly soliciting them to pity the languishing condition of the Kingdom, and to come to a Personal-treaty with him. After three day debate, the Parliament sent four Bills unto his Majesty to be signed by him, but so dergating they were from his Royalty, that the Scotch Commissioners declared against them, and the King refused the signing of them. The Parliament therupon Voted, That no more Addresses should be made to the King.

In the mean while Colonel *Hammond* had dismissed the Kings Servants, and used him more severely than formerly, which occasioned Captain *Burleigh* to beat up the Drum for the Kings service and freedom in the Isle of *Wight*; but he was soon apprehended and afterward executed.

A. D. 1648. The Parliament Voted that all they who would not submit to the Power (meaning their usurped Authority) should be expelled the University, and that all the College-Rents should be payed to the Visitors by them appointed.

April the 9th. and 10th. The *London Boys* made an Insurrection, seized the Magazine at *Leaden-hall*, crying out for God and King *Charles*, but were quieted by *Fairfax*. *Poyer, Langhorn, Powel, and Sir John Owen* took up Arms for the King in *Wales*, but Colonel *Langhorne* and *Powel* were defeated by Colonel *Horton*, and Sir *John Owen* by Major-general *Mitton*, and *Pembroke-Castle* kept by Colonel *Poyer* was yielded to that Arch-Traytor *Cromwell*. July 13th. *Powel, Poyer, and Langhorn* afterwards cast Lots for their lives; and the Lot falling upon *Poyer* he was shot to death.

April the 20th. The Duke of *York* disguised in Womans apparel, escaped from Saint *James's*, and past into *Holland*. Many were the Petitions that now were presented the Parliament for a Personal-treaty, and for disbanding the Army. But the *Surry* Petitioners by the command of the Army-Officers, and Parliament men, were assaulted at the Parliament-doors, and some of them were kill'd, some wounded, and most of them plundered by the Souldiers. And now

the

the Kentish men, to the number of 10000 took up Arms for the King, and embodied themselves at *Maidstone*, where they made a gallant resistance against General *Fairfax* for the space of six hours; but his Veteran Souldiers at last prevailed, taking many of them, and eight pieces of Ordnance. June the 2d. the old Lord *Goring*, Earl of *Norwich*, with 500 men, crois'd into *Essex* and got into *Colchester*, whither the Country People flockt unto him, also a party from *London*, and the Lord *Capel* and *Loughbrough* out of *Hertfordshire*.

Some of the Navy also fall off from the Rulers at *Westminster*, and setting the levelling Admiral *Rainsbrough* on shore, 17 Ships delivered themselves to the Prince of *Wales*.

The Earl of *Holland* also headed a Royal party at *Kingstone upon Thames*; But after a short, yet smart fight, his party was dispersed, the Lord *Francis Villers* was slain, and many Prisoners of note were taken July the 7th. and shortly after the Earl of *Holland* himself was apprehended.

The Parliament of *Scotland* sent into *England* an Army under Duke *Hamilton* in order to recover the Kings Liberty, and to reestablish him on his Throne; but August the 17th. at *Preston* in *Lancashire*, the Scotch Army of near 21000 was totally routed by *Oliver Cromwel*. Tis said in this day's fight and the pursuit, the English took more Prisoners than their own Army amounted unto, and that was about 12000. The Parliament lost here that daring Martialist Colonel *Francis Thornhaigh*. Shortly after the Battle Duke *Hamilton* was taken Prisoner; and *Cromwel* to improve this success, followed the scattered parties into *Scotland*, where when he was come, there repaired to him the Earls of *Arguil, Lowden, Leven*, and other of the Scotch Covenanting Nobility, who contracted with him for subduing the common Enemy, meaning the Loyal party.

*Colchester*, that had endured a tedious Siege, and was now brought to such scarcity of Provision, that they had not Horse-flesh enough to serve them one

A a 2

day

## CHARLES I.

day longer (and on it they had lived almost a fortnight) August the 27th. yielded upon Articles; The private Souldiers to depart with life, the Commanders to remain at the General's dispose, and the City to raise 14000 l. to save it from Plunder. Prisoners of quality taken here, were the Lords *Goring*, *Capel*, and *Loughbrough*, eleven Knights, twelve Colonels, eight Lieutenant-colonels, nine Majors, thirty Captains, and sixty-five Gentlemen. Three of the Knights were presently condemned by a Council of War, two of whom, namely Sir *Charles Lucas*, and Sir *George Lisle*, were shot to death, dying as they had lived, with great courage.

But whilst these things were managed by the Army, the Parliament was busied with Petitions from *London* and other places for a Personal-treaty. The Parliament therefore, contrary to the humors of some of their factious Members, repealed those Votes they had formerly made for no more Addresses to the King, and both Houses Voted a Treaty to be with the King in Honor, Freedom and Safety. And September the 18th. the Treaty began at *Newport* in the Isle of *Wight*, where his Majesty condescended so far unto the Parliaments demands, (as, that Presbytery should be settled for three years, the Parliament should dispose of the Militia, and should have the choice of his Privy Counsellors and great Officers of State during the term of his life, &c.) that both Houses came to this resolve, That the Kings Concessions were a sufficient ground for Peace. But this did exceedingly irrage the factious Members and Commanders of the Army, who now resolved to seize the King into their own hands and dispose, which they did, removing him out of the Isle of *Wight*, and making him Prisoner in *Hurst-Castle*.

November the 30th. The Army then fell to purging the Parliament, apprehending forty Members thereof, that were Persons of the most known integrity and highest resolution, denying admissions to 150 more; and suffering none to enter the House, save such whom they

## CHARLES I.

they knew would serve their deligns. Which Army-Members revived those Votes of no more Addresses to the King; the Votes for a Treaty with the King, and of the satisfactorines of his Concessions, they raised out of the Journal-book. And then proceeded to Vote, That the supreme Authority of the Nation resided in themselves; That to raise Arms against the Peoples Representatives, or the Parliament, was High-treason; That the King himself took Arms against the Parliament, and so was guilty of the bloodshed throughout the Civil-war. And therefore this fag-end of a Parliament was resolved to have his Majesty brought to his Tryal, in order thereto giving their commands for his bringing up to *London*; and January the 19th. he was accordingly brought to *Saint James's*. When the factious Members, whom the Army had licensed to sit, proceeded to constitute a Court for the Tryal of the King, giving it the specious name of the High Court of Justice; which said Court they impowered to convene, hear, judg, and execute *Charles Stuart King of England*. These Proceedings the House of Lords detested, so did the Parliament of *Scotland*, the Judges of the Land affirmed it to be contrary to the known Laws and Customs of *England*, for the King to be brought to Tryal; and the Presbyterian Ministers did both publickly and privately dissuade them from this horrid Action, though all in vain. And the more to animate the Kings Judges in their illegal proceedings, that Pulpit-Jester *Hugh Peters* Preached before them on that Text, Ps. 149.8. To bind their Kings in Chains, &c. such honor have all his Saints; when he assured them, that they were the Saints there meant, often in his Sermon calling them the Saint Judges; and professed, that he had for a certain found upon a strict scrutiny, that there were in the Army 5000 Saints, no less holy than those that now conversed in Heaven with God Almighty. Afterwards kneeling in his Pulpit, weeping and lifting up his hands, he earnestly beg'd them in the name of the People of *England*, that they woul execute

justice upon that Wretch *Charles*, and would not let *Benhadad* escape in safety, &c.

January the 20th. His Majesty was brought before the High Court of Justice in *Westminster-hall*, where he boldly and cheerfully took the Seat prepared for him, and the Charge was read against him with all those reproachful terms of Tyrant, Traytor, and Murtherer, and impleaded in the name of all the People of *England*. But General *Fairfax* his Lady from a Scaffold adjoining, cryed with a loud voice, That not half the People of *England* were guilty of that Crime, but that 'twas by means of that Traytor *Cromwel* that this wickednes was done. The King alledged to the Court that he could not make his defence, unless they first produced their Authority for the Tryal of him their King, which they not being able to do, (except that of the Sword) remanded him to the place of his Captivity.

January the 22d. The High Court of Justice met again, when the King being brought to the Bar, Solicitor *Cook* required that he might be put upon it, either to give in his positive answer, or else that the charge against him upon his refusal to plead, might be taken for confessed. The substance of which Charge was, That he the said *Charles Stuart* King of *England* had been the Occasion, Author, and Contriver of the Wars, and therein was guilty of all the Treasons, Murtherers, Rapines, Burnings, Spoils, Desolations, Damage and Mischiefs to this Nation, acted or committed in the Wars, or occasioned thereby. To the Charge, President *Bradshaw* required the Kings answer; but his Majesty firmly persisting in the disowning of their Authority, and offering to give reasons why he could not own their Court, the Court was adjourned to the next day.

January the 23d. The King was again brought before his fictitious Judges, when he was again presl'd to give in his reasons why he could not own their Authority; alledging, that to own this new Court was against the Privileges of the People, and the fundamental

mental Laws of the Kingdom. Whereupon the President commanded the Clerk to record the default, and the Guard to take back the Prisoner, which was accordingly done.

January the 27th. His Majesty was again brought to the Bar, where he still refused to own their illegal Court, but said he had some matters conduced to the good of the People, which he desired to have liberty to speak before the Members of both Houses, which the Court would by no means yield unto, but commanded the Clerk to read the Sentence against him, which was, *That whereas the Commons of England in Parliament assembled, have appointed them a High Court of Justice for the trying of Charles Stuart King of England, before whom he had been three times convened, and at the first time a Charge of High Treason, and other crimes and misdemeanors was read in behalf of England, &c. To which Charge the said Charles Stuart refused several times to answer, &c. for all which Treasons and Crimes mentioned in the Charge, this Court doth adjudge the said Charles Stuart as a Tyrant, Traytor, Murtherer, and publick Enemy, to be put to death by severing his Head from his Body.* This Sentence being read, the Members of the Court approved it by holding up their hands. His Majesty offered to speak after the Sentence, which *Bradshaw* would not suffer him to do, but commanded him to be taken away; when in his passing along, the Souldiers reviled him with many irreverent Taunts, blew their stinking Tobacco into his Face, which they knew to be very distastful to him, and one or two more barbarous than the rest, spit in his Face, the good King wiping it off again, and saying, *My Saviour suffered far more than this for me.* And when the rude Souldiers, instructed by their Commanders, cryed out, Justice, Justice, Execution, Execution; this pious King pitied their blindness, saying, *Poor Souls, for a piece of money they would do as much for their Commanders.* Such as pull'd off their Hats or bowed to him, as he was carrying back to his imprisonment, the Souldiers beat with their Fists and Weapons, and knocked one down

down dead, but for saying, God be merciful unto him.

January the 28th. This right Christian King was guarded from White-hall to St. James's, where Dr. Juxon Bishop of London preached before him on these words, *In the day when God shall judge the secrets of all men by Jesus Christ, according to my Gospel, Rom. 2. 16.*

January the 29th. The Lady Elizabeth and Duke of Gloucester being admitted to take their last farewell of their condemned Father; his Majesty after he had given his Blessing to the Princess Elizabeth, bad her tell her Brother James whenever she should see him, that 'twas his Fathers last desire, *That he should no more look upon Charles as his eldest Brother only, but be obedient to him as his Sovereign, and that they should love one the other, and forgive their Fathers Enemies.* He also bad her to read Bishop Andrews's Sermons, Hooker's Ecclesiastical Policy, and Bishop Laud against Fisher, which would ground her against Popery; wished her not to grieve for him, for he should die a glorious death, it being for the Laws and Liberties of the Land, and for maintaining the Protestant Religion. Bad her tell her Mother, That his thoughts had never strayed from her, and that his love should be the same unto the last. Then gave her his Blessing, bidding her to send his Blessing to the rest of her Brothers and Sisters, and commendations to all his Friends. To the Duke of Gloucester he said, *He heard the Army intended to make him King, but that he told him he must not accept, so long as his two elder Brothers were living, commanded him to fear the Lord, and he would provide for him.*

Tuesday January the 30th. in the morning the Bishop of London read Divine Service in his Majesties presence, when the 27th Chapter of St. Matthew's Gospel, the History of our Saviour's Crucifixion fell out to be the second Lesson. After Morning Prayer, the King received the Sacrament, and performed private Devotions in preparation to his passion; which being ended, about ten of the Clock this most Christian King was brought from St. James's to White-hall by a Regiment of Foot, and a private Guard of Partizans, the Bishop on one hand of him, and Colonel Thoinlinson (who had

the

the charge of him) on the other, both bear-headed. His Majesty walked very fast, and bad them go faster: thus saying, *That he now went before them to strive for an heavenly Crown with less solicitude, than he had often encouraged his Soldiers to fight for an earthly Diadem.* Being come into the Cabinet-Chamber in White-hall, where he use to lodg, he there passed the time for near two hours in his Devotion, about twelve he eat a bit of Bread, and drank a glass of Claret; and towards One, Colonel Hacker with other Officers and Souldiers brought him through the Banqueting-house, and through a Window of that upon a Scaffold which was hung with Black. Divers Companies of Foot, and Troops of Horse were placed on each side of the Street, which hindred the approach of the very numerous Spectators; therefore the King directed his Speech chiefly to Colonel Thoinlinson.

*I shall be very little heard of any body here, I shall therefore speak a word unto you here.*

*Indeed I could hold my peace very well, if I did not think that holding my peace would make some think that I did submit to the guilt, as well as to the punishment; but I think it is my duty, to God first, and to my Country, for to clear my self both as an honest Man, a good King, and a good Christian.*

*I shall begin first with my Innocency. In troth, I think it not very needful for me to insist long upon this, for all the World knows that I never did begin a War first with the two Houses of Parliament, and I call God to witness, to whom I must shortly make an account, that I never did intend for to incroach upon their Privileges, they began upon me; it is the Militia they began upon, they confess that the Militia was mine, but they thought it fit for to have it from me. And to be short, if any body will look to the dates of Commissions, of their Commissions and mine, and likewise to the Declarations, they will see clearly that they began these unhappy Troubles, not I. So that as to the guilt of these enormous Crimes that are laid against me, I hope in God, that God will clear me of it. I will not, (I am in Charity) God forbid, that I should lay it on the two Houses*

Upon the  
Earl of  
Strafford.

House of Parliament, there is no necessity of either, I hope they are free of this guilt. For I do believe that ill Instruments between them and me have been the chief cause of all this blood-shed. So that by way of speaking, as I find my self clear of this, I hope, and pray God that they may too. Yet for all this, God forbid that I should be so ill a Christian as not to say that Gods Judgments are just upon me; many times he doth pay Justice upon an unjust Sentence, that is ordinary. I will only say this, that an unjust Sentence that I suffered for to take effect is punished now by an unjust Sentence upon me. That is— So far I have said, to shew you that I am an innocent Man.

Now for to shew you that I am a good Christian, I hope there is a good man (pointing to the Bishop) that will bear me witness that I have forgiven all the World, and even those in particular that have been the chief causes of my death; who they are, God knows, I do not desire to know, I pray God forgive them. But this is not all, My Charity must go further, I wish that they may repent, for they have indeed committed a great sin in that particular, I pray God with Saint Stephen, that this be not laid to their charge. Nay, not only so, but that they may take the right way to the peace of the Kingdom; for my Charity commands me not only to forgive particular Men, but my Charity commands me to endeavor to the last gasp, the peace of the Kingdom. So, Sirs, I do wish with all my Soul, (and I do hope there is some here will carry it further (turning to some Gentlemen that wrote) that they may indeavor the peace of the Kingdom.

Now, Sirs, I must shew you both how you are out of the way, and will put you in a way.

First, You are out of the way. For certainly all the way you have ever had yet, as I could find by any thing, is in the way of Conquest. Certainly this is an ill way; For Conquest, Sirs, in my Opinion, is never just, except there be a good just Cause, either for matter of wrong, or just Title; and then if you go beyond it, the first quarrel that you have to it, that makes it unjust at the end, that was just at first. But if it be only matter of Conquest, then it is

is a great Robbery, as a Pirate said to Alexander, that he was the great Robber, he was but a petty Robber. And so, Sirs, I do think think the way that you are in is much out of the way.

Now, Sirs, for to put you in the way, believe it, you will never do right, nor God will never prosper you, until you give God his due, the King his due, (that is, my Successors) and the People their due; I am as much for them as any of you.

You must give God his due, by regulating rightly his Church (according to his Scripture) which is now out of order. For to set you in a way particularly, now I cannot, but only this, a National Synod, freely called, freely debating among themselves, must settle this, when that every Opinion is freely and clearly heard.

For the King indeed I will not,---- (then turning to a Gentleman that touched the Axe, he said, hurt not the Axe, that may hurt me.) For the King, the Laws of the Land will clearly instruct you for that, therefore because it concerns my own particular, I only give you a touch of it.

For the People, And truly I desire their Liberty and Freedom as much as any body whomsoever; but I must tell you, that their Liberty and Freedome consists in having of Government, those Laws by which their Life and their Goods may be most their own. It is not for having share in Government, Sirs, that is nothing pertaining to them, a Subject and a Sovereign are clear different things. And therefore until they do that, I mean, that you do put the People in that Liberty as I say, certainly they will never enjoy themselves. Sirs, It was for this that now I am come here, if I would have given way to an Arbitrary way, for to have all Laws changed according to the power of the Sword, I needed not to have come here; and therefore I tell you (and I pray God it be not laid to your charge) that I am the Martyr of the People.

In troth, Sirs, I shall not hold you much longer, for I will only say this to you, That in truth I could have desired some little time longer, because that I would have put this that I have said in a little more order, and a little better digested than I have done, and therefore I hope you will excuse me.

## CHARLES I.

*I have delivered my Conscience; I pray God that you do take those Courses that are best for the good of the Kingdom and your own Salvation.*

Then the Bishop said,

Though it be very well known that your Majesty's Affections are to the Protestant Religion, yet it may be expected that you should say somewhat for the World's satisfaction in that particular.

Whereupon the King replied,

*I thank you very heartily, my Lord, for that I had almost forgotten it.*

*In troth, Sirs, my Conscience in Religion, I think, is very well known to all the World, and therefore I declare before you all, That I die a Christian, according to the Profession of the Church of England, as I found it left me by my Father; and this honest man (pointing to the Bishop) I think will witness it.*

Then turning to the Officers, he said,

*Sirs, Excuse me this same. I have a good Cause, and I have a gracious God. I will say no more.*

Then to Colonel Hacker, he said;

*Take care that they do not put me to pain. And, Sir, this, and it please you-----*

But a Gentleman coming near the Axe, the King said,

*Take heed of the Axe, pray take heed of the Axe.*

And to the Executioner, he said,

*I shall say but very short prayers, and when I thrust out my hands-----*

Then he called to the Bishop for his Cap, and having put it on, asked the Executioner,

*Does my Hair trouble you?*

Who desir'd him to put it all under his Cap, which as he was doing by the help of the Bishop and the Executioner; he turned to the Bishop, and said,

*I have a good Cause, and a gracious God on my side.*

The Bishop said,

There is but one Stage more, (alluding to Posts and Stages in a Race) which though turbulent and troublesome,

## CHARLES I.

blesome, yet is a very short one. You may consider it will soon carry you a very great way, it will carry you from Earth to Heaven, and there you shall find, to your great joy, the Prize you hasten to, a Crown of Glory.

The King adjoyns,

*I go from a corruptible to an incorruptible Crown, where no disturbance can be, no disturbance in the world.*

Bishop. You are exchanged from a temporal to an eternal Crown. A good Exchange.

Then the King asked the Executioner,

*Is my Hair well?*

And taking off his Cloak and George, he delivered his George to the Bishop, saying, Remember. ('twas said, to send it to the Prince.)

Then putting off his Doublet, and being in his Waistcoat, he put on his Cloak again, and looking upon the Block, said to the Executioner,

*You must set it fast.*

Execut. It is fast, Sir.

King. It might have been a little higher.

Execut. It can be no higher, Sir.

King. When I put out my hands this way, then----

Then having said a few words to himself, as he stood, with hands and eyes lift up, immediately stooping down, he laid his Neck upon the Block, and the Executioner again putting his Hair under his Cap, his Majesty thinking he had been going to strike, bad him

*Stay for the Sign.*

Execut Yes, I will, and it please your Majesty.

After a very short pause, his Majesty stretching forth his Hands, the Wizarded Executioner at one Blow severed his Royal Head from his Body. Whose Blood was taken up by several Persons for different ends, by some as Trophies of their Villany, by others as Relicks of a Martyr. His Corps embalmed and wrapped in Lead, was conveyed to Windsor by some of his Servants. And Febr. the 9th. 1648. was there interred in the Chappel-Royal, by the Duke of Richmond, Marquis

Marques of Hartfort, Earls of Southampton and Lindsey, and the Bishop of London.

A Prince he was very temperate, chaste, humble, affectionate to his People, eloquent, notwithstanding some small hesitation in his utterance; exceeding in fortitude and patience; most devout in, and constant to his Religion. His Wife was *Henrietta Maria*, the Daughter of *Henry the 4th. King of France*, by whom he had Issue *Charles-James* born at Greenwich, May 13th. 1628. but died near as soon as born. *Charles* the present King of England born at St. James's, May 29. 1630. whom God long preserve. *James Duke of York* born also at St. James's, October 13. 1633. *Henry Duke of Gloucester* born in the same Place, July 8. 1639. *Mary* born November 4. 1631. Married to *William Count of Nassau*, Prince of Orange, by whom she had the present Prince of Orange. *Elizabeth* born Janua. 28. 1635. *Anne* born March 17. 1637. died before her Father. *Katharine*, who died almost as soon as born. *Henrietta* born at Excester, June 16. 1644. Married to the Duke of *Anjou and Orleans*, only Brother to *Lewis* the 14th. King of France. In his Troubles he composed an excellent Book, intituled *Eikon Basilicon*; he had begun the repairing of Saint Paul's at London; he built that famous Ship called the *Royal Sovereign*, whose burden was 1636 Tuns, her length 127 foot, her breadth within the Planks 46 foot, her depth from her breadth 19 foot, carrying 100 Pieces of Ordanances wanting four; her Lanthorn so large that ten Men might stand in it; her building cost eighty thousand pounds.

In the last year of King *James*, and first of King *Charles the First*, (viz. 1625.) the Plague begun in *White Chappel* in London, in the same house, on the same day of the month, with the same number that died 22 years before, when Queen *Elizabeth* departed this Life. Of this Plague there died in all within the Bills of Mortality 41313. besides of other Diseases 8848.

A. D.

A. D. 1632. and February the 11th. hapned a great Fire on London-Bridge.

A. D. 1633. Thomas Parre died, being aged 152 years, and was buried in the Abby-Church at Westminister.

The Names of the Regicides who sat when Judgment was for murthering the King, were Serjeant *John Bradshaw* President of the Court, *Oliver Cromwel*, *Henry Ireton*, *Thomas Lord Grey of Groby*, *John Danvers*, *Hardres Waller*, *Thomas Maleverer*, *John Bourchier*, *William Countable*, *Michael Levesey*, *Greg. Norton*, Knights: *John Lisle*, *William Say*, *William Heschingham*, *John Blakestone*, *Gilbert Millington*, *Cornelius Holland*, *John Carew*, *Miles Corbet*, *Francis Allen*, *Peregrin Pelham*, *Humphery Edwards*, *Gregory Clement*, *Thomas Wogan*, *Thomas Scot*, *William Cawley*, *Anthony Stapely*, *Nicholas Love*, *Augustine Garland*, *John Dixwell*, *Simon Mayne*, *Daniel Blagrave*, Esquires: *Valentine Walton*, *Thomas Harrison*, *Edward Whaley*, *Thomas Pride*, *Isaac Ewer*, *Henry Marten*, *William Purefoy*, *John Berkstead*, *Edmund Ludlow*, *John Hutchinson*, *Robert Tichburn*, *Owen Roe*, *Robert Lilburn*, *Adrian Scrope*, *Richard Dean*, *John Okey*, *John Hewson*, *William Goffe*, *John Jones*, *John Moor*, *John Allured*, *Henry Smith*, *Edmund Harvey*, *John Vane*, *John Downes*, *Thomas Horton*, *Thomas Hammond*, *George Fleetwood*, *James Temple*, *Thomas Wait*, Colonels: *Isaac Pennington*, and *Thomas Andrews*, Aldermen of London: *Vincent Potter*, and *Peter Temple*. Officers belonging to the High Court of Justice, were Dr. *Dorislaus*, *Ask*, *William Steel* (who excused himself by Sicknes) *John Cook* Solicitor, *Dendy Mace-bearer*, *Broughton* and *Phelps* Clerks, *Isaac King* Cryer, *Woolfred*, *Pain*, *Radley*, *Powell*, *Hull*, Messengers and Doorkeepers: Forty of these Men of Blood signed the Warrant for the Kings Execution, Murther indeed, which was directed to Colonel *Francis Hacker*, Colonel *Hunks*, and Lieutenant Colonel *Phayre*, to see

see it done. But who can stretch forth his hand against the Lord's Anointed and be guiltless? Sam. 26. 9. My son, faith the Wiseman, Fear thou the Lord and the King, and Meddle not with them that are given to change, for their calamity shall rise suddenly.

## C H A R L E S

## C H A R L E S II.

*J*anuary the 30th, Charles the Second was then in Holland when his Father King Charles the First was murthered; and that tail of a Parliament sitting at Westminster were resolved instead of admitting him the lawful Heir unto the Government of England, to assume it to themselves. To which end, they first set forth a Proclamation, That no Person whatsoever should presume to proclaim or any way to promote Charles Stuart Son of Charles Stuart, late King of England, or any other Person, to be King or chief Magistrate of these Kingdoms, but he that should attempt any such thing should be adjudged a Traytor. After this they Voted the House of Lords to be useless and dangerous, and Kingly Government to be unnecessary and burthensome, and therefore they abolished both. Howbeit, the Marques of Ormond caused his Majesty to be publickly proclaimed King in Ireland, and the Scotch Parliament did the like in Scotland. But the Members at Westminster having a Victorious Army on their side, proceeded to establish their Projects, caused all publick Writings to be issued out in the name of the Keepers of the Liberties of England by Authority of Parliament; ordering a new great Seal to be made with the Cross and Harp on one side, and this Inscription, *The great Seal of England*; on the other side the Picture of the House of Commons, with this Inscription, *In the first year of freedom by Gods blessing restored 1648*. And afterward they appointed that all Moneys to be coined, should be stamped with the Cross and Harp on one side, and the Cross on the other, with this Motto, *The Commonwealth of England, God with us*. And instead of the Oaths of Supremacy

B b

and

and Allegiance, they imposed an Engagement upon the People, To be true and Faithful to the Commonwealth, as it was then established without King or House of Lords. A Council of State they constituted by the name of the Keepers of the Liberties of *England*, consisting of forty Persons, who were to have the executive part of the Government. Thus was *England's* ancient Government soon changed by about 50 Persons who stiled themselves a Parliament, and the Representative body of *England*. The Maxim upon which they grounded these their Alterations, and all other their illegal Proceeds, was this, That all Power and Authority is originally in the People; and that they were the Peoples Representative. When this Junto had made such a model of Government, they erected another High Court of Injustice for the Tryal of Duke *Hamilton*, as Earl of *Cambridge*, of the Earls of *Holland* and *Norwich*, the Lord *Capel*, and Sir *John Owen*, all which were condemned to die for engaging in their Sovereign's Cause; but the Earl of *Norwich* and Sir *John Owen* were reprieved, the other three were beheaded in the Palace-yard at *Westminster*, March the 9th. The ever loyal Lord *Capel* in his Speech on the Scaffold declared, that he died against the Justice of the known Laws of the Land, and for no other cause than his asserting the Fifth Commandment; prayed heartily for the King, for his Restoration, long Life and Prosperity; shutting up his Speech with a profession of his cheerfulness in forgiving his Enemies. Other good Subjects they put to death in other Places of the Nation, Lieutenant Colonel *Morris*, Mr. *Beaumont* a Minister, Major *Monday* and Cornet *Blackburn*. And many were the loyal Persons that were now proscribed, and had their Estates confiscated, as the Marques of *Newcastle*, Earl of *Bristol*, the Lord *Cottington*, *Widdrington*, *Culpepper*, *Byron*, Sir *Edward Hide*, Sir *Philip Musgrave*, Sir *Marmaduke Langdale*, Sir *Richard Greenhill*, with others. And all that had been in actual Arms for the King, or other service, were forced to compound for their Estates if they

they had any, to the great impoverishing of the Royal Party.

A.D. 1649. and April the 7th. The Members at *Westminster*, for the better supply of their Army, and taking away of free-quarter, passed an Act for the levying of 90000*l.* a month upon *England* for six months. Then took into consideration the sale of Dean and Chapters Lands.

May the 15th. Divers Troops of the Army for mutinying were surprised by *Fairfax*, at *Burford*, where some few of the Ringleaders were shot to death, and the rest disbanded. There were of that Party a People called Levellers, who in those times of distraction would have all things in the Commonwealth ordered according to their wild humors; and yet all their cry was for the Liberties of free-born English-men.

About this time Dr. *Dorillaus*, whom the disloyal Members had sent over as their Agent into *Holland*, was slain there by Colonel *Waitford* a Scotch-man; and not long after one *Ascham* another of their Agents sent into *Spain*, was there slain by one *Sparks*.

May the 30th. In the City of *London*, *England* was proclaimed a Free State. And June the 13th. the House ordered that no ceremony should be used to the Kings Children; the Duke of *Gloucester* and Lady *Elizabeth* then in the Junto's custody.

In *Ireland* the Kings Lieutenant the Marquess of *Ormond*, in order to promote the Kings Cause there, concluded a Peace with the Irish, and June the 22d. he besieged the City of *Dublin*; but August the second Colonel *Michael Jones* with his whole strength, being between 8 and 9000, fellied out upon the Besiegers who were 19000 Horse and Foot, and routed them totally, slew of them about 3000, took Prisoners 2517, took all the Marquess's train of Artillery and Ammunition, and a very rich booty in the Camp. August the 16th. Oliver Cromwell landed with his Forces at *Dublin*, and after a short stay there, marched with great expedition against *Tredagh*, or *Drogedah*, where

Sir Arthur Ashton was Governor; the Defendants of that Town did bravely behave themselves, howbeit Oliver gained it by storm, giving strict order to his Soldiers, that they should afford quarter neither to Man, Woman, or Child, but should kill all. He vowed to one of his Commanders, *That he would sacrifice their Bodies to the Souls of the English men they had formerly murdered.* Next Oliver besieged Wexford, which through the treachery of one Strafford, was yielded: And shortly after this, many engarisoned Places were reduced by Oliver's Forces. The Plantation of Virginia, that had refused subjection to the new Republick of England, was forced to a conformity by Sir George Ayscoughs Fleet.

October the 23d. Mr. John Lilbourn, the Leader of the Levelling Party, one that had Wit enough, but of a thwarting, turbulent spirit, was tryed at Guildhall in London, for writing against the Members at Westminster and their Council of State; but he so well pleaded his Case, and had so lucky a Jury, that he was quit in despight of his Judges.

Now, or near this time sprung up a beastly Generation, called Ranters, who gloried in and practised all manner of Lasciviousness.

About this time Prince Rupert, the Kings Admiral, was distrest and put to his shifts by the Junto's Fleet, losing most of his Ships, with his Brother Prince Maurice, who was then cast away.

A.D. 1650. In the beginning of this year, the truly Loyal and Magnanimous Marques of Monrois was defeated in Scotland by Major General Strangborn; the Marques himself by quitting his Horle, and shifting himself into an ordinary Highlanders habit, made a shift to escape for the present; his Standard was taken, in which was pourtrayed the Head of King Charles the First, lying a bleeding, and severed from the Body, with this Motto, *Judg and revenge my curse, O Lord.* The Marques after some days wandring about in by-places, came to the Laird of Ashton's House, a person whom the Marques had done several kindnesses for; but this false Scot, whether

ther for fear or lucre, betrayed this distressed Peer into the hands of his Enemy David Lesley, who sent him to the City of Edinburgh, where the common Hangman met him at the Towns end, and first pulled off his Hat, then forced him into a Cart, which had a high Chair placed in it, in which the Marques was seated, that thereby he might be the more obnoxious to the scorns of the vulgar. But his noble Soul was not at all dismayed, for God, he said, did all the while most comfortably manifest his presence to him, and furnish'd him with courage to overlook the reproaches of men, and to behold him for whose cause he suffered.

After the sentence of Parliament was passed for the bereaving him of his life, he expressed to them how much he was behoden to them for the honor they had conferred on him; *For, said he, I account it greater honor to have my Head stand on the Prison gate for my loyalty to my King, than to have my Picture placed in his Bedchamber; and I wish I had flesh enough, not noly to be set up in four Cities, but to have a piece of it sent to every City in Christendom, for a testimony of my loyalty to my King and Country.*

May the 31st. He was brought to the place of his Execution, where being mounted on a Scaffold, he told the People, That God doth sometimes suffer a just man to perish in his righteousness, and a wicked man to prosper in his wickednes; prayed God to forgive his Enemies, for he did; declared, that what he had done in that Kingdom, was in obedience to the most just Commands of his Sovereign. That he esteemed the late King lived a Saint, and died a Martyr, praying God he might so end as he had done. That he believed never People could be more happy, than they might in his present Majesty. Gave God thanks that he went to Heavens Throne with joy, though Death looked upon him in its most ugly shape. Then desired their Charity and Prayers, concluding thus: I leave my Soul to God, my Service to my Prince, my good-will to my Friends,

and my name and charity to you all. Then having prayed a-while, he received from the Executioner a Cord, whereat hung a Declaration of his Fact, to hang about his Neck, which accordingly he hung there, saying, that he thought himself not more honored by the Garter, than by that Cord and Paper : adding, That if they had any more dishonor to put upon him, he was ready to accept it. And then with a cheerful countenance he submitted himself to the Execution of the Sentence, to be hang'd on a Gallows thirty foot high, for the space of three hours. Which being done, he was taken down, and had his head cut off, which was fixed on *Edenborough Tabbooth*; his Quarters were sent to be set up in several places, and the rest of his mortal parts buried under the Gallows.

This may serve for a tast of the Rebellious and diabolical spirit of that malitious Consistory. When this noble Lord first heard of the murther of King Charles the First, 'tis said, that with the point of his Sword he wrote,

*Great, Good, and Just! could I but rate  
My griefs, and thy too rigid fate;  
I'd weep the World to such a strain,  
That it should Deluge once again.  
But thy loud-tongu'd Blood demands supplies,  
More from Briareus's hands, than Argus's eyes.  
I'll therefore sing thy obsequies with Trumpet sounds,  
And write thy Epitaph with Blood and Wounds.*

Shortly after the death of this Peer, an Agreement was concluded betwixt the King and the Scots at *Breda*, from whence the King went to the *Hague*, and took Shipping for *Scotland*; and at the *Spey* in the North of that Country, he safely arrived; hereupon the Members at *Westminster* fearing left the Scots should invade them, resolved to invade *Scotland*, and to make that the seat of War: in order to which, they sent for their Idol *Cromwel* out of *Ireland*, whom at his coming

to

to *London* they made their Captain General, for *Thomas Lord Fairfax* laid down his Commission, as not willing to engage against his Presbyterian Brethren the Scots.

*June* the 28th. This new Captain General *Oliver*, advanced with his Army towards *Scotland*. *August* the 10th. King *Charles* the First's Statue in the *Royal Exchange*, by order of the *Westminster* Members, was defaced, (the head being broken off) and this Inscription set over, *Exit Tyrannus Regum ultimus, Anno libertatis Angliae restitutae primo, Anno 1648*. *January* the 30th. And about the same time were the Kings Arms ordered to be erased in all publick places; and in lieu of them the States Arms (being St. Georges Crois and the Harp) were set up in Courts of Judicature.

*August* the 22d. was Colonel *Eusebius Andrews* beheaded on *Tower-hill* for receiving a Commission from his Majesty. In *Scotland* the English Army under *Oliver* having made themselves masters of some Garrisons, on *September* the first marched to *Dunbar*, whither the Scotch Army followed them, and pent them up on a neck of Land not a mile and a half from Sea to Sea; great were the streights of the English Army at this time; many of the Souldiers being sick and disabled, and the whole Army shut up as it were in a pound; but these extremities instead of disheartning them, set the greater edge to their courages, and resolved they were on *September* the third 1650. either to force their way through their Enemies, or nobly to die in the attempt: to which end a Party was sent to gain *Coopers Peth-pass* from the Scots; which being effected, the whole English Army charged, and after about an hours hot engagement the Scotch Horse were routed, and thereupon the Foot threw down their Arms, and made the best use they could of their Legs. In the Scots Army was this day near 16000 Foot, and 6000 Horse, whereof 4000 were slain, and near 10000 taken Prisoners. The English Army were not above 7500 Foot and 3500 Horse, besides disabled men. There was taken from the

Scots in this fight 27 Field-pieces, 10000 Arms, many Prisoners of note, and near 200 Horse and Foot-Colours, which were afterwards hung up as Trophies in *Westminster-hall*.

*Septemb.* 8. The virtuous Princess *Elizabeth* died in her Confinement at *Carisbrook Castle* in the Isle of *Wight*. And in *August* following, the Prince of *Orange* died at the *Hague* in *Holland*; and sometime after this, the mock Parliament to free *England* of the Royal Blood, sent the Duke of *Glocester* to *Heidleburgh*, ordering him an allowance of 1500*l. per Annum*.

*Octob.* 8. Some Cavaliers took Arms in *Norfolk*, for which about twenty of them were Executed.

*Decemb.* 24. The strong Castle of *Edenbrough* was yielded into the English hands, though not without suspicion of some treachery.

*January* 1. To begin the New-year, the Scots Crowned his Majesty at *Scoon* in *Scotland*, after he had conceded to some Kirk-conditions. A little before this time there were three different parties in *Scotland*: *David Leslie* and his Army were for King and Kirk, the Marquess of *Montross* and his followers were for the King without the Kirk: and Colonel *Kerre* and *Straughan* were for the Kirk without the King. Colonel *Kerre's* party was routed and himself taken Prisoner by Colonel *Lambert*; and *Straughan* and *Swinton* deserted the Kirk, complying with the English, for which the Kirk excommunicated them.

*March* 4. Sir *Henry Hide* was Beheaded before the Royal Exchange, because being the Kings Leager at *Constantinople*, he had opposed *Bendish* who was sent thither by the States of *England*.

The Quakers about this time first appeared, one *George Fox* (called by them the Elder, there being another of the same Name of a later Date amongst them) was the orginal Rise of them. Their beginning certainly was very prodigious, viz. being first taken with Swellings in their Bodies as if ready to burst, with Shakings and Tremblings, (thence called Quakers,) and many times strange ridiculous Crochets

chets in their Brains. And what is their Religion? Immorality. No civil respect amongst Men would this were the worst. But there's a sort of Men too much amongst us from *Rome-ward*, that are of that French Kings mind, Divide and Rule. When Spanish Invasion, Powder Treason, &c. will not do their work to ruin us, Division they suppose will do it at the last. Therefore be at Unity amongst your selves, is no unfit Caveat for Protestants always to observe.

*A. D. 1651.* and *March 29*, was Captain *Brown Bushel*, an expert Seaman, Beheaded under the Scaffold on *Tower-hill*, for taking part with his Sovereign.

In *Ireland* the Deputy thereof, *Ireton*, was very successful against the Marques of *Ormond*, the Lord *Inchequin*, Marques *Clancard*, Earl of *Castlehaven*, and other the Kings Friends, taking many Garisons from them; the like did *Oliver* in *Scotland* from the Kings Friends there.

Howbeit, his Majesty hoping that now at length *England* might be favorable to his just Cause, he advances into *England* by the way of *Carlile*, with about 16000 Men, bending his Course by a swift march for the West of *England*; though it was hoped by his Friends he would have directed his Course for *London*. But *Aug. 23*, the King with his Army entred the City of *Worcester*, and *Cromwel* with all hast marched after him, by the way joyning with *Fleetwood*, *Desborough*, the Lord *Grey of Groby*, *Lambert*, *Harrison*, and the *Militia* Forces of several Counties; so that his Army when he was come to *Worcester*, could not amount to fewer than 80000 Men. In *Lancashire* the Earl of *Derby* had raised for the King near 1500 Horse and Foot, against whom Colonel *Lilbourn* marched, and routed them, taking many Persons of Quality; the Earl of *Derby* himself with much ado, escaped to the King at *Worcester*, where on that twice Fatal, but once Lucky day, *Septemb. 3.* his Majesty being surrounded by his Enemies, resolved to sally upon them with his whole Force; which accordingly he did, and at the first made the Disloyal Party retire somewhat disorderly,

the King himself performing the part of a Valiant Souldier at the head of his Horse. But at length his Army being over-powered by the numerous fresh supplies of his Enemies, his Majestie's side was put to the worst, his Horse flying amain towards the North, and his Foot into Worcester, whither they were followed at the heels by their Victors, who entred the City with them, which they plundered, killing and taking most of the Scots Prisoners; those Horse that fled were pursued, and great part of them taken, and the poor stragling Scots were either made Prisoners, or killed by the Country People. The number of the King's Party slain, were judged to be about 3000, and of Prisoners taken in the whole near 10000, amongst whom were Duke Hamilton, the Earls of Shrewsbury, Derby, Cleveland, Lauderdale, Rotho, Carnwath and Kelly, the Lord Syneclare, Sir John Packington, Sir Charles Cunningham, Sir Ralph Clare, Major General Piscoty, Major General Mountgomery, Colonel Graves, Mr. Fanshaw the King's Secretary, the Adjutant General, Marshal-General, General of the Ordnance, together with 5 Colonels of Horse, 13 of Foot, 17 Lieutenant-Colonels, 19 Majors, 109 Captains; there was also taken 158 Colours, the King's Standard, Coach and Horses, Collar of SS, and Star-Cloak, with other things of great value; His Majesty through the good Providence of God escaped the hands of his Enemies, wandring about England in disguise for six Weeks; at length being transported from a Creek near Shoreham in Sussex to Freccam, near Haure de Grace in France, although his Foes made the strictest search for him possible, withall menacing those that should conceal him, and promising high rewards to those that should discover him.

A little before this Fight at Worcester, divers Persons, many of them Presbyterian Ministers, were seized on for holding correspondence with Charles Stuart, (none might, as they loved their Lives and Estates, call him King,) and on August 22, were two of them, namely, Mr. Christopher Love Minister, and Mr. Gibbons beheaded on Tower-hill. The

The common Prisoners, Scots and English, taken at Worcester, were sent up to London; and that they might no further trouble the States of England, they were transported into Foreign Plantations.

Oktob. 15. The Earl of Derby was Beheaded, and Sir Timothy Fetherstonhaugh died the same death also, for the same Crime, viz. for honoring the King. In short time after the Fight of Worcester, the mock Parliament had the welcom News of reducing the Isle of Man, the Barbadoes, the Isle of Jersey, and Cornet Castle in Guernsey; but a little to allay their transport, they had the unwelcom News of the death of their Admiral Popham, and Ireton their Deputy of Ireland; this last died of the Plague under the Walls of Limerick, but was buried in great State in Westminster-Abby.

All was now in a calm at home, and Scotland and Ireland both almost subjected to the English States; they therefore in this leisure-time judge it seasonable to vindicate themselves on the United Netherlands, for the Affronts done to their Ambassadors Oliver St. John, and Walter Strickland in Holland, and their incroaching on the English Merchants Trade, and slighting the English States, who profered strict amity and alliance with them.

Hereupon they prohibited the importing any Foreign Commodities, except upon English bottoms, or such as were of the Country whence the Goods came, beginning withal to stand high upon the claim of Dues, and reparations for the prejudice done the English in their Trading; and when no satisfaction would be given, but the Dutch grew rather more Lordly, calling into question the English Sovereignty in the narrow Seas, and refusing to give the English the honor of the FLAG, the States of England resolved to beat them into better manners. And in the Year of our Lord 1652, on May 19, was the first Sea-fight between the States of England and the Netherlands, the fight continued about four hours, till the night parted them, without much

much cause of boasting on either part ; that which was, the English had a right to. But shortly after this, Admiral *Blake* took twelve Dutch Men of War.

*August 16.* Sir *George Ayscough* with a Squadron of seven Ships, charged through and through the Dutch Fleet, consisting of sixty Men of War, in which Encounter Captain *Pack* was slain.

*Septemb. 5.* As the French Fleet (who took part with the Dutch) were going to the relief of *Dunkirk*, most of them were taken by General *Blake*; and about the conclusion of the same Month, the Dutch were bang'd to purpose by *Blake*, at a place called the *Kentish-Knock*, and were pursued by the English into their very Harbor. But in the beginning of Winter, *Blake* was worsted by the Dutch in the *Downs*, losing the *Garland*, *Bonaventure*, and two Merchant Men. Upon the 18, 19, and 20th days of February, the two Fleets fought again, when the Dutch were forced to fly, the English taking fifty two of their Merchant-Men they had in Convoy, and nine Men of War.

*A. D. 1653. and April 20.* Oliver *Cromwel* took upon him to put a period to the sitting of those long winded Members at *Westminster*, objecting to them when he came to displace them, That they delayed, if not utterly neglected the redressing of public Grievances ; that they designed their own interest, and perpetuating themselves ; therefore they were to sit there no longer. Instead of these Members turned out of doors, *Oliver* and his Officers constituted a Council of State to rule the Common-wealth, though they resolved to rule the Council of State.

*June 2.* The English and Dutch Fleets engaged again in Fight, when at the very first shot made by the Dutch, General *Richard Dean* was slain. *June 3.* the Fleets joyned again, and the dispute was very hot and bloody , till at length the Dutch tacked about, and made haft to their own Coasts. Of the Dutch were taken Prisoners 6 Captains, 1350 others, 11 Men of War were taken, and 2 Hoys, 6 of their best Ships were sunk, and two blown up. Of the English

English were slain besides Admiral *Dean*, one Captain, and a hundred and twenty others, but not one Ship lost or disabled.

*Cromwel* this while, with some of the leading Officers of the Army , had made choice of certain Persons, not above 150 for the three Nations, who were to have the Legislative power, and to be stiled a Parliament. These Parliament Gentlemen and Souldiers of the new fashioned Election , met *July 4*, at *Westminster*, where they chose Mr. *Rouse* for their Speaker ; but not agreeing amongst themselves (for about sixty of them contected hard for the taking away of Tythes from the Ministers as Antichristian,) they fairly re-delivered their power into *Olivers* hands, *December* the 12th, after they had enacted a Law , That Justices of the Peace and not Ministers, should joyn Persons together in sacred Wedlock.

But while this cunning thing called a Parliament , was doing little, or little to the purpose, the active Dutch were again put forth to Sea with about 120 Men of War, and before the *Texel* were encountered by the English, *July* the 29th, the Fight was vigorously maintained on both parts, till the Dutch Admiral *Van Trump*, fighting in the midst of the English Fleet, was with a Musket-shot shot into the left Pap, and slain out-right, whereby the rest of their Fleet was so discouraged, that they made to the *Texel* as speedily as they could. The Dutch in this Fight lost thirty Men of War , and about 1200 of their Men were taken. The English had slain on their part, *Graves*, *Owen*, *Chapman*, *Newman*, *Taylor*, *Crisp*, *Cox* and *Peacock*, Captains, and 400 common Seamen. The Ship named the *Oak* was fired, and two or three disabled. For this eminent piece of Service, the little Parliament ordered that Chains of Gold should be presented to the Admirals *Blake*, and Colon. *George Monk*, Vice-Admiral *Pen*, and Rear-Admiral *Laurson*; and that other Chains likewise should be presented to divers Flag Captains , and Medals of Silver to the Officers of the Fleet.

But

But to return to Oliver, who after his patcht *Junto*, had dissolved themselves, called a Council of Officers, with some others of his Creatures, to consult about the settlement of a Government, and these at length, after great pretences of seeking God's mind herein, concluded to have a single Person again to be the Head of the Commonwealth of *England, Scotland and Ireland*, and the Dominions and Territories thereunto belonging, and *Oliver Cromwel* must be the Man, who though a while seeming unwilling to undertake so great a charge, yet at length yielded, and accordingly was installed Lord Protector of the Commonwealth of *England*, with much Formality and Ceremony, in the Chancery Court at *Westminster*, before the Judges, the Lord Mayor and Aldermen of *London*, with the chief Officers of the Army, on December 16. Immediately after which, all public Writings changed their stile from that of the Keepers of the Liberties of *England*, to that of *Oliver Lord Protector of England, &c.* And the City of *London* to manifest their good liking of this Government and Governor (at least to make shew of it,) invited the Protector to a magnificent Feast at *Grocers-Hall*, on February the eighth; and *Oliver* to gratify them for this favor, Knighted *Thomas Viner* then Lord Mayor.

Aspiring *Cromwel* having thus obtained the Supreme Authority, in short time yielded to a Peace with the *Dutch*, who had been brought exceeding low with the War with *England*.

A. D. 1654. and in the Month of May, upon an accusation of a Plot to destroy the Protector, seize the Tower, raise an Army, and bring in the King, there were divers Royalists apprehended and committed to Prison, three of them were condemned by an High Court of Injustice, and two of them executed, namely, Colonel *John Gerrard* who was Beheaded on *Tower-hill*, and Mr. *Vowels* who was hang'd at *Charing-cross*; on the same day with Colonel *Gerard* was beheaded Don *Pantaleon Sa*, Brother to the *Portugal Embassa-*

*Embassador*, for a Riot made in the *New Exchange*; but death was so terrible to this Person, that his heart was nigh quite dead within him before his Neck came to the Block.

September the third, a pretended Parliament met at *Westminster*, where after they had heard their Master *Oliver's Speech*, and chose *William Lenthall* for their Speaker, they debated, Whether the Legislative power should be in a single Person and a Parliament, or in a Parliament only. The Protectors Faction were for the former; those called the Commonwealth party, that were for a Democratical Government, were for the latter; one declaring, That as God had made him an Instrument in cutting down Tyranny in one Person, so now he would not endure to see the Nations Liberties shackled by another, whose right to the Government could be measured out no other way than by the length of his Sword. But when these things were reported to the Usurper *Oliver*, he hasted from *White-hall* to *Westminster*, and there declares to his Parliament, that he would have them to take notice of this, That the same Government made him a Protector, as made them a Parliament: That as they were intrusted with some things, so was he with others: That there were certain Fundamentals which could not be altered, as, That the Government should be in a single Person and Parliament: That Parliaments should not be perpetual: That in Religious matters there should be Liberty of Conscience, &c. And then he enjoyed them to sign this Recognition of the Government, viz. I do hereby promise and engage to be true and faithful to the Lord Protector and Commonwealth of England, Scotland, and Ireland, and shall not (according to the tenor of the Indenture, whereby I am returned to serve in Parliament,) propose or give my consent to alter the Government as 'tis settled in one Person and a Parliament. The Subscription to this was refused by several Members; the rest who subscribed it were permitted to sit till January the 24th, 1654, at which time *Oliver* dissolved them, because

cause they delayed to settle him in the Government.

*December the 19th, Pen and Venables with a Fleet of thirty Ships, wherein were three thousand Forces, put to Sea; and in April following arrived at Hispaniola, and came within sight of that Golden Town Santa Domingo, upon which their first and chief Enterprize was designed; but through the excessive heat of the Clime, want of fresh water, and some other discouragements, great numbers of the Souldiers perished; and that design was fruitless; therefore they set Sail for the Island Jamaica; where being arrived, they were there so successful, as in short time to possess themselves of the chief Town called Otranto, bringing the whole Island into subjection.*

In England the Royal Party were busie to take down the Protectors Greatnes; but the Plot was discovered before it was ripe for Execution, and many of the Conspirators in several places seized on by the Oliverians. At Salisbury, March the 11th, a Parry of about 200 Cavaliers were in Arms, but were dispersed, and some of their chief Leaders taken, as Mr. Grove, Lieutenant Colon. Penruddock, Major Dean, Jones, &c. Others there were in Arms about Shrewsbury, Sherwood Forrest in Northumberland, and another Party in Yorkshire, where Sir Henry Slingsby was taken: Lieutenant Colonel Penruddock, and Mr. Grove were beheaded at Salisbury, and some others of them were hang'd.

*A. D. 1655.* About the beginning of this Year Admiral Blake with his Fleet, performed a daring piece of Service at Tunis, where demanding from the Dye or Governor of Tunis reparation for the losses the English sustained from Turkish Pirates, and having a scornful Answer returned, he boldly press'd upon their Ships lying under the Castle of Goleeta, and there burnt nine Ships, with but the loss of 25 Men; in the mean time plying continued Broadsides upon the Castle within Musket-Shot of it.

In England the Protector constituted a new kind of Officers called Major Generals, who were each of them

them (being eleven in number) in their several limits assigned them to supervise the actions of the poor Royalists, and to decimate their Estates, and indeed to do what they listed; but these after they had tyrannized a while, were laid aside.

*February the 16th.* did the Spaniard at Dunkirk declare open War against England, and immediately thereupon was a Peace concluded betwixt France and England, one of the Articles of which was, That the King of France should exclude Charles Stuart (King of England) and all his Relations and Adherents out of his Dominions, and accordingly the Duke of York was complemented to depart France by such a time; nor was his retinue to stay after him; had his Majesty himself been there, he must have expected the same dealing.

*February the 21st.* died that learned Prelate Dr. Usher Archbishop of Armagh, and was buried in Westminster Abby.

*A. D. 1656.* To begin this year well for fortunate Oliver, some of his Fleet under the Admirals Blake and Mountague, not far from Cades or Cales, set upon a Fleet of eight Spaniards, one of which they sunk, two burt, one run ashore, and two the English took, one whreof had a great quantity of Plate and Coche-nel in her, the other laden chiefly with Hides.

*September the 17th.* another of Oliver's Parliaments assembled at Westminster, where before they were admitted to enter the House, they must severally engage not to act any thing prejudicial to the present Government; whereupon some of them returned home, the rest entring the House, chose Sir Thomas Widdrington their Speaker, and set themselves to Act suitably to Oliver's wishes, passing an Act for renouncing and disannulling the Title of Charles Stuart unto the Government of the Nations of England, Scotland, and Ireland, &c. and making it to be Treason againt the Protector as it formerly had been againt the Kings person; then ordained Moneys to be raised in the three Nations for paying the Armies. And ordered a years rent  
C c to

to be paid the Protector for every House built upon a new Foundation within ten miles of the City of London.

Yet notwithstanding the provision made to secure the Protector's person, there were divers attempts made to kill him, and a printed Paper was published, Intituled, *Killing no Murther*. One Miles Sindercomb formerly a Souldier in the Army, had determined to shoot, or by one means or other to rid the world of him; but his design being betrayed, he was condemned to be hang'd and quartered; to prevent which he procured his own death, 'tis said, by snuffing up a poysonous Powder into his head; wherefore as a self-murtherer he was drag'd at a Horses tail from the Tower to Tower-hill, where being turned naked into a hole, a Stake spiked with Iron was driven through him.

A.D. 1657. This year commenced with a Conspiracy of Fifth Monarchists to have pull'd down Oliver; but the Plot was discovered, and the Projectors apprehended; the chief of whom was Major General *Harrison*, Vice-Admiral *Lawson*, Colonel *Rich*, Major *Danvers*, and Captain *Venner*; their Standard which they had in readines, had pourtraied in it a Lyon couchant, Gules in a Field argent, with this Motto, *Who shall rouze him?*

April the 20th. Admiral *Blake* performed another notable Exploit; for at *Santa Cruz* in *Teneriffa*, the chief Island of the *Canaries*, and belonging to the Spaniards, he fired and sunk 16 great Ships, among which was the Admiral, Vice-Admiral, and Rear-Admiral, and two or three Gallions; the Spaniards besides the los of their whole Fleet, had many hundreds of men slain on the shore; yet in this notable Action, the English had but 48 men slain, and 120 wounded; The Protector to gratifie the Admiral for this his brave service, sent him a Diamond Ring worth 500*l.* and Captain *Rich. Stainer* who led the first Squadron, was at his coming into *England*, for this and his other good service at *Cadiz*, honored with Knighthood.

And

And now the Parliament, who had been long debating concerning the settling of his Highness, at last presented him with a certain thing called, *The humble Petition and Advice*, desiring him to take the Government of the three Nations upon him, with the stile of King; which stile he refused, as foreseeing this would disgit the Sectarits generally; therefore contented himself with the Power Royal, and his old stile of Lord Protector, which the Parliament confirmed. And June the 26th. his Highness was with great state and magnificence installed in his office of Protector in *Westminster-hall*; where the Speaker in the name of the Parliament, presented him with a Robe of Purple-velvet, lined with Ermine, a Sword, a large Bible richly gilt and boſſed, and a Scepter of Gold. And when the Speaker, Earl of *Warwick*, and Sir *Bulstrode Whitlock* had vested *Oliver*, then the Speaker administered the Oath to him in these following words: *I do in the presence and by the name of Almighty God, promise and swear that to the utmost of my power, I will uphold and maintain the true reformed Protestant Religion, in the purity thereof, as it is contained in the Holy Scriptures of the Old and New Testaments, and encourage the Profession and Professors thereof, and that to the utmost of my power, I will endeavor as chief Magistrate of these three Nations, the maintenance and preservation of the Peace and Safety, and just Rights and Privileges of the People thereof, and shall in all things according to my best knowledge and power, govern the People according to Law.* This Oath being taken by him, he was immediately proclaimed Lord Protector of the Commonwealth of *England*, &c. And that done, some Souldiers and others cryed, *God save the Lord Protector*. *Oliver* thus established in his mightiness by Parliament, he falls to fashion his Family after the manner of a Kings Court, hath his Yeomen of the Guard in their Livery of Grey Cloath, welted with black Velvet; over whom commanded *Walter Strickland*; his Lord Keeper was *Nathaniel Fines*; and Lord Chamberlain *Sir Gilbert Pickering*, &c. And the better to strengthen himself at home, and to raise his Family into esteem, he

*Cc 2*

gave

## C H A R L E S II.

gave his eldest Son a Command in the Army , his younger Son he made Lord Deputy of *Ireland*; his two younger Daughters that were not yet disposed of in Marriage, he Matched the elder of them with Mr. *Robert Rich* the Earl of *Warwick's* Grandson , and the youngest with a person of great Honor, the Lord *Falconbridge*. And that he might be as Kinglike as possible, and withal check the Commons in Parliament, he constituted an Upper House of Parliament instead of the House of Lords, 62 in number, most of them his own Creatures ; amongst whom were Colonel *Hewson*, one by trade next kind to a Cobler ; and Colonel *Pride*, formerly a Brewers servant ; who before this had been made two of his Knights errants. And to honor his Mushrooms, he elected to sit in his Upper House some few Noble men, as the Earl of *Warwick*, &c.

February the 20th. The Parliament that had been adjourned, now reassembled ; but because they admitted those Members to sit with them, who at first refused to subscribe to Oliver's Instruments ; and because they questioned the Protectors power in erecting his Upper House, (which in contempt they called *the other House*). Oliver hereupon sent for them to his Upper House Bar, where he made a large Speech to them, and in conclusion told them, That it did concern as well the Peace and Tranquillity of the Nation, as his own interest, to terminate that Parliament , and therefore he did at this time put an end to their sitting, February the 4th.

In, or near the year of our Redemption 1657. a Woman and two Men, (one, or both her Sons) were hang'd in *Gloucestershire* for murthering one Mr. *Harrison*, an Inhabitant in or near *Campden* in the said County, which Mr. *Harrison* (as in some few years after it proved) was not murthered by them or any other. For he returned from beyond Sea, whither he had withdrawn himself privately to avoid some trouble, that otherwise he feared would befall him.

A.D. 1658. This year began with a discovery of a most horrible Plot, as Oliver called it, and indeed

he

## C H A R L E S II.

he had an excellent Art for the discovery of Plots, having his mercenary trepans and instruments of falsehood, who counterfeiting themselves forward Royalists, thereby insinuated themselves into the Council of the Kings friends, and then betrayed them. And the King himself was troubled with one of these false Creatures about his own person; for Captain *Manning*, one of his Secretaries Clerks, was taken in the very act of receiving Letters from *Thurloe*, Oliver's Secretary, for the which he was instantly shot to death. But the Loyal Confederates in the late discovered Plot, were divers of them apprehended, as Dr. *Hewit*, Colonel *Edward Ashton*, Mr. *Mordant*, the Earl of *Peterborough's* Brother, and others, who were indicted of High Treason for endeavoring to levy War against his Highness and the Government, and to promote *Charles Stuart* to the Government of these Nations, and for holding correspondence with the said *Charles Stuart*. Mr. *Mordant* was acquitted ; but Dr. *Hewit* and Sir *Henry Slingsby* were beheaded on *Tower-hill* June the eighth, though many endeavors were used by divers persons of quality, and Ministers, for the saving of their lives, especially the Doctors ; Colonel *Ashton* and others were hang'd and quartered in *London*.

Near about this time there came up the *Thames*, as far as *Greenwich*, a Whale of a very great length and bigness.

June the 25th. the Town of *Dunkirk* was surrendered by the Spaniards to the French, who immediately resigned it to the English Forces, which had been the main instrument in gaining it ; this resignation was made according to former Articles agreed upon between the King of France and the L. Protector of Engl.

But whilst the English were rejoicing abroad, Oliver had occasion of sorrow at home ; for his most dearly beloved Daughter Mrs. *Elizabeth Claypole*, on August the 8th. departed this Life, whose Body was interred in the Royal Chappel at *Westminster*. 'Tis said of this Gentlewoman, that she was much troubled at the harsh usage of the Royal party, and that upon her

knees she beg'd of her Father to save Dr. *Hewit's* life ; but his hard heart would not yield thereto, though he loved this Daughter so passionately, that he never enjoyed himself after her death ; but growing peevish and melancholy, in short time was seized with a Tertian Ague, which ended his life at *White-hall*, on Septem. the 3d. He was born in the Town of *Huntington*, April 25. 1599. and descended from a worshipful Family of the *Cromwells*, alias *Williams* ; his Mother was the Niece of Sir *Robert Steward*, and his Wife *Elizabeth* the Daughter of Sir *James Bourchier* ; he was of a very martial Spirit, and of excellent conduct, and attended with very good success in his attempts. Nor was he a Soldier only, but also a very good Orator and deep Politician ; and so great a Dissembler, that he could shed *Crocodilian* tears at pleasure, when those would at any time advantage him among the Religious ; an high pretender he was to Religion, though, as his actions manifested, it was only thereby to obtain his ambitious ends ; so impiously resolute for the effecting his designs, that he valued not the violation of the most solemn Promises, or sacred Oaths ; nor the shedding of any, though the Blood of the Lords anointed. Yet was this Man courted or feared by most of the Princes in *Europe* ; and the Kings of *France* and *Sweden* were entred into so strict a League with him, as had he lived, might have troubled good part of the world.

In *Oliver's* stead, *Richard Cromwell* his eldest Son, whom he had appointed his Successor, was proclaimed Protector. Shortly after which, several Addresses, protesting both love and obedience to *Richard's* Highness, were presented from the Armies of the three Nations, from the London-Ministers, from divers Counties, Cities, and chief Towns of *England*. And the Foreign Embassadors then in *England* pretended to lament with Mr. *Richard* for the death of his Father ; desired the continuance of that League and Amity which was granted and maintained by his late Highness *Oliver Lord Protector*.

November

November the 23. were the Funerals of *Oliver* solemnized (after his Herse had lain in the greatest State some weeks in *Somerset-House*) at a vast charge, and in greater pomp than had formerly been used for the greatest English Kings ; his Corps had been privately interr'd many days before in the Chapel-Royal of *Henry the Seventh*, at *Westminster*. But the vast expences of those Funerals were never discharged ; but those Tradesmen who had hopes of gaining the most by it, fated down the greatest losers at last. As soon as the Funeral-rites of this old Fox *Oliver* were accomplished, his Son *Richard* proceeded to the carrying on of matters of publick concernment.

The first of which was the sending a Naval supply to the King of *Sweden*, for the aiding him against the King of *Denmark*. The next of any moment was the calling of a Parliament to convene January the 27th. at *Westminster* ; where when they were met, they chose for their Speaker, Mr. *Challoner Chute* ; and the Members severally took the Oath, not to alter the form of Government. Which done, they went to purge out those Members who had born Arms for the King ; then after many debates it was at length resolved, that the House of Commons would transact with the persons of the other House, as a House of Parliament, during the present Parliament : but with this proviso, That it was not intended thereby to exclude such Peers as have been faithful to the Parliament, from their privilege of being summoned to be Members of that House.

Then they took into their consideration, the Cases of divers persons who had been imprisoned in the time of *Oliver* ; Major General *Overton*, and other of the Commonwealth party they released. The Duke of *Buckingham* was also freed out of *Windsor-Castle*, upon his Father-in-law the Lord *Fairfax's* giving 20000*l.* security, that he should not seek by any means to promote the interest of *Charles Stuart*. Next, after long and tedious debates, they yielded that the Members, who had been returned to serve for *Scotland* and

C c 4

*Ireland*,

*Ireland*, should continue to sit amongst them as Members for that present Parliament. They likewise proceeded to draw up a Bill, which should be entitled, An Act of Recognition of his Highness's right and title to be Protector, and chief Magistrate of the Commonwealth of *England*, &c. But this was never perfected.

A.D. 1659. The Army now grew jealous of his Highness, complaining of his company that he kept; how that divers of them were no better than Cavaliers; censuring his Religion also; giving out, that Godliness was discouraged by him; that he had rather favor those of loose principles, than the zealous professors of the Gospel.

April the 6th. General *Charles Fleetwood* presented the Protector a Representation from the Officers of the Army, wherein they complained, That they who had born the brunt of the War, were now despised, and like to be laid aside; That the Cavaliers held dangerous meetings in and about *London*; That lists of the names of such who were the Tryers of the old King, were Printed in red Letters, and scattered about as if they were men appointed for destruction: That the famous actions of the long Parliament and his late Highness, in and since 1644, were traduced and vilified. Therefore they desired that his Highness would be pleased to represent these things to the Parliament, and procure their remedies. The Army also began to grow jealous of the Parliament, as if they were too favorable to the Royal party, and joyned with the Protector to bring the Officers of the Army into subjection. Thereupon the General Council of Officers held many meetings and consultations, which the Parliament hearing of, Voted that there should be no meeting nor General Council of Officers, without consent and by order of his Highness the Lord Protector: And that no person should have any command in the Army, who should refuse to subscribe that he will not disturb the free meetings in Parliament, or their freedom in their debates and counsels.

These

These Votes the Protector sent to the Officers of the Army, which they valued not at all, but on the contrary resolved, that the Parliament should be dissolved. And in order thereunto, *Desborough* with other chief Officers, went to the Protector and forced him to sign a Commission for the Parliaments dissolution; and accordingly the Parliament was dissolved. Which being effected, their next work was to put a period to the Protectors power, by restoring that remnant of the Long Parliament which his Father had turned out; to which end the Officers of the Army invited those Members of Parliament, who continued sitting till April the 20th, 1653, and promised them that they would be ready in their places to yield them their utmost assistance, that they might sit and act in safety. These Members accepted their invitation, and accordingly took their places in the Parliament May the seventh; and upon notice that these were again housed, divers of those that were secluded in 1648, attempted to have taken their places, but were repulsed.

Then these Members caused the Protectors Great Seal to be broken, and voted their own old Seal up again. Then sent to the Protector for an acknowledgment from him of his submission to their Government; and accordingly on May the 25th, he made his resignation and submission; declaring in writing, That though in respect to the particular Engagements that lay upon him, he could not be active in making a Change in the Government of these Nations; yet through the goodness of God, he would freely acquiesce in its being made; and that he held himself ingaged, as (with other Men,) he expected protection from the present Government, so to demean himself with all peaceableness under it; and to procure to the utmost of his power, that all in whom he had interest should do the same. In short time after this, *Henry Cromwel* came over, and yielded up the Lieutenancy of *Ireland* unto the Members sitting at *Westminster*; who appointed five Commissioners for the Government of that Kingdom.

dom. General *Monk* in *Scotland* conformed himself to their directions; and Colonel *Lockhart*, Governor of *Dunkirk*, likewise submitted to their Authority.

Then this *Junto* commanded all such as had been in Arms for the King, to depart 20 miles from *London*; passed an Act for settling of the Militia in the respective Counties of *England & Wales*. Ordered a whole years Assesment at 35000*l.* a month on *England*, 6000*l.* the month on *Scotland*, and 9000*l.* on *Ireland*, to be paid into the Treasury before the eleventh of *August* next following. Ordered the immediate Sale of *White-hall*, *Hampton-Court*, and *Somerset-House*, towards payment of the Armies Arrears. To their *quondam* Protector they were so friendly, as to protect him from all Arrests; and withal to promise the payment of all his debts (for his Fathers Funeral and other occasions,) which amounted to 29640*l.* but this they never performed.

The while these things were in agitation, the Kings Friends were very busie in promoting his interest, by engaging as many as they could for his Service, in all places of *England*; and so successful were the Kings Commissioners, that great part of the Nobility and Gentry of *England* and *Wales*, were interested by them in the Kings Quarrel; and a day was fixed in *July* for their Appearing in Arms; the first rising was to be chiefly of such as had never engaged on the Kings side in the late Wars, thereby to draw the Army unto a more faint opposition. Sir *George Booth*, Sir *Thomas Middleton*, and some other of the old Parliamentarians, raised a Party in *Cheshire*, *Flintshire*, and *Lancashire*, to the number of about three or four thousand Men; who declared for a free Parliament, & the due Rights & Priviledges of the Nation, against that *Fanatic* and unlawful power, which now usurped Dominion over them. But Maj. General *Lambert* marching speedily against them, and encountring them, his old Souldiers without much Bloodshed totally routed them near unto *Nantwich*. Aug. the 17, Col. *Charl. White* raised a small Party in *Nottingham* and *Derby-shires*; other inconsiderable Parties

ties were raised in other parts; but dispersed themselves again; for the Rulers at *Westminster*, having met with some hint of this designed Rising, had so ordered their Standing-Army and Militia-Forces in most places of the Land, that no considerable Parties of the Kings Friends could have opportunity to get into a Body.

*James Naylor* a Quaker, was now discharged from his Imprisonment, September the 8th. This Fellow in the time of *Olivers Protectorship*, was for Blasphemy whipt both at *Bristol* and *London*, then Pillored at the *Royal-Exchange*, burnt through the Tongue, stigmatized in the Forehead with the Letter *B.* (for Blasphemy,) which done, was committed to *Bridewell*, where he remained till this time, and longer might, had not *Lambert* been now in so high esteem.

After the defeat of Sir *George Booths* Forces, the Members at *Westminster* prepared an Act for sequestring of the Estates of such Persons as were engaged in this Rising; and in token of their Favor and Gratitude, they order'd *Lambert* a Thousand Pound for his good Service, which he presently distributed amongst his Souldiers, thereby to engage them the more firmly to his Designs: For though himself and other Grandees of the Army carried fair with the *Junto*, yet were they not well pleased with them, because, since their last sitting they had somewhat lessened the Armies power, in giving order to their Speaker *Willian Lenthall*, to issue out Commissions for Commanders, which had been done afore by the General, and had withal reserved the chief command of the Army to themselves, without any Captain General. Therefore, now whilst they were flustered with their late Victory, they drew up their Propositions to be presented to the Parliament, which they Entituled, *The humble Petition and Proposal of the Army under the Right Honorable the Lord Lambert, in the late Northern expedition*; therein desiring that the Army might be commanded by *Fleetwood* as chief General, by *Lambert* as the next Superior General, &c. This was sent up to *London* from *Lamberts* Army, to be presented to the Parliament. But Sir *Arthur Haselrig*

*Hastelrig* being made acquainted with it before it was delivered, immediately informed his Fellow-Members thereof, alledging that it was a matter of dangerous consequence. The Junto hereupon passed a Vote, That the having of more General Officers was a thing needless, chargeable and dangerous. But the Army-Officers of *Lamberts* Party still prosecuting their intentions of gaining the whole ordering of the Army into their own hands, the Junto thereupon passed this Act, That it should be Treason in all Persons whatsoever, to raise, levy, or collect Moneys without consent of Parliament; designing hereby to bring the Army into subjection, because otherwise they could have no maintenance; they likewise ordered, That *Lambert*, *Desbrough*, *Kelsey*, *Berry*, *Ashfield*, *Cobbet*, *Packer*, *Barrow* and *Creed*, should be discommissionated, and that others should enjoy their commands. They also ordered the Government of the Army to be in seven Commissioners in whom the Power should joyntly reside; these were *Fleetwood*, *Monk*, *Ludlow*, *Walton*, *Morley*, *Overton*, and *Hastelrig*. But *Lambert* and his Complices were resolved to try a tug with the Junto who should be Masters; and to that end they engaged divers Companies and Regiments about *London* to side with them; and the Junto drew two Regiments to *Westminster* to take part with them; but when these two Parties had stood at *Westminster* in a hostile sort, almost a whole day, facing each other, and sometimes ready to fall to it in good earnest; towards the Evening the two Parties fairly agreed to draw off to their respective Quarters. And the next day, and forward, *Lambert* took care to guard the Parliament-doors, that none of the Members might enter into the House. And now the Junto being once more laid aside, *Lamberts* Party made choice of Lieutenant General *Fleetwood* to be Captain General of the Army; *Lambert* (who tis thought aspired to Sovereignty,) to be Major General, and *Desbrough* to be Commissary General. They framed likewise a new Government, on October the 26th, nominating twenty three Persons to have the management

ment of public Affairs, whom they would have to be called a Committee of Safety. Their names were *Bulstrode*, *Whitelock*, *Edmund Ludlow*, *Sir Henry Vane*, *Sir James Harrington*, *Sir Archibald Johnson*, General *Fleetwood*, General *John Lambert*, Colonel *Desbrough*, Colonel *Sidenham*, Major *Saloway*, Colonel *Berry*, Mr. *Lawrence*, Colonel *Thompson*, Colonel *Hewson*, Colonel *Lilbourn*, John *Ireton* Lord Mayor, Alderman *Robert Tichburn*, *Walter Strickland*, *Cornelius Holland*, *William Steel*, Clerk, *Bennet*, *Brandrith*. Thus was miserable England subjected to the Arbitrary power of an Army, to have what Lords and Laws they pleased. But the time of its liberty approached, the principal Instrument whereof was General *George Monk*, who pretending to a Re-settlement of the Junto, and not to be able to see the Nation so enslaved by *Lambert* and his factious Party, drew his Army out of *Scotland*, having first changed some of his Officers. The Committee of Safety exceedingly courted this General to comply with them, and when that would not do, *Lambert* drew his Army into the North, with design to impede General *Monks* march to *London*, but all their projects availed nothing with the General. And to help forward his Majesties interest, and the Nations deliverance, the City of *London* grew very discontented and surly against the Army; the Fleet, that declared for the Junto; likewise many of *Lamberts* Party withdrew themselves from him, and the Country in general was full of Discontents and Murmurings; insomuch that the Committee of Safety perceived themselves to be in a very unsafe and kind of desolate condition; and therefore with great submission they sent for the Speaker, desiring him with the rest of his Fellow-Members, to return to the exercise of their trust; which accordingly they did on December the 26th, and Colonel *Lambert* finding that all now went bad on his side, privately slipt away from his Soulđiers (then about *Newcastle* upon *Tyne*,) and they returned to their obedience to the Junto; who upon their Re-settlement, Dis-commissionated *Lambert*, with divers Colonels and Commanders of the Army; published

lished a Declaration for a Common-wealth, without a single Person, or House of Lords, for preservation of the Laws, upholding of the Ministry, the University and Tythes (all which had lately been in great danger,) for maintaining liberty of Conscience. General Monk in the mean time advanced with his new modelled Army towards *London*, all the way being caressed by the Gentry of the several Counties as he passed along, with all testimonies of Affection, and Petition for the restoring of the secluded Members, and procuring of a free Parliament. Commissioners were sent to him from the City of *London*, with the like request for a free Parliament; but the General wisely concealed his Inclinations and Intentions, pretending strong resolutions to be faithful to those Members sitting at *Westminster*; and yet carried himself with so much evenness, that the City and Country had hopes he would stand their Friend, as the Junto could see but little cause to misdoubt his real good meaning towards them; howbeit, to make him the surer on their side, they ordered him and his Heirs a 1000*l.* per annum.

February the third, General Monk came to *London* with his Army he had drawn out of *Scotland*; the Army which had been quartered there, having marched out the night before by the Junto's command, though not without discontent, and some disorder and mutiny: The next day his Excellency was conducted to the Parliament House, where he received thanks from the Members for his good Service; after which he acquainted them with the numerous Addresses he had received from the Counties for the admission of the secluded Members, and a Free Parliament; minding them also of the danger themselves and Nation would be in, if the Fanatic Party should be continued in Civil or Military power. But the Generals Speech was not well liked of by Mr. *Thomas Scot*, and some other of the Members. And the City of *London*, with whom they thought his Excellency too gracious, gave them greater cause of discontent; for the Common Council was now resolved to pay no more Taxes, till such

such time that the House was filled up with equal Representatives. Hereupon the Junto resolved to punish the City; and to make the General instrument in it, ordering him to seize upon eleven of the most active of the Common Council, and commit them to the Tower, and also to pull down, and break the Posts, Chains, Gates, and Portcullices of the City; which he put in execution accordingly, on February the 9th, though not with any pleasure to himself, but of necessity, that so the House might not take any occasion, from his disputing their commands, to vacate his Commission, and put him out of capacity to accomplish the blessed End he designed. Howbeit, This Action of the Generals did exceedingly amuse the Loyal-hearted Citizens, and other good Subjects, and made them almost quite to give over the good Hopes they had formerly had of him: But his Excellency, to put them out of all doubt concerning his Intentions, bravely resolved to put an end to the Junto's power. And in order thereto, the very next Morning he sent a Letter to the House, therein complaining, that they gave too much countenance to *Lambert*, *Vane*, and several others that engaged with the late Committee of Safety; that they had too much favored a Petition lately delivered by one *Praisegod Barebone*, and other Fanatics; and then concludes with a prefixed day, before which they should issue out Writs for a new Parliament, that so they might terminate their sitting, and come to a dissolution. The Junto received the Generals Letter, dissemble their Resentment of it, and order him the Thanks of the House, for his faithful Service in securing the City; yet the very same day, that they might limit his power, they past an Act for the government of the Army by five Commissioners, he to be one of them, the other their own Creatures, namely, Sir *Arthur Haselrig*, Colonel *Morley*, Colonel *Walton*, and Colonel *Allured*. The General hearing hereof, with all convenient speed drew his Army together, and marched to *Westminster*, where he gave the secluded Members re-admission into the Parlia-

Parliament House, February the 21st, to the great grief of the Rump-Parliament, (for so the *Junto* was now called in scorn and contempt,) and to the exceeding joy both of the City and Country. And now the Parliament vote General Monk to be Captain General of all the Forces in the three Nations; constitute a new Council of State; set at liberty Sir George Booth, and such of his Party as were Prisoners, also all such as had been imprisoned for Petitioning for a Free Parliament; as Sir Robert Pye, Major Fincher, &c. caused the Rump Militia, consisting most of Sectaries, to be disbanded; made such Acts as might the best conduce to the settlement of the Nation; as, for the taking away all Places of Trust and Power out of the hands of the Sectarian Party; also voted a Full and Free Parliament to be chosen, and sit at Westminster April the 25. This Parliament was called Free, yet, (as in all the Protectors Parliaments) no Loyalists that had been in actual Arms for the King, was capable of being elected for a Parliament Man.

March the 17th, The long Parliament dissolved themselves, leaving a Council of State to govern till the next Parliament should Assemble. But in the interim, that the Parliament was busied for the recovering the Peace and Freedom of the Nation, some Malecontents were very active for sowing the Seeds of Division in the Army, especially in that part which had been for the Committee of Safety; yet by the care and prudence of General Monk (who displaced most of the Fanatic Officers,) their Designs were frustrated. Lambert, after the dissolution of the Parliament, attempted to involve the Nation again in a Civil War; but Colonel Richard Ingoldsby dispersed his small force, and took him Prisoner.

A.D. 1660. April the 20th, The Free Parliament Assembled at Westminster, on May the first, voted, That according to the ancient and fundamental Laws of this Kingdom, Charles the Second is the lawful and undoubted King of these Nations. Transcendent was the joy all over England, which issued from this good

good News. His Majesty from his Court then at Breda, had sent his Letters to both Houses of Parliament to General Monk, and to the City; to Admiral Montague, and the Officers of the Fleet, with also a Declaration to all his loving Subjects, the substance whereof was, That he did grant a free and general Pardon to all his Subjects that should within forty days lay hold upon his grace and favor, excepting such Persons as should be excepted by Parliament. That he would shew all possible Indulgence to tender Consciences. And such as differ in matter of Religion; so they did not disturb the Peace of the Kingdom, that he would preserve them free from injury in their Lives and Estates; and that all things relating to Sales and Purchases (for there had been more Lands bought and sold in the late usurping Times, than what the right owners (Loyal Subjects) had consented to,) should be determined in Parliament: That he would take care for the Arrears of the Souldiery; under the command of General Monk, and that they should be received into his Service, upon as good pay and conditions as at that present they enjoyed. The Parliament considering that his Majesty had for many Years been deprived of his Revenues, and therefore could not but be in want of Money, they therefore ordered that the sum of 50000 l. should be sent him for a Present; 10000 l. to the Duke of York, and 5000 l. to the Duke of Gloucester. The City of London likewise to testify their gratitude to his Majesty, sent him 10000 l. and to his two Brothers a 1000 l. a piece, and 300 l. they presented to the Lord Mordint, and Sir John Greenvil, who brought them his Majesties Letters, to buy each of them a Ring; and the Parliament for the same Reason gave 500 l. to Sir John Greenvil, to purchase a Jewel.

May the 8th, by order of Parliament, Charles the Second was at London, with very great Solemnity proclaimed, *The most Potent, Mighty and undoubted King of England, Scotland, &c.* at which time the Acclama-

tions of the People were wonderful great, and their Joys such, that they could not find ways to express them.

*May the 22d,* His Excellency General *Monk* set forth of *London* in order to meet His Majesty; and *May the 23d*, His Majesty with his Brothers set sail for *England* from the *Hague*, and on Friday landed at *Dover*, where the loyal General received the King. About two miles from *Dover* his Majesty forsook his Coach, and took Horse, his Brothers riding on his right hand, and the General on his left; after whom the Duke of *Buckingham*, and many other Noblemen and Gentlemen followed in gallant Equipage. For the excellent Service that General *Monk* had done for the King and his Kingdoms, his Majesty was pleased to dignifie him with the honor of being Knight of the Garter, Master of his Horse, Duke of *Albemarle*, Earl of *Torrington*, Baron *Monk* of *Potheridge*, &c. Chief General of all his Land-forces in the three Kingdoms, and one of his Privy Council.

*May the 29th,* His Majesty made his Triumphal *Cavalcade* through the City of *London*, whither he was welcomed with all the expressions of Joy possible. And being come to *White-hall*, he there in his Presence-Chamber offered the Sacrifice of Peace and Thanksgiving unto Almighty God for his wonderful Restauration. Then applied himself to the ordering of his Court, and appointed the chief Officers of State; His Highness *James* Duke of *York*, he invested with the Office of Lord High Admiral. Sir *Edward Hide* (whose Daughter the Duke of *York* married,) he constituted Lord Chancellor. The Earl of *Manchester* Lord Chamberlain. The Lord *Wrothley*, Earl of *Southampton*, Lord High Treasurer. Sir *Edward Nicholas*, and Sir *William Morrice*, chief Secretaries of State, &c. And others who had been constantly Loyal to him, or had performed any eminent good Service for him, he advanced to Places of high Trust and Dignity in the Court and Common-wealth. But because the Persons were numerous that had in an extraordinary sort

been

been serviceable in promoting the Kings interest, and his Majesty had no other way to express at present his gracious acceptance thereof to many of them; he therefore honored their Name and Family, by conferring on them according to their Merit the Titles of Duke, Earl, Viscount, Baron, Knight.

*June the 6th,* The Parliament set forth a Proclamation, wherein it was declared, That all such of the late Kings Judges as would not render themselves within so many days to their Mercy, should be excepted out of the General Pardon then preparing; whereupon 20 of the *Regicides* came out of their coverts, and presenting themselves to the Speaker of the House of Commons, were committed to custody. In *August* following, the long expected Act of Indempnity was passed, by which all that had been any way's engaged against the King were pardoned, save the *Regicides* and a very few others; and amongst those there were three who were freed in respect of Life, Liberty and Estate, because they had given evident signs of their hearty sorrow for that crying sin. It was also Enacted, That the 30th of *January* should to all Posterities be observed a day of Humiliation for that great wickedness of murthering Gods Vicegerent the King. Also, that *May the 29th*, should in all succeeding Ages be observed a day of Thanksgiving for the Kings peaceable Restauration, to the actual possession and exercisè of his Legal Authority over his Subjects. An Act for Pole-money was likewise passed, and an Act for enabling Souldiers of the Army to exercise Trades in any Corporacion, that thereby they might be in a capacity of living honestly and comfortably after their disbanding.

*September the 13th,* That hopeful Prince *Henry* Duke of *Gloucester* departed this life; and on the same day the Parliament was adjourned to the 6th of *November* following.

In *October* Maj. General *Harrison*, Mr. *John Carew*, and other of the *Regicides*, were Arraigned at the *Old-Bayly* in *London*, where they were all found guilty and condemned

condemned to die the death due to Traytors. Of the *Regicides* now condemned, were hang'd and quartered at Charing-Cross, *Harrison, Carew, Cook, Peters, Scot, Scroop, Jones and Clement*; and at Tyburn *Hacker* was hang'd; and *Axtel*, a busie promoter of the Kings death was hang'd and quartered. All, save *Hugh Peters*, died very resolutely. The Persons whose names follow, had the favor to be reprieved after Condemnation, because they delivered themselves to the Parliaments mercy upon their Proclamation, *Hardres Waller, Wait, Tichburn, Marten, Pennington, Row, Holland, Downs, Garland, Temple, Millington, Heveningham, Lilburn, Fleetwood, Smith, Meyn, and Hulet*. This last was accused to be one of those two which in a Frock and Vizard assisted in the horrid execution of the King; but because the evidence against him seemed to the Judges not sufficiently clear, he had his reprieve.

December the 24th, *Mary the Princess of Orange* died at *Whitehall*, and on the 29th of the same month was buried at *Westminster*, and the Parliament on the same day dissolved. At the dissolution whereof, the King gave his Royal consent to these Acts, amongst many others, *viz.* An Act for granting to the Kings Majesty 40000 l. per mensēm, for six months, for disbanding the Army, and paying the Navy. And an Act of Attainder, which was made to attaint the Judges and other Actors in the murther of the late King; *Crommel, Ireton, Bradshaw, Pride*, and all the rest of the *Regicides* deceased, are adjudged to be convicted, and attainted of High Treason to all intents and purposes, as if they and every of them respectively had been attainted in their lifetime. And all Persons fled for that Treason, that is to say, *John Lisle, William Say, John Berkstead, Valentine Walton, Edward Whaley, Edmund Ludlow, Sir Michael Levesey, John Okey, John Henderson, William Goff, Thomas Challoner, William Cavell, Miles Corbet, Nicholas Loxo, John Dixwell, Daniel Blagrave, Andrew Broughton, Edward Dendy*, and every of them, stand and be adjudged, convicted of High Treason, &c.

After

After his Majesty had given his Royal Assent to the Acts presented him, he made a Speech to both Houses, wherein he used these memorable expressions, That this Parliament should be called to all posterity, the healing and the blessed Parliament; and that it should be a rule to his Actions, and his Councils to consider, What is a Parliament like to think of this Action or this Council.

In the beginning of January following, whilst his Majesty was accompanying his Royal Mother and Sister *Henrietta Maria*, part of their Journey to *France*, an inconsiderable number of the fifth Monarchists raised a great disturbance in *London*, killing some of the City-watch, and two nights with great desperation opposing the Trained-bands and other force, till at length divers of them being wounded, and others slain, the rest that could, made their escape. And in a few days after, was Captain *Vennor*, and twelve more of them, executed in *Coleman-street* over against their Meeting-house, and other parts of *London*.

January the 30th, were the dead Bodies of those infamous *Traytors, Crommel, Ireton, Bradshaw*, (all buried at *Westminster*,) taken out of their Coffins, and drawn upon Hurdles to *Tyburn*; they were hang'd by the neck for some hours, then had their heads chopt off, which were perched upon *Westminster-hall*; and their Bodies thrown into a hole under the Gallows.

This Year of Jubilee were the Lands of the Kings Loyal Subjects restored to them that had been unjustly taken from them by the late Usurper; the Bishops, Deans, and Chapters Lands were likewise restored to the use of these Churchmen.

A.D. 1661. The entrance of this Year was made famous by the magnificent Coronation of K. Charles the Second. In preparation unto which, his Majesty created 6 Earls, 6 Barons, 68 Knights of the Bath; and on the 22d of April, he made his Cavalcade from the Tower through *London* to *Westminster*, against which time 4 magnificent triumphal Arches had been erected by the City (as their Charter obligeth them) for his Majesty to pass through. D d 3 The

The first of which was placed in Leaden-hall-street, representing his Majesties happy arrival in England; the second was near the Royal-Exchange, being a Naval representation; the third in Cheapside, representing the Temple of Concord; the fourth in Fleetstreet, representing the Garden of Plenty. April the 23d. was the day of his Majestie's Coronation, when he disposed of the *Regalia* unto the Noblemen hereafter mentioned, to be carried by them from Westminster-Hall to the Abby Church.

Saint Edwards Staff to the Vice-Admiral Mountague Earl of Sandwich. The Spurs to the Earl of Pembroke. The Scepter with the Cross to the Earl of Bedford. The pointed Sword (born on the left hand of Curteyn,) to the Earl of Darby. The pointed Sword (born on the right hand of Curteyn,) to the Earl of Shrewsbury. King Edward the Saints Sword, called Curteyn, to the Earl of Oxford. The Sword of State to the Earl of Manchester. The Scepter with the Dove to the Duke of Albemarle. The Orb with the Cross to the Duke of Buckingham. Saint Edwards Crown to the Duke of Ormond. Paten to the Bishop of Exeter, and Chalice to the Bishop of London.

Then the King with his Nobles, Officers and Attendants made their proceeding, upon blew Cloath spread on the ground from Westminster-Hall to the Abby Church, whither his Majesty being come, he was received with this Anthem, *I was glad when they said unto me, We will go into the House of the Lord,* &c. Psal. 122. 1, 4, 5, 6. verses. Then after some Ceremonies this Anthem was sung by the Gentlemen of the Kings Chapel, *Let thy hand be strengthned, and thy right hand be exalted. Let Justice and Judgment be the preparation of thy Seat, and Mercy and Truth go before thy Face.* Then after that the King had offered the Pall, and a Wedge of Gold of a pound weight at the Altar, and that the *Regalia* were laid thereon, the Bishop of London said this Prayer. *O God, which dost visit those that are humble, and dost comfort us with thy Holy Spirit, send down thy Grace upon this thy Servant Charles,* that

*that by him we may feel thy Presence amongst us, through Jesus Christ. Amen.*

This done, the Bishop of Worcester began his Sermon on these words, *For the Transgressions of a Land many are the Princes thereof, but by a Man of understanding and knowledge the State thereof shall be prolonged,* Prov. 28. 2. And during the Sermon his Majesty wore a Cap of Crimson Velvet turned up with Ermines. Sermon being ended, the King uncovered his head, and took the usual Oath, *To confirm the Laws to the People, and namely the Franchises granted to the Clergy by Saint Edward the Confessor, To maintain the Gospel established in the Kingdom, To keep Peace, execute Justice, and grant the Commons the rightful Customs.*

Then followed this Hymn, *Come Holy Ghost, Eternal God, &c.* a Prayer for the King and the Litany; which being finished, and his Majesty seated in the Coronation Chair, the Arch-Bishop of Canterbury Anointed him, first in the Palms of his Hands in manner of a Cross, pronouncing these words, *Let these Hands be Anointed with holy Oyl, as Kings and Prophets have been Anointed, and as Samuel did Anoint David to be King, That thou mayest be blessed and established King in this Kingdom, and among this People, whom the Lord thy God hath given thee to rule over.*

After which the Quire sung this Anthem, *Sadoc the Priest, and Nathan the Prophet anointed Solomon King, and all the People rejoiced and said, God save the King.*

At the end of which Anthem the Arch-Bishop said, *Look down, Almighty God, with thy favorable Countenance upon this glorious King, &c.* And then proceeded to Anoint the Kings Breast, between his Shoulders, on both his Shoulders, the bowing of his Arms, and Crown of his Head, which being done, the Anointing was dried up with fine Linnen, and two short Prayers followed. Then the Dean of Westminster put on the *Colobium Sindonis* or Surplice upon the King, whereupon the Arch-Bishop prayed, saying, *O God, the King of Kings, and Lord of Lords, by whom Kings do Reign, and Law-givers do make good Laws,* D d 4 *vouch-*

vouchsafe we beseech thee in thy favor to bless this Kingly Ornament, and grant that thy Servant Charles our King, who shall wear it, may shine in thy sight with the Ornament of a good Life, and holy Actions, and after this Life ended, he may for ever enjoy that Life and Glory which hath no end, through Christ our Lord. Amen.

This said, the *Tissie Hose*, *Sandals*, and *Super-Tunica* were put upon the King, then the *Sword of State* was received by the Arch-Bishop from the Lord Chamberlain, Earl of Manchester, and laid upon the Altar, and a Prayer made, That it might be sanctified to protect and defend Churches, Widows, Orphans, and all the Servants of God; and that it might be a fear and terror to all those that lie in wait to do mischief.

The Prayer ended, the Arch-Bishop and Bishops delivered the *Sword* to the King, saying, *Accipe Gladium per manus Episcoporum*, whereupon the Lord Chamberlain girt it about the King, and the Arch-Bishop said, *Receive this Kingly Sword, which is hallowed for the defence of holy Church, and delivered unto thee by the hands of the Bishops, though unworthy, yet consecrated by the Authority of the holy Apostles, &c.*

Then successively the *Armill* and *Mantle* were put upon the King, *Saint Edwards Crown* upon his Head, a Ring upon the fourth Finger of his right Hand, into each hand a *Scepter*, all which were severally consecrated by the Arch-Bishop, as the *Colebe*, *Sindonis*, and *Sword of State* had been.

Then the Arch-Bishop, and Bishops present did their Homage to the King, kneeling down before his Knees, and promising to be faithful to him and his Heirs Kings of England, which said, they kissed the Kings left Cheek.

After them the Temporal Nobility did their Homage also at the Kings Knees, in these words, *I G. M. do become your Lieberman of Life and Limb and of earthly Worship, and of Faith and Truth I shall bear unto you, to live and die against all manner of Folks, So God me help.* Which said, they singly ascended the Throne, and touched the Kings Crown, promising by that Ceremony, to be ready to support it with all their power. Then

Then the King went to the Altar, there presented another Wedge of Gold, received the Sacrament, after which an Anthem was sung, and the King put off *Saint Edward's Crown*, and had the Imperial Crown set upon his Head, the Scepter with the Cross put into his right Hand, and Globe into his left, immediately going back to *Westminster-hall*, where himself and Nobles feasted.

May the 8th. According to his Majesties summons, the Parliament met at *Westminster*, and elected Sir Edward Turner for their Speaker.

May the twentieth, by order of Parliament was the Scots Solemn League and Covenant, that had been imposed on the Kings Subjects without his consent, burnt in *London* by the hand of the common Hangman. May the 27th. James Marques of Argile for his former disloyal and treasonable practices, was beheaded at the City of *Edinburgh* in *Scotland*.

November the 26th. John James a Fifthmonarchist, was drawn, hang'd and quartered at *London*, for speaking treasonable words.

January the 27th. the Lord Mountjoy, Sir Henry Mildmay, and Mr. Wallop, three instruments in procuring the death of the late King, were shamefully drawn upon *Hurdles* from *Newgate* to *Tyburn*, and from thence back again.

February the eighth hapned a most violent Wind, the like to which had not been known in the memory of any then living; it did very much harm in many parts of the Nation, by tearing up of Fruit and Timber-trees, and ruining Houses. This year the Book of Common-Prayer was restored to the Church, and confirmed by Act of Parliament.

February the 13th. Elizabeth Queen of Bohemia, the Kings Aunt, departed this life at *London*.

A. D. 1662. and April the 19th. three of the Regicides, namely Berkstead, Okey and Corbet, (taken in *Holland*) were drawn upon *Hurdles* from the *Tower* to *Tyburn*, and there hang'd and quartered.

## C H A R L E S II.

*May the 14th.* Katherine the Infanta of Portugal, Daughter of John the IV. King of Portugal, and Sister of Alphons the IV. arrived at Portsmouth, where she was married to Charles the II. King of England, Scotland, &c.

*May the 19th.* at the Prorogation of the Parliament was the Bill for Hearth-money signed.

In the beginning of June was Sir Henry Vane, and Lambert, tryed at the Kings Bench Bar, for formerly disturbing the Peace of the Nation, &c. and were found guilty of Treason, and condemned; and on June the 14<sup>th</sup>. was Sir Henry Vane beheaded on Tower-hill; but through his Majesties Clemency, Lambert had his life respited: On St. Bartholomew Day did many Ecclesiastical persons relinquish their Benefices, rather than conform to the Church-discipline; and declare their unfeigned assent and consent to all and every thing contained and prescribed in and by the Book of Common-Prayer: and subscribe the following acknowledgment, viz. "I do declare, that it is not lawful upon any pretence whatsoever, to take Arms against the King; and that I do abhor that Traiterous position of taking Arms by his Authority against his Person, or against those that are Commissionated by him, &c. That I will conform to the Liturgy of the Church of England, as it is now established by Law. And I do declare, that I hold there lies no obligation on me, or any other person, from the Oath, commonly called the solemn League and Covenant, to endeavor any change and alteration of Government, either in Church or State, and that the same was in it self an unlawful Oath, and imposed upon the Subjects of this Kingdom against the known Laws and Liberties thereof.

*December the 23d.* were executed at Tyburn four discontented Sectarists for complotting to disturb the Peace of the Nation, viz. Thomas Tongue, George Philips, Nathaniel Gibbs, and Francis Stubbs.

*A. D. 1663.* and *May the 31st.* died that reverent Prelate Dr. Juxon Archbishop of Canterbury: into whose See the Learned Dr. Sheldon, Bishop of London, was Translated.

*A. D.*

## C H A R L E S II.

*A. D. 1664.* Numerous complaints being made unto the Parliament of the many injuries and depredations done by the Dutch to the English Nation; they freely declared that they would with their lives and fortunes assist his Majesty to the redressing of his Subjects wrongs, and to the curbing again of that ungrateful people. In order to which, great preparations were made to furnish out a gallant Fleet, and War was proclaimed against the United Netherlands. And that nothing might be wanting to further this great undertaking, the House of Commons Voted his Majesty a supply of Two Millions five hundred thousand pounds to be raised in three Years time. And to hasten the Naval preparations, the City of London lent his Majesty 100000l.

*December the 24th.* a Blazing Star appeared, and two others shortly after darted down their malign influences upon London, and other places in England.

*March the 7th.* the London Frigat, as she was coming up to Lee, was fired; to supply which loss the City of London speedily built another; this his Majesty was pleased to name the *Loyal London*.

*A. D. 1665.* and in the Month of May began that transcending Plague in London, whereof died in little more than a years space, near 100000 persons; many other places of England were sorely visited at this time with that dreadful Judgment of God, the Pestilence.

*June the 3d.* was that eminent Victory obtained upon the Dutch Fleet, when twenty two of their Ships were taken by the English, and about 8000 of their Men taken and killed, and their Admiral Opdam was sunk, together with his Ship. The English lost in this Fight the Earl of Falmouth, and that excellent Sea-Captain Sir John Lawson received his mortal wound therein.

*October the 3d.* the Parliament met at Oxford, by reason of the infection at London.

*A. D. 1666.* and in the Month of June, was the second great Fight betwixt his Majesties Naval Forces and the Dutch, which took up part of the 1, 2, 3, and 4. days

4 days of the said Month. July the 2d. was the third great Fight, wherein the Duke of Albemarle through the great number of his enemies Ships, was very hardly task'd, till Prince Rupert with a Squadron came in to his aid unlooked for; but then the Dutch were soon sent home. In this War the Dutch were assist'd by the French.

Upon the second of September, about two of the Clock in the Morning, began that dreadful Fire in London, which lasted till Thursday following, the 6th. of the same Month: It began in the House of one Fariner a Baker in Pudding-Lane near the Bridge, and spread it self in length(besides breadth) from the Tower of London to St. Dunstan's Church near Temple-bar, in Fleetstreet; by which, according to the computation of Surveyors, were consumed 373 Acres of Building, within the Walls of London, and 63 Acres 3 Rods without the Walls; 87 Parish-Churches, 6 Consecrated Chapels, the Royal Exchange, the Guild-Hall of the City, with many stately Halls belonging to several Companies; and according to the best account, Thirteen thousand two hundred Houses. The total of the loss sustained by these devouring Flames, was valued to be Nine millions and nine hundred thousand pounds Sterling. That the hand of God (for the punishment of the sins of this City and Nation) was visible in this Fire, no man will deny; but whether carelessness or design, were the immediate occasions of it is variously believed and discoursed of. As it happened in the time of a War with the French and Dutch, so many at that time did conclude it to be a treacherous Act of the former of these people; especially seeing one Hubert a crazy-brain'd melancholick French man confessed he did the Fact, by putting a Fireball into the House of the Baker, where it began; and was therefore hang'd at Tyburn. But of late one Mr. Oats, of whom more particular mention shall be made hereafter, lays the guilt of this merciless Action on a knot of Jesuits, Friars, and Irishmen, in all to the number of 80, or thereabouts; who having laid the project long before, could

could not conveniently put it in execution till this unlucky time.

This fatal accident, the fore-runner of many more of the same kind, that happened in his Majesties Dominions afterwards, gave the King a sad opportunity of exercising his compassion and care towards many distressed and distracted Families, who then lodged in the open Fields, under the Canopy of Heaven: His Majesty therefore not only issued out Proclamations to Justices of the Peace for causing Provisions to be sent into the Markets, and ordered his Sea-stores to be opened for a present supply of Bread in Ship-basket; but likewise passed a Declaration for preventing such lamentable Accidents for the future, that none should offer to re-build until necessary measures were appointed for rendring the new Structures more secure and lasting.

The Parliament met on the 18th. of September, and having given the King supplies for the carrying on of the War, passed an Act for establishing a Judicature, to take Cognisance of, and determin all differences that might rise among parties, concerning burnt or demolished Houses. A new Model of Building was appointed, and the Parliament was prorogued till the tenth of October following.

The Court seldom escapes free when combustions rage in the City, nor did it at this time; for by carelessness in using of a Candle, a Fire taking in the Horse-guard at White-hall, a great part of that Building was burnt down; but by the special care of his Majesty and his Guards, its progress was quickly stopt.

His Majesty at this time meeting with bad usage from many hands, in order to a redress, published several Proclamations; one for prohibiting the Importation of Canary Wines, and all Commerce with those parts; another to the same effect with France, and all the French Kings Dominions; a third upon the humble Address of the Lords and Commons in Parliament, for banishing the Kingdom all Priests and Jesuits, and a fourth for open War with Denmark. The

The City now ashamed to lie longer smothered under ashes, was by Sir *Jonas Moore*, upon his Conformity to the Scantling and Model of Building, appointed by the Committee, first rowed in Fleet-street, from which beginning it grew so hastily towards a perfection, that in a few years it out-did all its ancient Splendour and Glory, and appeared again far more beautiful than by its fall it had been desolate and abject; no less a wonder than the suddenness of its overthrow.

*Scotland* at this time shared likewise in Combustions, though occasioned by a Fire of another nature; for a seditious Zeal having inspired some male-contents with revenge against Sir *Jamie Turner* for executing (too vigorously as they pretended) the Laws against them, they committed an insolent Riot upon his Person, and hardly forbore the cutting of him in pieces. This Tumult was at first raised by a small insconsiderable Rabble, but in a short time they increased to a Body of 1600 Men, who marching straight towards *Edinburgh*, were encountered and defeated by His Majesties Forces, commanded by Lieutenant General *Dalyell*, and Major General *Drummond*. Many of the Rebels were slain, more taken, whereof the Ring-leaders were executed, and the rest either proscribed or otherways punished by Law.

The Convention of Estates of *Scotland* meeting in January after 1665, for composing of the affairs of that Kingdom, and for preventing both intestine and foreign dangers that might threaten it, resolved to put the Country into a posture of defence, and for maintaining of such Forces as were necessary for his Majesties service, assessed the Kingdom in an Imposition of 6000*l.* per Month.

About the latter end of this Year, the Lord *Willoughby* set out from *Barbados* with a considerable well-mann'd Fleet, with design to annoy the French and Dutch Plantations in the *West-Indies*; but by a violent Hurricane his Fleet was dispersed, and himself with many more cast away.

Anno

*Anno 1667.* The Swedes having the year before offered a Mediation for a Peace between the King of *England* and the States of the *United Provinces*, prevailed this year with the King to condescend thereunto, and to accept of *Breda* for the place of Treaty.

The Dutch in the mean time are busie in making preparations for continuing the War, upon a fair and approved Maxim of State, *That with an Enemy it is surest treating with Sword in hand*. The King of *England* not ignorant of their doings, resolved to make them spend the Summer in needless expences of War, and only keep himself upon his guard.

The English therefore having but a small Fleet abroad, the Dutch put to Sea betimes, and about the latter end of April made an attempt on *Burnt-Island* in *Scotland*, but were beaten off with loss.

Their next attempt was upon the Fort of *Sheerness*, which being a place of small force, was (after a short but stout resistance) abandoned by Sir *Edward Sprague*; and so the mouth of that narrow River was left open. After this they assaulted and were beaten off from *Langguard* Fort, engaged a Squadron of the English with a Squadron of theirs, and were worsted; shewed themselves before *Portsmouth*, and made some slight attempts in *Devonshire* and *Cornwall*; and after *De Ruyter*, their Admiral, had been civilly complemented by the Earl of *Bath* in the West, and had received advice of the conclusion of the Peace, they Sailed back for *Holland*.

The Peace was concluded at *Breda*, the twenty first of June; the Ratifications interchanged the fourteenth of August, and proclaimed afterward in *London* the twenty fourth of the same Month.

This Year died the Earl of *Southampton*, Lord High Treasurer of *England*, which place the King thought fit to supply by Commissioners (*viz.*) the Duke of *Albemarle*, the Lord *Ashley Cooper*, since Earl of *Shaftesbury*, Sir *Thomas Clifford*, Sir *William Coventry*, and Sir *John Duncomb*.

The

The Parliament was to have met in July, but was Prorogued till the tenth of October; in which Session several Acts were passed, amongst others, one for banishing and disabling the Earl of Clarendon; whom the Parliament charged---- the Parliament then adjourned till February.

In America, Sir John Harman with a Squadron of English Ships, attacked a Squadron of French in their Ports with so good success, that he burnt their Admiral, and six or seven of their best Ships; all the rest but two being sunk, either by the Enemy or the English Shot, and that with very small loss of Men, or damage to his Ships.

The King to encourage the re-building of the City this year, was pleased auspiciously to lay the first Stone himself in the Foundation of the Royal Exchange; as shortly after his Royal Highness laid a Foundation Stone for a second Pillar thereof.

About the beginning of February, the Parliament, according to their Adjournment, met; and upon their humble Petition to his Majesty, procured a Proclamation to be emitted for enforcing the Laws against Conventicles, and for preserving the Peace of the Nation against unlawful Assemblies.

This month was proclaimed the Peace with Spain, which had been (much to the advantage of Commerce) concluded in May last.

About the end of March in Easter Week, some licentious idle persons, pretending former custom, took the liberty to pull down some Houses of bad repute about the Suburbs of London: Though the Prentices bore the blame of this Riot, yet others were found guilty; whereof four being apprehended, were convicted and executed, and two of their Heads set up on London-Bridge.

In May the King passed some Bills in the House of Lords, whereof one was for raising an Imposition on Wines and other Liquors, and the Parliament was adjourned till the 11th. of August following.

In

In June News was brought to London of the burning of the Bridge-Town in Barbadoes, where besides the loss of most of the Houses, the Magazine, to the great prejudice of the publick, as well as of private persons, was blown up.

The Duke of Monmouth upon the resignation of the Lord Gerrard, was made Captain of his Majesties Life-Guards of Horse.

Sir Thomas Allen made Peace this year with the Algerines.

About the middle of January 1668, the Duchess of York was brought to Bed of a Daughter, christened by the name of Henrietta, by the Bishop of Canterbury; the Duke of Ormond assisting as Godfather, the Marchioness of Dorchester and Countess of Devonshire, having the honor of being Godmothers.

Anno 1669. The beginning of this year the Earl of Carlile was sent Embassador Extraordinary to Sweden. As he was at Copenhagen, on his way, he received a Letter from the King of England, in answer to an obliging Letter of the King of Denmark, to be delivered to that King. This Letter was so acceptable to the Dane, that upon the Embassadors instance, he dispatched Orders to all his Ports and Mercantile Towns, especially in Norway, for restoring the English to their former Freedoms and Privileges in Trading.

Being arrived in Sweden, he presented the King with the George worn by the Knights of the Garter; and was afterward, as his Majesties Proxy, solemnly installed in the Order at Windjör.

This year was the stately new Theatre of Oxford, the noble Gift of Dr. Sheldon, Archbishop of Canterbury, according to the intent of the Donor, put into the Possession of that University: And upon his Graces declining the Chancellorship, the Duke of Ormond, was installed Chancellor of the University of Oxford.

Whilst the King was taking his Divertisement with the Duke of York, in the New Forest in Hampshire, they both received an Express of the death of their Mother, the Queen Dowager of England, who died at

Ee

Columbee

## CHARLES II.

Columbee the last of August, and was buried in St. Dennis in November following.

About this time arrived at Dublin the Lord Roberts, as Lord Deputy of Ireland.

The Exchange of London ever since the Fire, had been kept at Gresham College in Bishopsgate-street, till now, to the great satisfaction of the City, the Merchants returned to the Royal Exchange in Cornhill; a Fabrick as far exceeding the old one in beauty and structure, as the City re-built does that which was destroyed.

At the day of October prefixed the Parliament met, to whom the King, amongst other things in his Speech, proposed the uniting of England and Scotland into one Kingdom; this project in the sequel had no better issue, than another set on foot by King James for the same purpose. The Parliament having sat above a month, and done but very little, were prorogued till the 24th. of February following.

The Parliament of Scotland sat at Edinburgh at the same time that the Parliament of England did at Westminster; in the which the Earl of Lauderdale represented his Majesty as his Commissioner. In this Session of Parliament, amongst many other Acts, that of asserting his Majesties Supremacy in all Causes, and over all Persons, Civil and Ecclesiastical, passed. A necessary Act for securing the Rights of Monarchy against popular and unwarrantable Innovations; and a duty, which had it not been forgotten, or trampled upon in these latter times, might (with Gods Blessing) have preserved both Nations from scandalous and fatal consequences.

A splendid and magnificent Embassie was this year sent to Taffelette, Emperor of Morocco, in the person of Mr. Henry Howard, since Duke of Norfolk; which by reason of the troubles of that Country, and the inability of the Emperor to secure a safe conduct to a person of that quality, proved of small consequence; and the Embassador returned without seeing the Emperor, or performing his Embassie.

The

## CHARLES II.

The latter end of this year died the Duke of Albermarle, his Duchess not many days surviving him. The King as a mark of gratitude to the deceased Duke, sent his Son the present Duke, his Fathers Garter, continued to him many of his Honors and Preferments; and sent him word, that he himself would take care of his Fathers Funeral.

The Parliament met again at the appointed time; and the King among other things, re-minded them of the project of Union between the two Kingdoms.

Anno 1670. This year, in the beginning of April, the King having passed some Bills, the Parliament was adjourned to the 24th. of October: Amongst others, was an Act for authorizing such Commissioners as his Majesty should be pleased to nominate for treating with the Scottish Commissioners about the projected Union; who being nominated, and having afterwards met with those sent from Scotland, many Conferences were held; but insuperable difficulties appearing in the matter, it was wholly laid aside.

At this time the Lord John Barkley arrived in Dublin, and was invested Lord Lieutenant of Ireland.

The Princess of Orleans made now her last visit to her two Brothers, the King of England, and Duke of York, at Dover; and upon her return, which was short'y after, took her journey out of this World: for to the great grief and surprize of the Court of England, she died suddenly:

Captain Beach being in the Straits with four English Frigots, met a Squadron of seven Alger Men of War, full of Men; gave them Battle, and after a short Dispute, forced them all ashore; where two of them were burnt by themselves, and the rest by the English: most of their Men were lost, and 250 Christian Captives set at liberty.

In October the Parliament met again, according to their Adjournment, and then was the Peace between England and Spain beyond the Line concluded and ratified.

E e 2

The

## C H A R L E S II.

The Prince of *Orange* came this year into *England*, and having visited both Universities, after a short stay he returned.

During this Session of Parliament, the Lords and Commons having humbly, represented to his Majesty their fears and jealousies of the growth of Popery; the King by Proclamation commanded all Jesuits, and English, Irish, and Scottish Priests, and all others that had taken Orders from the See of *Rome*, except such as were to wait upon the Queen and Foreign Embassadors, to depart the Kingdom, upon pain of having the Laws and Statutes of the Realm put in execution against them.

*Anno 1671.* In the beginning of this year, died at St. *James's*, her Royal highness *Anne*, Duchess of *York*, Daughter to the Earl of *Clarendon*; and was shortly after privately buried at *Westminster*. She was educated a Protestant-----

The Parliament still sat, and amongst others, having past an Act for an addition of the Kings Revenue, by an Imposition on proceedings at Law; by an humble Address they petitioned his Majesty, that he would be pleased by his Royal Example to encourage the wearing of the Manufactures of his own Kingdom, and to discountenance the use of Foreign; to which the King having graciously condescended, they were Prorogued till the 26th. of *April* next ensuing.

In June, Sir *Edward Sprague*, Admiral for the King in the Mediterranean Sea, burnt and took under the very Guns of the Castle of *Bugia*, nine of the best Men of War of *Algier*. This News so incensed that People, that in a tumultuary manner they cut off the Head of their King, the *Aga* having done the like to their General, and forced the New Created King to make a Peace much to the advantage of *England*.

This year his Majesty was pleased to honor the City of *London* with his presence at the Lord Mayors Feast, being the first that since the Fire was kept in *Guild-hall*, after it was advantageously repaired.

The

## C H A R L E S II.

The King having long concealed his just displeasure against the Dutch, and his resentments of their unworthy dealings towards him, intends now an open War with the *United Provinces*. In order thereunto, in January 1671. his Majesty declared, that seeing his Neighbors were making great preparations, both by Sea and Land, he looked upon himself as obliged to put himself into such a posture, as might best secure his Government and People: And that seeing money, which was absolutely necessary for that end, was wanting, he was unavoidably forced (which otherwise he would not have done) to put a stop to the payment of all monies brought in, or to be brought in, to his Exchequer, for the space of one whole year.

In the mean time Sir *George Downing*, his Majesties Ambassador in *Holland*, pressed the States hard with the busines of the Flag; but finding his demands shifted off with delays, and his Negotiation like to prove successless, he returned back in a short time to *England*; where he was committed to the Tower, for not having punctually obeyed his Instructions.

In March 1671. There was War declared by the King of *Great Britain*, the Dutch by this alarmed, and by the proceedings and preparations of the French King, which they knew tended to a rupture with them, fortified themselves with all diligence, as well by Forces at home as Allies abroad, and made the Prince of *Orange* their Captain General at Land, and Admiral at Sea, for the ensuing years Actions.

One Mrs. *Jones* of *Monmouth*, or some adjacent Parish, was murthered; for which cursed fact, her Son, a Lawyer by Profession, was press'd to death, her Maiden-Daughter burnt, and the Servant-boy, which did the Act, was hang'd at *Monmouth*. The Son refused to plead, the Daughter fled, and the Boy upon examination confessed the fact.

*An. 1672.* The French King now being joyned with the English in War against the Dutch, in the beginning of this year marches at the head of his main Army, towards the Frontiers of the *Netherlands*, and sends his Fleet to joyn the English.      E e 3      In

## C H A R L E S . II.

In May both Fleets were joyned at Sea, under the command of his Royal Highness the Duke of York, making all together about 160 Sail. They had had often sight of the Dutch, but no Engagement till the 28th. of this month, and then in *Southwold Bay* a Sharp Fight began about five of the Clock in the Morning, and was obstinately maintained on both sides till night; the Dutch then bore away, and the Duke stood after them, keeping withing sight of their lights all Night. In this Engagement died the Earl of *Sandwich*, Captain *Digby* in the *Henry*, Sir *John Cox* hard by the Duke in the *Prince*, Sir *Frescheville Hollis*, and Monsieur *de la Rabiner*, the French Rear Admiral. Several other Officers were slain and wounded, about seven hundred common Seamen lost, and as many wounded; the *Royal James* burnt, and the *Katherine* taken, but by her own men rescued again. On the Dutch side were killed Admiral *Van Ghent* and Captain *Brackbel*. Their great Ships were sadly shattered, two sunk, one taken, and one burnt; many others were missing, whereof no account could be given, and a great many of their common Seamen killed and wounded. The French at the same time, to encrease their loss, took several of their Towns and Forts by Land.

Next day after this Engagement, in the Afternoon, the Duke of York put twice out his bloody Flag upon sight of the Dutch; but was as often prevented from engaging them by thick Fogs and Mists, which gave the Dutch opportunity to retreat; and so no more considerable Action at Sea was performed this year.

The States being thus pressed (in all probability) above the strength of so small a Republick; having the French on the one side, the Bishop of *Munster* on the other, by Land, and the English by Sea, to deal with, were not able to repress the Tumults and Insolencies of the exasperated people. The Burghers of *Dort* in a tumultuary manner, got the Prince of *Orange* created Statholder, which was afterward confirmed by the States. And at the *Hague*, not long after, a masterless Rabble hall'd out of Prison the *Ruwart van*

## C H A R L E S . II.

*van Putten*, and his Brother *De Witt*, who had been condemned to lose their Dignities and be banished, for some designs against the Prince, and barbarously murdered them, dragging their Bodies through the Streets, hanging them on the Gallows by the Heels, and afterward inhumanly tearing and cutting them to pieces.

This year was the Earl of *Essex* sent into *Ireland*, to succeed the Lord *John Berkley*, as Lieutenant of that Kingdom. The Lord Keeper of *England*, *Bridgman*, now aged and infirm, having resigned his place, the Earl of *Shaftsbury* was made Chancellor of *England*, and *Thomas Lord Clifford* Lord High Treasurer.

Toward the beginning of *December*, the Duke of *Richmond*, who had been this year sent Ambassador Extraordinary into *Sweden*, died in his Calesche, as he was upon his return to *Elsenore*, from being aboard of the *Tarmouth* Frigat. No other reason could be given for the suddenness of his death, but the extream coldnes of that piercing Air, to which his Body was not accustomed.

The time of Prorogation being expired, the Parliament met again; and upon the removal of Sir *Edward Turner*, their Speaker, to be Lord chief Baron of the Exchequer, Sir *Job Charleton* was made Speaker; but he shortly after falling sick, *Edm. Seymour*, Esq; succeeded. This Session of Parliament Voted the King a supply of 18 months Assesment, not exceeding 70000*l.* a month; but began to be dissatisfied with the Kings indulgence and toleration to Fanaticks, though his Majesty by a gracious Answer to an Address of theirs, endeavored to remove that scruple.

A.D. 1673. For preventing dangers which might happen from Popish Recusants (Romish Emissaries being at that time, and for some years past, having been more than ordinarily busie to seduce the Kings good Subjects, and having been too succelsful, especially amongst the great ones) it was Enacted, that all, as well Peers as Commoners, that shall bear any Office Civil or Military, or shall receive any pay, salary,

Fee or Wages, by reason of any Patent or Grant from his Majesty, or shall have any Place or Command from or under the King, or be of his Household, or in his Service, or the Duke of York to take the following Oath in open Court, viz. *I A.B. do declare, That I do believe that there is not any Transubstantiation in the Sacrament of the Lord's Supper, or in the Elements of Bread and Wine, at or after Consecration thereof, &c.*

The Island of *Tobago* was this Year taken by the English from the Dutch, in exchange whereof, the Dutch took *St. Helena* from the English; which might have proved of very bad consequence to the English *East-India* Trade, had it not been retaken by Captain *Monday*, with three Dutch *East-India* Merchant Men besides, which fully paid the charges of its reprisal. For this good Service Captain *Monday* was Knighted.

The Dutch this year were first at Sea, and attempted a vain project of stopping up those narrow Channels that give entry to the River of *Thames*. Prince *Rupert*, who commanded the English Fleet, put out to encounter them; but they retreating to their own Shoar, the Prince stood to the West-ward, that he might joyn the French and part of the English Fleets. This shortly after done, the whole Fleet made toward the coast of *Holland*; and the Prince finding them before *Schonveld*, secured by their Banks and the shallowness of the water, on the 28th of May, detached a Squadron of 35 small Frigats to provoke them to an Engagement: The Dutch, contrary to expectation, came forth in good order and Engaged. The French and English emulous for Honor, fought with extraordinary cagerness, and somewhat entangled each other; but at length, after a sharp dispute, the magnanimous Prince forced the Enemy to run, and followed them as far as the Sands, and Water did permit, till Night put an end to the Conflict, and the Dutch regained their former station. The English lost but a few common Seamen, and not one Ship; Captains were slain, *Fowles*, *Finch*, *Tempest* and *Warden*. On the Dutch side were killed Vice-Admiral *Schram*, Rear-Admiral *Clug*, and six Captains

Captains more. They lost considerably in Men, but only one Ship called the *Deventer*.

On the fourth of June hapned another Engagement, wherein no great Execution was done on either side, it being managed at great distance, and most part in the night time.

And that the Series of this Years Warlike Actions may be continued without interruption, on the 10th of August, both Fleets met again at Sea, and gave the last stroke to this War. The Dutch being about the *Goree*, got the Wind of the English, and bore briskly down upon them; the Fight was obstinate and bloody on both sides, especially betweeen Sir *Edward Sprague* and *Van Trump*; but the French making as if they stood off for the Wind, did it in reality, that they might have the conveniency of being Spectators. Prince *Rupert* and *De Ruyter*, who had been engaged together all day, finding themselves at distance from their respective Squadrons, stood back again to their assistance; and *De Ruyter* designing to have cut off the blew Squadron from the rest of the Fleet, was so smartly charged by the Prince, that he was fain to give way; so that had the French made use of the Wind they had, the Dutch had certainly sustained far greater los than they did, and not so easily drawn off by favor of the night. In this Engagement Sir *Edward Sprague*, as he was shifting from one Ship to another, had his Long-boat by a random-shot shivered to pieces under him, and so to the grief and regret of all that knew him, was drowned; his Ship strangely disabled, was by his valiant Second, the Earl of *Offory*, brought off. Captain *Neeve* was slain, *Reeves* and *Heywood* died of their wounds, and *Martel* only of the French was killed. The loss of common Seamen was not very great on the English side. The Dutch lost two Flag Officers, several Captains, and about a thousand common Seamen.

About the middle of June, the Lord *Clifford* resigned his Treasurers Staff, and Sir *Thomas Osborn*, created Viscount *Osborn* of *Dumblain* in *Scotland*, and afterwards Earl of *Danby* in *England*, was made Lord The High Treasurer.

The King issued out his Proclamation, requiring all Judges and Justices of the Peace effectually to prosecute the Laws against all Papists and Popish Recusants.

About the latter end of November, his Royal Highness the Duke of York, was married to the Princess of *Moldena*, a Romanist, after that the Parliament had used great endeavors to prevent it.

Though the Preparations for War went on vigorously, both on the English and Dutch sides, yet overtures of Peace were still set on foot; and his Majesty condescended to a Treaty at *Cologne*, which took no effect. The Dutch in the mean time thought it not fit to desist; but by another way of Negotiation, that is to say, by intercourse of Letters, they at length prevailed so far, as to receive a condescending Letter from the King of *England* in February 1673, which was shortly after followed by a conclusion of the Peace by them so much desired.

A. D. 1674. Peace being now concluded, this Year affords no great Transactions of importance; the Consultations of Government being chiefly directed to the preservation of quietness and unity at home; in order to which his Majesty emitted several Proclamations against Papists and Jesuits.

The Duke of *Monmouth* upon resignation of the Duke of *Buckingham*, was chosen Chancellor of the University of *Cambridge*. The Earl of *St. Albans* giving up the Staff of Lord Chamberlain of his Majesties Household, his Place was given to the Earl of *Arlington*, to whom Sir *Joseph Williamson* succeeded as principal Secretary of State.

His Majesty having been pleased to accept of the Freedom of the City of *London*, and of the *Goldsmiths Company*, was in December, by Sir *Robert Vyner*, Lord Mayor, in name of the City, presented with the Copy of his Freedom, in a large square Box of Massy Gold, the Seal appended, being in a Box of Gold, set all over with large Diamonds.

About

About the beginning of January 1674, her Royal Highness was brought to Bed of a Daughter, Christened at St. James's by the Bishop of *Durham*, by the Name of *Katharina Laura*; the Duke of *Monmouth* being Godfather, and the Lady *Mary* and Lady *Anne* Godmothers.

A. D. 1675. There hapned this Year a dangerous Plot carried on with great secrecy by the Blacks of *Barbadoes* against the English, which upon the very nick of being put in execution, was detected, and the Conspirators punished.

The Natives of *New-England*, under the command of King *Philip Hegamore*, rose likewise against the English, and did them considerable damage; but were in a short time curbed from their insolencies, and driven to their sculking holes.

In September most part of the Town of *Northampton* was by a dreadful fire burnt down, nothing left standing except a few Houses in the out-skirts of the Town.

On the fifth of March 1675, Sir *John Narborough* concluded an honourable Peace, and of great advantage to the Trade of this Nation, with the Government of *Tripoly*.

A. D. 1676. The French last Campaign lost their famous Mareschal *Turenne*; and the Dutch Marine Expeditions are this Year ushered in with a fate as unlucky to the States; for their Darling, Admiral *De Ruyter*, on the twenty ninth of April, died of his Wounds, which he had received some days before in an Engagement with the French, in the Bay of *Augusta*, on the Coast of *Sicily*.

But to return home, The first thing we meet with this Year of note, is a dreadful Fire which hapned the 26th of May, in the Burrough of *Southwark*: It began about four in the morning, and continued all day, and part of the night; and notwithstanding the indefatigable pains and diligence of his Grace the Duke of *Monmouth*, of the Earl of *Craven*, and Lord Mayor, yet about 600 Houses were burnt and blown up by this sad accident.

His

His Majesty, for securing Trading to and from his Ports, which was much disturbed by the insolency of Dutch, Spanish, & French Privateers, amongst whom the War still continued; on the 2d of June caused a Proclamation to be published, declaring, all Ships of what Party soever, that should put into any of his Ports, to be under his protection during their stay there; commanding his public Officers, and all other his Majesties Subjects, to use their best endeavors to hinder the roving of any privat Men of War so near his Coasts, as might give apprehensions to Merchant Men; That if a Man of War of one Party, and one or more Merchant Men of another, should come into his Majesties Ports, the Merchant Men should have the priviledge to Sail out two Tides before the Man of War. That none of his Seamen should presume to enter and list themselves on Board of any Foreign Man of War, or any Ship designed for Traffic or the Fishing Trade, without his Majesties leave first obtained; with several other Rules relating to the securing of Trade, and his Majesties Sovereignty in these Seas; in pursuance of which Proclamation several Privateers were stopt and detained in many of the Ports of this Kingdom.

Aug. the 20th, Her Royal Highness was brought to Bed of a Daughter, Christned by the name of *Isabell*; the Lord High Treasurer being Godfather, and the Duchess of Monmouth and Countess of Peterborough Godmothers.

Octob. the 26th, His Majesty passed an Order in Council, That none of his Subjects, except the Queens Domestic Servants, should repair to her Majesties Chapel, or to the Houses or Chapels of any Foreign Embassadors or Agents, there to hear Mass, or English Sermons, upon pain of having the laws severely executed against them; and his Majesty appointed Messengers of the Chamber, and other Officers, to wait without at the Houses of Foreign Embassadors and Agents, and to take notice of such of his Subjects as should come out of the said Chapels from Religious Worship, and bring them or their Names to the Council Board. The Principal Secretaries of State, were by his Majesty likewise required,

required, to repair to the said Embassadors and Agents, & in his Majesties name acquaint them with his Royal Pleasure in executing his Laws, that they might have no cause to complain of disrespect offered to their Character, or of any purpose of infringing their Privileges.

A.D. 1677, April the 16th, His Majesty in his Royal Robes, with the usual Solemnities came into the House of Lords, whither the House of Commons being called, several Bills were passed; amongst others, an Act for raising the sum of Five hundred eighty four thousand nine hundred seventy eight pounds, two shillings and two pence half penny, for the speedy building of thirty Ships of War: Another for an Additional Excise upon Beer, Ale, and other Liquors, for three Years; another for erecting a Judicature, to determin differences touching Houses burnt and demolished by the late dreadful Fire in Southwark; another for taking away the Writ *De Heretico comburendo*, &c. and then both Houses adjourned till the 21st of May following.

This Month the Duke of Newcastle and Earl of Dunby, Lord High Treasurer of England, were installed Knights of the Garter at Windsor.

May the 21st, both Houses, according to their last Adjournment, met again at Westminster, his Majesty having before by Proclamation required all the Members to be present, in order to the debating of Matters of great importance. In this Session the House of Commons made an Address to his Majesty, that he would be pleased for the security of the Nation, and repressing the growing greatness of France, to enter into some Leagues proposed by them in their Address; to which, on the 28th of the same month, he gave them his Answer at the Banqueting-House; which Answer being made public in Print, we shall refer you to the Answer it self. His Majesty farther told them, That it was his Pleasure the House should be adjourned to the 16th of July following; and that if he intended they should sit again before Winter, he would give them notice by his Proclamation. Accordingly both Houses were adjourned till the 16th of July ensuing.

Aug. the 4th, His Grace the D. of Ormond, Lord Lieutenant

tenant of Ireland, began his Journey for that Kingdom; And now his Majesty thinking it fit to put a stop to the French victorious Proceedings in Flanders, be-thought himself of entring into alliances with some Princes and States abroad, and began to raise Forces for that purpose; of whom the Year following will afford more matter of Discourse.

October the ninth, The Prince of Orange landed at Harwich, and went from thence directly to New-Market, in his Majesties Coaches that attended his Highness there.

Sunday, November the fourth, The Marriage between her Highnes the Lady Mary, the Duke of Yorks eldest Daughter, and his Highness the Prince of Orange, was privately celebrated at St. James's, by the Bishop of London, in the presence of his Majesty, their Royal Highnesses, and some of the chiefest of the Nobility: And on Wednesday following, her Royal Highness the Duchess of York was brought to Bed of a Son, who was Christned by the name of Charles, but died in December following.

November the 11th, About nine a Clock in the morning their Highnesses the Prince and Princess of Orange, parted from White-hall, in order to their im-barking in the Yachts appointed to transport their Highnesses to Holland; his Majesty and his Royal Highnes having accompanied them to Erith, where their Highnesses went on Board.

The Parliament, pursuant to their last Adjournment, having met at Westminster, received an Intimation from the King, That his Majesty had Matters of very great importance to communicate to both Houses, in order to the satisfaction of their late Addresses for the preservaton of Flanders; but matters not being then ripe enough, it was his Majesties pleasure they should be adjourned till the 28th of the same month; and accordingly they were adjourned.

At the prefixed time they met again, and the King in a gracious Speech acquainted both Houses to this purpose, *That according to his Promise to them, that he would do somewhat for their satisfaction before they met again, he had made Alliances with*

*with Holland for the preservation of Flanders, which if seconded by plentiful Supplies from them, and due care from the Spaniard for their own Preservation, might be able by Arms to restore such an honourable Peace to Christendom, as might not be in the power of one Prince alone to disturb, which he had endeavored to do by a fair Treaty: That he had married his Niece to the Prince of Orange, and so engaged himself to maintain his Interest: And having laid before them the Expences he had been at, and what an actual War would needs require, with very pressing Considerations, his Majesty demanded of them answerable Supplies.*

March the 20th 1677, Amongst other Bills in Parliament, there passed an Act for raising Money by Poll and other ways, to enable his Majesty to enter into an Actual War against the French King; with a prohibition of all French Commodities.

A.D. 1678. Many of the Forces raised by his Majesty since September last, being already in Flanders, and more going over daily; his Majesty, that he might put himself in a posture of acting by Sea as well as by Land, caused a Proclamation to be published the beginning of this Year, strictly charging all Seamen, his Subjects, who had listed themselves in the Service of Foreign Princes or States, forthwith to withdraw and return home; and that none for the future should presume without permission from his Majesty, to engage in any such Service.

About this time at Bruges in Flanders, hapned a great Dis-order, occasioned by a rude Action of a Burgher, who in time of a Procession, struck a Dutch Captain with a lighted Torch over the Face, because he did not uncover himself so soon as the Townsman would have had him; this occasioned presently the drawing of many Swords; and the English being falsely accused of the Tumult, some Souldiers were killed in the Streets; but by the care of the Magistrates and Officers, the Stir being quieted, and the truth of the matter discovered, the Magistrates of the Town imprisoned and punished some of the Authors of the Tumult, and to satisfie their trouble at the accident, treated the English Officers and Souldiers, and published a Placate in their Justification, charging all Persons to use the said Souldiers with all kindness and civility.

On Saturday, April the 13, A Woman of Swansey was brought to Bed of a dead Female Child, which had two perfect Heads and Necks upon one Body, with all the Parts of each Head exact, and the Members of the Body perfect.

The Parliament, pursuant to the last Prorogation, having met the 23d of May, and continued sitting till the 15th of July following; his Majesty that day in his Robes, came into the House

## CHARLES II.

House of Lords, and there gave his Royal Assent to several Acts; amongst which, to one for raising Money for disbanding of the Army, a great part of which was now in *Flanders*; another for granting an Additional Duty to his Majesty upon Wines for three years; a third for burying in Woollen; and a fourth for the relief and discharge of poor distressed Prisoners for Debt. After which the Lord Chancellor, by his Majesties command, acquainted the two Houses, That his Majesty had thought fit in the present conjuncture of Affairs, to prorogue them to the first of *August* following, and so to keep them in call by short Prorogations; his Majesty not knowing how soon he might have need of their farther Service and Assistance; but that his Majesties intention was, they should not meet till towards Winter, unless there were occasion for their Assembling sooner, of which he would give them timely notice by Proclamation: And accordingly the Parliament was prorogued till the first day of *August*.

In pursuance of this Prorogation, the Parliament met at *Westminster* the first day of *August*, and were then by Commission prorogued till the 29th of the same Month; at which time his Majesty being willing they should meet, and continue sitting for the dispatch of weighty Affairs, did issue out a Proclamation, requiring all the Members to give their Attendance at *Westminster* the said day. But the Face of Affairs abroad being much altered by the conclusion of the Peace betwixt the French King, and the States of the United Provinces, which was signed at *Nimeguen* the first of *August*; his Majesty thought fit likewise to change his resolution: And therefore by Proclamation declared, That both Houses should be prorogued from the 29th of *August*, till the first of *October* following; and afterward by another Proclamation to the 21st of the same Month, at which time his Majesty required a full meeting of the Members, in order to their sitting, for the dispatch of weighty Matters; which indeed hapned to be of greater concern than was imagined.

The Prince of *Orange* was now marched with his Army to the relief of *Mons*, at this time blockt up by the French under the Command of the Duke of *Luxemburgh*, before he had the News of the Peace: And his Highness, accompanied with the Duke of *Monmouth*, about the beginning of *August*, being advanced near the Enemies Camp at *St. Denis*, bravely attacqued it, and after a long and brisk dispute, forcing the French to dislodge, possessed himself of their Ground. The Prince and Duke of *Monmouth* were in great danger in this Engagement, but both came off without any hurt; the Earl of *Offory* commanded his Majesties Subjects that were in the States Service, who gained not the least share in the Honor of this days Action, though many gallant Men perished in the Attempt. It

## CHARLES II.

It was now the fatal time when old Arts under the disguise of new Plots were to appear upon the Stage, and with deplorable success Dishonour the Nation, Discompose the Harmony and Peace of the Government, Divide and Rend the People into Factions and Parties, Shake the very Foundations of *Monarchy*, and once again expole Three Happy and Flourishing Kingdoms to Broils and Confusions at home, and to Ignominy and Contempt with their Neighbours abroad.

It is certainly to be bewailed (and Posterity is to take notice that it was so, by all Honest and Loyal Subjects, at that time) that the mildnes and candour of the Government should have been so imposed upon by a monstrous fence of incoherent Forgeries, as patiently and for a long time to suffer an accursed Fiction to pass for Truth upon the Nation, and with the ruine of many innocent Persons, to grow into so great Credit with the People, at least with the Factious and Restless sort of them; that, at length, a real Conspiracy had leisure to ripen and grow strong enough to struggle and bid fair for the Subversion of the Ancient Established Government both in Church and State. But, the truth is, the old Leaven of Schism and Faction, which has been in all times fermented by Fears and Jealousies; and the audacious assertion of so strange and horrid a Conspiracy, by so mean and profligate a Wretch, being countenanc'd by false Comments upon the Letters of a busie Man, which seemed to look that way, surprised the credulity of a great many honest and well-meaning Men, and made even Incredibility an argument for the Reality of a *Damnable and Hellish Popish Conspiracy*.

Nevertheless, though the first and original Contrivance had the honour to be called by the name of *A Damnable and Hellish Popish Conspiracy*; yet it is still such a dark Mystery, and the real Arch-conspirators are so far from being known, that after the shams and falsehoods of the first Discoverer, were clearly detected, and he convicted of notorious Perjury; for which he hath been punished according to Law: All that Authority it self

## CHARLES II.

has been pleased to pronounce of the Imposture, is to call it *Oates's Plot*, in the *True account of the Horrid Conspiracy, &c.* But seeing the best of *Oates's Friends* cannot deny, but that he was endowed with sufficient Impudence to utter and assert any thing; and the worst of his Enemies have not Malice enough to asperse him with so much Wit, as to be able to draw such a Scheme of Knavery of his own Head: It may be impartially said, That if it was not made by those who were confessedly guilty of that Conspiracy, to which it naturally tended, and at length resolv'd into, yet it was as ingeniously calculated for their ends, and they made as good use of it, as if it had been of their own making at first.

The Reader, it is hoped, will excuse this reflection, and since the designed brevity of Abridgement cannot admit of an enlargement upon all the particulars of the many strange occurrences that happened since the broaching of our late unhappy Plots; nor, though the Laws of History did require it, allow hints to be given on all occasions, when it would be convenient to divert the Readers attention to make the inference himself, will think it was necessary to prepare Mens minds for the understanding of the truth, by giving them a general and previous glance of what light hath hitherto appeared for clearing matter of Fact, until the fuller Discoveries of Time, and a more accurate Pen, give the World a larger and better Account of the strange and wonderful Transactions of this King's Reign, at least of the Six last Years of it.

The Oraculous Discoverer, then, of this Pretended Hellish Conspiracy, was *Titus Oates*, the Son of a Ribbon-Weaver, who turning afterwards Anabaptist Preacher, and being Chaplain to a Regiment of *Cromwell's Army* in *Scotland*, was there clapt up in Prison upon *Overton's Plot* against that Usurper; but having the luck to escape upon the King's Restoration, he conformed, and got the Living of *Hastings* in *Sussex*; where he continu'd till he thought fit to relapse again into his former

An-

## CHARLES II

Anabaptistical Station. This Son of his, who, besides many other good qualities, fully inherited the Plotting-Spirit of the Father: Having got a little Snattering of Grammatical and University Learning, in Merchant-Taylors School in *London*, and at *Cambridge*, slipt into Orders, and for some time officiated as Curate to his Father, and then enjoyed a small Vicarage in *Kent*: but being a nice man in the point of Religion, he struck in with the *Socinians* in *London*, and afterwards, upon pretence of turning Roman Catholic, he was admitted, with much ado, among the School-Boys at *St. Omers*, putting on that Countenance (as most ridiculously he tells the World in his *Senceless Narratives*) for the better Fishing out the Jesuits Counsels and Designs against the *English Church and State*. He made them soon sick of him there, and his next Jaunt was for *Spain*; leaving in all places behind him, a lewd and a scandalous Reputation. In the conclusion he came back again for *England*, full fraughted with Plots and Discoveries. Upon his return he consulted and conferred Notes with one Dr. Tongue, a Minister in *London*, but, at best, a freakish man, who divided his Studies betwixt Divinity and Chymistry; these two having adjusted matters as they thought fittest, betwixt themselves, about the beginning of *September* this year, applied themselves to Sir *Edmundbury Godfrey*, one of his Majesty's Justices of the Peace for *Middlesex*, whom *Oates* informed of a Plot hatched and carried on by Jesuits, Priests, and others of the Roman Catholique Perswasion, against the Person and Life of his Majesty, the Subversion of the Protestant Religion, and Government of the Kingdom. And for confirmation of what he said, named many persons of all Qualities, high and low, as engaged in the Design, some as instruments for Assassinating his Majesty, and others for carrying on the remaining part of the Work, by Arms, forraign Assistances, Massacres, and such other expedients, as they judged necessary for the success of their Enterprise; which are largely set forth in the *Romantick Narrative and Depositions* of the Discoverer.

F f 2

Hic

## CHARLES II.

His Majesty and the Council being informed of this, and Warrants being directed for Apprehending several Persons accused, who were accordingly committed to Custody; the Tragical effects of this Sham-Conspiracy began to appear, in the general horrour and confernation that the News of it had created, all over the Nation, which was mightily increased by the following Accident.

Sir Edmundbury Godfrey, who had taken, and given in to the Council the Depositions of the Evidence, was on Saturday the Twelfth of Oct. 1678, missing from his House, and no news could be heard what was become of him, till Thursday following; at which time he was found Dead in a Ditch by Primrose-hill, with his own Sword through his Body, and (as the Godly Party pretends) his Pocket-Book taken from him, but his Money and Rings left him; which gave countenance to the taking of it for an Act of Revenge, or some spightful Malice, and not any unlawful desire of Lucre. This passed immediately for a horrible Murder, and a resolution was taken from the very beginning, that it should be made a Popish Exploit; for one while it was in Arundel-House, another while in my Lord Bellasis's Cellar; but Somerset-House was pitched upon at last, to bring the Queen into the Plot, and for the greater solemnity of the Villains.

His Majesty being then at Newmarket, caused, upon his return, a Proclamation to be published the Twentieth of October, for the discovery of the inhumane Murther; promising a Reward of five hundred Pounds to any that should discover the Murtherers, or any of them; and if the Discoverer proved to be one of the Malefactors, not only his Pardon, but likewise the promised Sum.

However, this Proclamation produced nothing at first, till the Parliament, according to the last Prorogation, met the One and Twentieth of October; when the King being informed that some who could give Information of the manner and circumstances of the Murther of

Sir

## CHARLES II.

Sir Edmundbury Godfrey, did forbear to do it out of fear of danger to their Persons: His Majesty emitted another Proclamation, promising on the Word of a King, not only the said Reward of five hundred Pounds, but such care for the security of the Discoverer, as he should in reason propose.

Upon these two Proclamations, up starts one Bedloe to pur in for a Discoverer, and for the Reward; a Fellow of base Birth and worse Manners, who having been a Foot-man or Groom, sometime served the Lord Bellasis, and for his Villanies having suffered hardship and want in many Prisons of England, turned afterwards a kind of Poast or Letter-Carrier, for those who thought fit to employ him beyond Seas; and was as proper a Colleague as could be sent out, to assist Oates in carrying on the Work. What his Discovery was, the Reader shall know afterwards, when we come to speak of the Tryal of those men that suffered for the Pretended Crime: In the mean time he had the Reward that was promised him, and was honoured now (as Oates had been before) with Guards for his security, accomodation and subsittance at his Majesty's charges in White-Hall. He was so notorious and so profligate a Villain, so known a Chear, that for the credit of the King's Evidence, he disguised his Name, took upon him the Title of a Man of War, and called himself Captain Bedloe.

For encouragement and direction of the Zeal of the Parliament, in defeating the effects of this horrid Conspiracy, the Lord Chamberlain in a Speech at the opening of the Session, amongst other things told them, *That there was a strange concurrence of ill Accidents at that time; that it was not to be wondered at, if some honest and good men began to be troubled, and have thoughtful hearts; yet that which is infinitely to be lamented, is that malicious men too begin to work upon this occasion, and are in no small hopes to raise a storm that nothing shall be able to allay.* An expression that came but little short of a Prophecie, as in the sequel will appear.

The House of Commons, accordingly having examin-

F f 3

ned

ned what the Evidence of the Plot had to say, and appeared therewith satisfied, especially as matters were palliated, and Mis-represented, sent for the Lord Chief Justice *Scroggs*, whom they desired to grant a Warrant for the Apprehension of the Earl of *Powis*, Viscount *Stafford*, the Lord *Arundel* of *Warder*, the Lord *Peters*, and the Lord *Bellasis*; who, being then accused before them as Agents in the Plot, were by virtue of that Warrant committed; though the Lord Viscount *Stafford* and Lord *Peters*, complained of it in the House of Lords.

Soon after this, upon several Addresses from the two Houses of Parliament, a Proclamation was published for a general Fast throughout the whole Kingdom, to be observed the Thirteenth of November, for imploring the Mercy of Almighty God upon his Majesty's Royal Person, and in him upon all his Subjects; and that God would bring to light more and more all secret Machinations against his Majesty and the whole Kingdom: Which day of Humiliation was accordingly observed throughout all *England*; and a Form of Prayer, composed and published for that purpose: Which was followed with several other Proclamations and Orders of Council, for the discovering and disabling of Popish Recusants: The first, of the Thirtieth of October, commanding all Popish Recusants, or so reputed, to depart from the Cities of *London* and *Westminster*, and all other places within Ten Miles of the same; was seconded by an Order of Council, on the Second of November, wherein his Majesty promised a Reward of Twenty Pounds to those that should discover any Officer or Souldier of his Majesty's Guards, who having formerly taken the Oaths of Allegiance, Supremacie, and the Test, had since been perverted, or should hereafter be perverted to the Romish Religion. All Popish Recusants were besides confined within Five Miles of their respective Dwellings; and a Reward of Twenty Pounds promised to be presently paid to any that should Discover and cause to be Apprehended any Popish Priest or Jesuit, except those that were Priviledged by the Law of the Land,

or

or that of Nations, as serving the Queen or Foreign Ministers.

None that were accused of the Plot came to Tryal till November the Twenty Seventh, that *Edward Coleman* Esquire, who had been Secretary to the Duchess of York, was brought to Tryal at the King's Bench-Bar for High Treason, in Consipiring the Death of the King, Subverting his Government, and Exterminating the True Protestant Religion. The Evidence against him were *Oates*, *Bedloe*, and Letters under his own Hand; *Oates* and *Bedloe* swore against him, as against most of the others that were accused, accused Designs of Consipiring the Death, and encouraging the Murther of his Majesty, and other attempts for introducing Popery, and subverting the Established Religion; whilst his Letters produced in Court, made out no more against him but a Plot which all men that think their own Religion the best, have of propagating it for the good of their Neighbours, as they think; but not at all by the means *Oates* and *Bedloe* accused him of. For this Crime he was found Guilty, Condemned, and on the Third of December following, Executed as a Traitor at Tyburn. The Passions of the People at that time had so blinded their Eyes, and taken away their Senses, that they could neither see Contradictions, nor understand Reason.

Though this, and the Flaim of Sir *Edmundbury Godfrey*'s being Murthered by the Papists, might seem Pillars to support the credibility of the Plot, without need of any more Evidence; yet his Majesty at the humble Request of the Lords Spiritual and Temporal, was pleased by Proclamation to declare, " That if any Person or Persons should before the 25th day of December following, make any further Discovery of the horrid Design against his Majesty's Sacred Person and Government; he or they so discovering, should not onely have the Reward of two hundred Pounds for every such Discovery, upon due proof thereof, but if guilty of the said Design, or otherwise of concealing it, they should have his Majesty's Pardon. So that Reward, impunity, and other mo-

tives, brought in then, and at several times thereafter, many other Witnesses; as *Stephen Dugdale*, who had been a considerable Servant to the Lord *Aston*, and as such was esteemed a man of better Reputation; though indeed, he was no honester than the former two: One *Smith* who had been a Priest of the Church of *Rome*, and wrote a Narrative of the Plot; *Thomas Dangerfield*, a Villanous and Perjured Wretch, with several others, whose names are here omitted, as the rest are inserted, out of the order of their appearance, for Brevity's sake. Nay, many fresh Witnesses came also over to prove the extent of the Plot; but these having disgraced both themselves and their Cause, were dismissed, some home to their own Country, and the rest to their Shifts.

The reality of the Plot being thus colour'd and exposed, his Majesty readily complied with his Parliament in any thing that was proper and convenient for disappointing it; and accordingly, November the Thirtieth, he gave his Royal Assent to an Act for Disabling any Papist to sit in either House of Parliament; in which a Test was prescribed, and the Members of both Houses commanded to take the Oaths of Supremacy and Allegiance. But his Majesty refused a Bill tendered unto him, entituled, *An Act for Preserving the Peace of the Kingdom, by raising the Malitia and continuing them in Duty for Two and Forty Days*; and gave his reason for it, That that would put the Malitia for so many days out of his Power, which he would not have consented to, if it had been but for half an hour: And yet he was graciously pleased, in compliance with the Opinion and Desire of the House of Commons, to consent to the Disbanding of an Army of Disciplined Men then on foot, who had been raised for the Preservation of *Flanders*. But though the Queen stood accused by *Oates* and *Bedloe*, and the House of Commons Addressed for her Removal; yet the prosecution of the Plot was now for some time suspended, by a clashing that happened betwixt the Earl of *Danby* and Mr. *Montague*, who had been Embassador in *France*, and was then a Member

of

of the House of Commons; which so altered the current of Affairs in the House, that they hardly minded any thing else but drawing up Articles of Empeachment against the said Earl, until the Thirtieth of December that the King Prorogued the Parliament to the Fourth of February following, which he afterward on the Twenty Fourth of January Dissolved by Proclamation, and caused a new one to be Summoned to meet at *Westminster* the Sixth of March, 1678.

The Courts of Justice, in the mean time, were not 1679. idle; for on the Seventeenth of December, 1678, three of *Oates's* Traytors, to wit, *William Ireland*, a Jesuit; *Thomas Pickering*, a Lay-Brother of the *Benedictin* Monks; and *John Grove*, an Ale-House-Keeper; were Arraigned at the *Old-Bayly*, and Convicted for Treason: *Ireland* in consulting with others about the destruction of the King, and subversion of Religion; and *Pickering* and *Groves* for attempting to Assassinate his Majesty; for which they were to have the Reward, *Groves* of 1500*l.* and *Pickering* of 30000 Masses, which was judged the Equivalent. The chief Evidence against them were *Oates*, *Bedloe*, and one who had been a Servant-Maid to *Groves*; but it is to be observed, that for the Evidence given by *Oates* in this Tryal, he was afterwards legally Convicted of Perjury; though *Bedloe* died before he could be called to an account for it. They had Sentence pronounced against them to be Drawn, Hanged, and Quartered; and accordingly January the Twenty Fourth, *Ireland* and *Groves* were Executed at *Tyburn*, and *Pickering* at the same place, May the Ninth, 1679.

February the Tenth, 1679, *Robert Green*, *Henry Berry*, and *Lawrence Hill*, three of those who were accused of the Murther of Sir *Edmundbury Godfrey*, were for the said Murther brought to their Tryal at the King's Bench-Bar. The main Evidence against them, were the above-named *Bedloe*, and one *Prance a Silver-Smith* in *Prince-street*; the first declaring that he had seen the dead Body; and the other confessing that he had had a hand

## CHARLES II.

hand in the Murther : Which in brief, was thus said to be committed : *Prance*, with the aforesaid *Green*, *Berry*, *Hill*, and some others, having laid their design before, and several times dogged Sir *Edmundbury Godfrey*; on Saturday night, the Twelfth of October, finding him in the *Strand* as he was returning home, upon a plausible pretext of keeping the Peace between two Gentlemen that were (as they made him believe) a quarrelling ; wheaded him into *Somerset-House*, and there with a twisted Handkerchif clapt about his Neck, some of them strangled him, whilst *Prance* and *Berry* watched at the Gates : His dead Body they lodged in *Somerset-House* till Wednesday following, and then carried it out in a *Sedan* as far as *Sohoe*, where they mounted the same on a Horse, and so conveyed it to the Ditch, leaving it there barbarously pierced through with a Sword, and the Sword sticking therein. Upon this Evidence they were found guilty, condemn'd and executed. And yet this discovery of the Murther, which imprinted so great a horrour on the minds of People, and for so long a time supported the Credibility of the Plot, was a meer Imposture, as *Prance* himself since confessed and retracted, when he was therefore convicted of Perjury : So that the Death of that Gentleman remains as yet such a Mystery, as Time, perhaps, may bring to light hereafter. But for *Prance* and *Bedibie*, the former was first falsly Sworn into the Murder himself, and then Swore as falsly against others to save his own Life ; but no clearer proof of the Perjury than their own contradictions.

And now the main business of the Nation, is Plotting for the Election of Members to represent them in the ensuing Parliament ; for it is to be minded, that though the late long Parliament was formidable to the restless Non-conformists, whilst they stily withheld Toleration, and every thing that could tend to the subversion of the Religion established ; yet when by long sitting, old and corrupt humours had been stirred, discontents amongst some members raised, and the places of the deceased, by the care and vigilance of the Disaffected, supplied ;

## CHARLES II.

plied ; so that these and other reasons, with the sudden alarm of the Plot, had divided the House of Commons into Factions, which were called the *Court* and *Country* Parties : The Phanaticks and Republicans thought the House well enough temper'd for their turn, and would have been content the King had not given them the trouble of bustling for a new one by Dissolving the old Parliament.

It was prodigious therefore to see with what harmony all the various Sects conspired together, and what tricks and arts were used to get a House of Commons, who, under a plausible shew of opposing Popery and Arbitrary Power, might, in effect, defeat the proceedings of the Government ; never heeding which of the many divided Interests had the better, provided the Church and State came to the worst by it. Fears and Jealousies were on all hands inculcated and magnified ; all honest Men, especially the Members of the late Parliament, who stood up for the standing Laws, traduced and calumniated, as Favourers of Popery, men of Arbitrary Principles, and Court-Flatterers ; the Candidates of the Faction extolled and consecrated for the Causē, in the Clubs and Meetings which were purposely kept, and which, like so many Members of the same individual Body, had the Spirits and Life of the Party diffused amongst them, by Preachers and other insinuating Agents, who scuddled about in continual circulation, and compassed Sea and Land to make Proselytes ; simple and well-meaning men, who had a right in Election, drawn over by menaces, reproaches, wheading, and allurements, and Knaves and Fools who had none, qualified by noise, clamour, stubbornness, and fraudulent Conveyances in order to make them *Free-holders* ; and on the days of Election, all these to be seen in Bodies and Squadrons in the Fields, with a Godly Teacher at their head to sanctifie the Tumult ; nothing being wanting but Drums and Trumpets, Arms and Artillery, to make them appear to be Forces mustered again for the *Good Old Cause*. By these and many other Artifices, too tedious to be rehearsed,

sed, notwithstanding all the opposition made by Worthy and Loyal Subjects, in many places they prevailed ; and the *Whiggs* getting the better of the *Tories*, (for by those names the Factious and Loyal Parties were then distinguished.) this and the succeeding Parliaments that were called, during the rest of this King's Reign, visibly favoured the Plotting Republicans, and disappointed all the Designs of the King, by powerful Factions in the House of Commons, that were too many for the Brave and Loyal Parties who could not resist number, and who must be excepted and pitied by the Reader, when he finds any ill thing mentioned of that House.

The time of the new Parliament's Sitting now drawing nigh, His Majesty commanded his Royal Highness the Duke of York to absent himself, because, (as he told the Parliament, at the opening of it) *He would not leave the malicious Men room to say, He had not removed all causes which could be pretended to influence him towards Popish Counsels.* And accordingly the Duke and Dutches parted from White-Hall for Holland, March the Third, and from thence went to reside at Bruxelles in Flanders.

But though the King might hope by this and many other condensations, to dispose the House of Commons to comply with his desires ; yet they were the same men still, if not worse ; for so soon as the usual Preliminaries were adjusted, they started the old Game, and again Impeached the Earl of *Danby*, whom they pursued so close, that he absenting and producing a Pardon, they Voted against the Validity of it, and drew up a Bill of Attainder against him ; but as it was just upon Passing he came in, and was committed to the Tower of London, where his Lordship continued a long time with the Popish Lords that were there before him. All things were carried on by a Majority in the Lower House, with Violence and a shameful Partiality ; the Zealous Church of England Men who opposed the insolent Practices of the Factious, being more enquired after than Papists, the pretended Plotters : And their Voting a Bill of Exclusion to be

be brought in against the Duke of York ; Addresses to be made to his Majesty, for removing from him the chief Ministers of State and best Counsellors that were about him, and all standing Forces in the Kingdom, (not excepting his Majesty's Guards) to be against Law, in a time of pretended Massacres and Invasions, shewed but too apparently what the Factious would have been at : So that the King perceiving that the busines of the prosecution of the Plot was industriously retarded by a Practice in the House of Commons, who by starting Scruples and Objections concerning the Earl of *Danby*, and the right of the Lords Spiritual in Voting in capital Crimes, purposely baffled all Proceedings : On the Twenty Seventh of May his Majesty Prorogued the Parliament to the Fourteenth day of August.

The news of the Prorogation of the Parliament being spread over the Nation, it was strange to see with what malitious insinuations the turbulent Promoters of the Factious, scared the unthinking People, as if it had been purposely done to put off the Tryals of the Popish Lords ; though it was, indeed, the Manage of some in the House of Commons themselves ; contrary to the desires of the King and Lords, that suspended them : Nay, the Nation was slyly made believe too, that the King and his Friends were in a wonderful manner Plotting for their own ends, against their own and the Kingdom's interest and safety. This the Factious did by whispering and talking in Clubs, Cabals, and Coffee-Houses, but more by licentious Scribbling ; for the Temporary Law for Regulating the Pres being expired, shoals of Pamphlets, News-Books, and lying Libels, like swarms of Locusts, flew about in all places, to infect and poison the minds of the simple ; which were openly justified by the Factious, as the most proper means, in these times of danger and confusion, for the People to declare their thoughts by : insomuch, that the contagion of this mischief spreading more and more, the King was obliged by a strict Proclamation of the Twenty First of October, 1679, to enjoyn all his Judges, Justices of the Peace, and other Magis-

## CHARLES II.

Magistrates to use all lawful endeavours for suppressing them : In pursuance whereof, several News Writers, Printers, and others, were legally Tried, Sentenced, Pilloried, Fined, and Imprisoned for dispersing scandalous and false Pamphlets ; which somewhat impaired the trade of the Hawkers and Newsmongers, that was mightily plied at that time.

Before the Prorogation of Parliament, news came from *Scotland* of the barbarous and inhumane Murther of the Archbishop of *St. Andrews*, Primate of that Kingdom, who on the Third of *May* was Assassinated by a desperate crew of bloud-thirsty Villains, within a few Miles of his own House, as he was returning home from *Edinburgh* in his Coach ; and immediately after a Rebellion broke out in *Scotland*, which was suppressed by the Defeat of the Rebels at *Borthel-bridge*, by the King's Forces under the Command of the Duke of *Monmouth* ; for which he had but little thanks from his own Admirers in *England*.

This Murther and Rebellion happening shortly after, the Earl of *Shaftsbury* had made a scandalous and canting Speech in the House of Lords, which was Printed, and afterwards Burnt by the common Hangman, under the name of, *A Noble Peer's Speech* ; wherein in the *S H U B O L E T H* of the Factious, which he could truely pronounce, he had cajoled the Brethren of *Scotland* : It was thought by wise men at that time, and it proved afterwards too true, that there was even then a Confederacy on foot, or at least projected betwixt the Disaffected of both Kingdoms.

And now the Parliament being for sometime dismissed, that the People may not forget the Plot : Five Jesuits and Priests are, *June* the Thirtieth, brought to a Tryal at the Sessions House in the *Old-Bayly* ; to wit, *Thomas White*, alias *Whitebread*, (Provincial of the Jesuits in *England*) *William Harcourt*, Rector of *London*, *John Fenwick*, Procurator for the Society, *John Gavan*, and *Anthony Turner*. Their Crime was High Treason, for Consulting the Death of the King, and the Subversion of

the

## CHARLES II.

the Protestant Religion (as is largely contained in the printed Narratives and Tryals) : And the Evidence against them, the Old Swearing Engines, *Oates*, *Bedloe*, *Dugdale*, and *Prance*. They were found guilty, but had not Sentence till next day, that

*Richard Langhorn* Esquire, an eminent Lawyer, was for the same Crime, and upon the same Evidence, principally Indited and found Guilty, and had with the other Five Sentence pronounced against them to be Drawn, Hang'd and Quartered ; which was executed accordingly, upon the Five Priests and Jesuits on the 20th of *June*, and upon Mr. *Langhorn* the 14th of *July* following ; who all, as every one else that Died for this pretended Plot, with their last Breath, and most solemn and dreadful Affeversations, protested their Innocence as to the Crimes charged upon them ; and indeed it is no weak reason to prove they were so, that one *William Smith*, sometime a Schoolmaster in *Islington*, and a principal Evidence that Swores *Oates* to be in *London*, when a Cloud of Witnesses and Persons of Quality too, asserted him to have been at *St. Omers* at that time the Consults, which he said he was present at in *London*, were held, afterward retracted all, and published a Narrative, giving account of the manner how he was drawn in to do so ill a thing, as to bear false Witness against his Neighbour. But in this, as well as in *Coleman's Case*, the contradictions of the Witnesses were enough to have damn'd the Evidence.

*July* the Twelfth, 1679, the Parliament was Dissolved by Proclamation, another being called to Sit at *Westminster* the Seventh day of *October* following ; and on the Eighteenth of *July* Sir *George Wakeman*, Physician to the Queen, *William Rumley*, *William Marshall*, and *James Corker*, Priests, were brought to their Tryals at the Sessions House in the *Old-Bayly*, upon an Indictment for Conspiring the Death of the King, and the Subversion of the Government, and the Protestant Religion : But the old Evidence being out of Credit, both with the Judges and Jury, they were brought in not Guilty ; and

and the Popish Plot seemed now so stunned, that had not the Tryal and Condemnation of the Unfortunate Viscount of *Stafford*, brought it to a little life again, it might in all probability have then expired; for no more suffered Death for that Plot, except those who died in Prison, but he and *Plunket*, the Titular Primate of *Ireland*; the rest, as *Roger Earl of Castlemain*, *Sir Thomas Gascoine*, *Mrs Cellier*, *Richard Tasborough Esquire*, and some others, having been at several times acquitted, the Lords in the Tower Bailed, and the other Priests who suffered, condemned for Treason by the Statute of the Twenty Seventh of Queen *Elizabeth*.

Whilst the King was this Summer at *Windsor*, he fell Sick of an Ague, which lasting longer than at first was expected, his Royal Highness, then at *Bruxelles*, had notice of it; and on the Second of September, unexpectedly came to *Windsor* to see him, protesting that after he had discharged that Duty, he would return again from whence he came, or go into any other place of the World his Majesty should think fit to send him to. He soon after went over to *Flanders* again, and having made a short stay there, returned with her Royal Highness and his whole Family into *England*.

In the mean time the Elections of Parliament men were carried on with more than usual Faction and Turmolt; which his Majesty being informed of, and knowing what kind of men he had to do with, put off the Sitting of the Parliament by several Prorogations till the Twenty First of October, 1680; hoping that during the interval of a whole Year, the ignorant Heats and Passions of some might be allayed, and the cunning Intrigues of Crafty Republicans and Phanaticks so discovered and loathed, that at next meeting the Parliament might comply with what he intended to condescend to for their satisfaction: But these delays incensed the Ring-leaders of the Faction, who in frequent Clubs and Cabals adjusted their measures, and concluded among themselves, that it was absolutely necessary for their Interests, that Parliamentary Stirs should be continued without

out cessation or interruption; so that in *London* and many other parts of the Kingdom, they framed Petitions, and so got, or at least Knavishly put whole Muster-rolls of Subscriptions, which the eminent Men of the Party presented to his Majesty for the speedy Sitting of the Parliament; not without hopes of prevailing by their importunity and numbers: And though the King publickly disliked such Petitioning, and commanded all his loving Subjects to forbear it, as a thing contrary to Law; yet the restles and perverse Dissenters continued to importune him in that manner, till they found themselves opposed by the Sober and Loyal Societies and Corporations of the Nation, who Addressed to his Majesty, and publickly testified their dislike and abhorrence of any such Seditious and Unjustifiable Proceedings.

However, least any shew of favour to those who were suspected of Popery, or accused of the Popish Plot, so called, might encourage the insolencie of the Faction, his Majesty sent his Royal Brother with his Dutches and Family to *Scotland* by Land in the beginning of Winter, where they staid, till being again sent for, they returned by Sea, and after a tedious and dangerous Voyage, arrived at *Deptford* on the Twenty Fourth of February, 1679.

The Countess of *Powis* also being on the Fourth of November, 1679, falsly and impudently accused before the King and Council, by *Thomas Dangerfield*, a flagitious Miscreant, of several Treasonable Practices, and of having had a hand in a Design of bringing the Protestants into a suspicion of being the Plotters: Which was, indeed, a cunning Sham of some of the Factious, and called by the name of the *Meal-Tub-Plot*; she was committed Prisoner to the Tower.

The generality of the Faction had for a long time eyed the Duke of *Monmouth* as a fit Person to head a Party, and consequently had flattered and cajoaled him into a better opinion of himself and his interest, than was fit for him to have entertained; but from the time that he had appeared so extraordinarily Zealous in dis-

covering and prosecuting the *Popish Plot*, and that *Shaftesbury*, the *Achitophel* of the common Cause, had in an August Assembly pronounced him *Worthy to be a Prince*, they flew at higher matters, and nothing less would serve them than to have him Heir Apparent of the Crown; raising for that end, an impudent lying Rumour of a Black-Box which Sir *Gilbert Gerard* was said either to have in custody, or to have seen, containing a Writing that did impart a Marriage, or contract of Marriage betwixt the King and the Duke of *Monmouth's Mother*. This scandalous falsehood so confidently reported, moved the King on the Twenty Sixth of April, 1680, to call an extraordinary Council, before which Sir *Gilbert Gerard* appearing and discovering upon Oath, that he knew any thing of such a Box or Writing: His Majesty to prevent the bad consequences of that bold Calumny, ordered a solemn Declaration which he then made, and which referred to several former Declarations of his never being Married to the Duke of *Monmouth's Mother*, to be printed and published, and in June following, commanded the said Duke to withdraw, and for some time reside beyond Sea.

The Duke seemed to obey, and went abroad; but not long after came privately over again, and made his entry into *London* in the Night-time, where his Friends, who had intelligence of it, received him joyfully with ringing of Bells and Bonfires; not without some insolencies offered, even to Persons of Quality: whereupon he was removed from all Offices and places of Trust; however, in January following, the fond Commons Voted, first, That it was done by the influence of the Duke of *York*; and then, That an Address should be made to his Majesty for Restoring his Grace the Duke of *Monmouth* to what had been taken from him.

The time of the Sitting of Parliament, which was the Twenty First of October, 1680, now approaching, the King was so indulgent to the Fears which the People were said still to retain of the damnable Popish Plot, that his Royal Highness being now in *Scotland*, his Ma-

jesty

jesty published a Proclamation, commanding all Papists, or reputed Papists, to depart from the Cities of *London* and *Westminster*, and from within ten Miles of the same. And in his Speech at the opening of the Parliament, recommended to them to pursue the further Examination of the Plot, with a strict and impartial Inquiry. But in what manner a Factious Medly in this House of Commons testified their zeal for the King's Service, and aversion to Plotting? the following short account of some of their many odd proceedings will make apparent.

In the first place, therefore, after a Speaker had been chosen and approved of, and the reality of the Popish Plot again asserted by a Vote; they resolve that the Petitioning of Subjects for the Calling and Sitting of Parliaments was so much their undoubted Right, *That to traduce such Petitioning as a violation of Duty, and to represent it to his Majesty as Tumultuous and Seditious, was to betray the Liberty of the Subject, and contributed to the Design of Subverting the Ancient Legal Constitutions of this Kingdom, and introducing Arbitrary Power.* And accordingly they order a Committee to be appointed to Enquire of all such Persons as have offended against the Right of the Subjects: Which was done with a witness when any of the Loyal Addressers, whom they called Abhorers, was brought before them.

Having then Complimented the King with an Address, declaring their Resolution to Preserve and Support the King's Person and Government, and the Protestant Religion at home and abroad. That they might show they were not afraid to act above-board, and that the whole Nation might judge of their Proceedings, they Pass a Vote, *That the Votes of the House should be Printed.* And presently these came abroad: *That the Duke of York's being a Papist, and the hopes of his coming to the Crown, hath given the greatest Countenance and Encouragement to the present Designs and Conspiracies against the King and Protestant Religion.* Whereupon, Resolved, first, that in Defence of the King's Person and Government, and the Protestant Religion, this House doth declare;

G g 2

## CHARLES II.

clare, That they will stand by his Majesty with thier Lives and Fortunes; and that if his Majesty shall come by any Violent Death, (which God forbid) they will Revenge it to the uttermost upon the Papists: And then, Resolved, That a Bill be brought in to Disable the Duke of York to Inherit the Imperial Crown of this Realm. Which was accordingly done and Pass'd; and afterwards carried up by the Lord Russell to the House of Lords; but there rejected.

Next they resolve with a Nemeine Contradicente, That a Bill be brought in for the better Uniting of all his Majesty's Subjects. Which was soon after seconded by a Resolution: That it is the Opinion of this House, that the Acts of Parliament made in the Reign of Queen Elizabeth and King James, against Popish Recusants, ought not to be extended against Protestant Dissenters. Nor was this all; for they Ordred a Committee to be appointed to prepare and bring in a Bill for repealing of all, or any part of the Act of Parliament made in the Thirty Fifth Year of the Reign of Queen Elizabeth. And as if that had not been sufficient, they further Resolved, That a Bill be brought in for an Association of all his Majesty's Protestant Subjects for the safety of his Majesty's Person, the defence of the Protestant Religion, and the preservation of his Majesty's Protestant Subjects, against all Invasions and Oppositions whatsoever, and for preventing the Duke of York or any Papist from succeeding to the Crown. This was no better than a Solemn League and Covenant; for the Protestant Religion in both was equally indefinite and unlimited: But because they had no reason to expect that this Bill could ever Pass into an Act, they resolved to hearten all the Factious by this Vote, That it is the Opinion of this House, that the prosecution of Protestant Dissenters upon the Penal Laws, is at this time grievous to the Subject; a weaking of the Protestant Interests; and encouragement to Popery; and dangerous to the Peace of the Kingdom.

Whilst Votes and Addresses of this nature flew in Print about the Town and Country, it was thought fit

the

## CHARLES II.

the Popish Plot should be more effectually reviv'd than by words and talk; and therefore on the Thirtieth of November, William Viscount Stafford was brought to Tryal before his Peers in Westminster-Hall, where after a Prosecution and Defence of Seven Days continuance, managed by a Committee of the House of Commons as Prosecutors, and the Viscount singly as Prisoner; and the chief Evidence against him being infamous Oates, Dugdale, and one Turberville, he was found guilty of High Treason by the plurality of the Voices of his Peers, accordingly received Sentence, and was executed on Tower-hill by severing his Head from his Body.

The Town and Garrison of Tangier, in Africa, had for some time been staitly Besieged by the Moors, and for want of necessary Succours and Supplies, in great danger of being lost; which made the King by reiterated Addresses desire a speedy supply of Money from the Parliament for the relief of it: But though this was a place which the preceeding Parliament, of which most of the present House of Commons had been Members, judged to be of so great importance, that a Bill was then ordered to be brought in for Annexing Tangier to the Imperial Crown of England; and a Vote passed, That those who did Advise his Majesty to part with Tangier to any forreign Prince or State, or were instrumental therein, ought to be accounted Enemies to the King and Kingdom. Yet all the King could now procure, was, with some pretty strange Resolves of the House, as good as a flat Refusal; for they Resolved, That it was the Opinion of the House, That there is no security or safety for the Protestant Religion, the King's Life, or the well-constituted and established Government of this Kingdom, without passing a Bill for Disabling James Duke of York to inherit the Imperial Crown of England and Ireland, and the Dominions and Territories thereunto belonging; and to rely upon any other means or remedies, without such a Bill, is not only insufficient but dangerous.

And then Resolved, That his Majesty in his last Message

## CHARLES II.

sage, having assured this House of his readiness to concur in all other means for the Preservation of the Protestant Religion: This House doth declare, That until a Bill be likewise passed for Excluding the Duke of York, this House cannot give any Supply to his Majesty, without danger to his Majesty's Person, extreme hazard to the Protestant Religion, and unfaithfulness to those by whom this House is trusted. All whom the House also fancied to have Advis'd his Majesty to insit upon an Opinion against the Bill for Excluding the Duke of York, they Voted to be Promoters of Popery, and Enemies to the King and Kingdom; and Addressed to his Majesty that some of them should be removed from his Presence, Councils, and all places of Trust: They had also ordered Impeachments to be drawn against Sir *William Scroggs*, Chief Justice of the Court of King's Bench; Sir *Francis North*, Chief Justice of the Court of Common-Pleas; Sir *Thomas Jones*, one of the Justices of the King's Bench; and Sir *Richard Weston*, one of the Barrons of the Exchequer: But why they actually Impeached Sir *William Scroggs* and no more, and Addressed onely to the King for the Removal of some of those whom they had Voted to be Promoters of Popery, and Enemies to the King and Kingdom, is a Riddle, and the Reader must make on't what he can.

A Horrid and Treasonable Popish Plot and Conspiracy was now Voted to have been on foot a long time also in *Ireland*, for Massacreing the *English*, and Subverting the Protestant Religion, and Established Government: Whereupon the Earl of *Tyrone* was Impeached of High Treason, upon Information of some *Irish* Evidence, who were supplied with Money, and esteemed, so long as their carriage disgraced not their Evidence; but then were fairly dismissed, as has been said before.

But whilst the King was in so great trouble's and perplexities amid't Plots at home, and in danger, for want of Money, of losing *Tangier*, a place abroad, then thought very considerable; Will Posterity believe that the House of Commons durst Resolve, That whosoever should

## CHARLES II.

should hereafter Lend, or cause to be Lent, by way of Advance, any Money upon the Branches of the King's Revenue, arising by Customs, Excise, or Hearth-Money, shall be adjudged to hinder the Sitting of Parliaments, and shall be Responsable for the same in Parliament: And

Resolve, That whosoever shall Accept or Buy any Tally of Anticipation upon any part of the King's Revenue; or whosoever shall Pay such Tally hereafter to be Struck, shall be adjudged to hinder the Sittings of Parliaments, and shall be Responsable therefore in Parliament?

These amongst many other strange Votes and Addresses of the House of Commons are here inserted, contrary to the Method and Brevity of this Abridgement, that the impartial Reader may judge whether the Undutifulness of the Faction was more notorious, or the Patience and Forbearance of the King more wonderful; who at length finding that whatever he desired or expected, from them, was hitherto, and like to be for the future frustrated by affected scruples, delays, and elusions, that they might have leisure under pretext of a Parliamentary Priviledge, to carry on their own ill ends; and that in an arbitrary manner they abused the pretended priviledges of the House, to the oppression of their fellow Subjects, who for their Loyalty to the King, and love to the Established Government, were called *Abhorers*, Papists in *Masquerade*, and what not? and therefore were sent for by Messengers, put into custody and threatened; His Majesty to put a stop to all these irregularities, Prorogued them to the 20th of January, 1680. and soon after Dissolved the Parliament by Proclamation, appointing another to meet at *Oxford* in March following.

But the Distemper of the Nation was now too deeply rooted, to be cured by Lenitives, or the usual methodical Remedies. The same Members, (for most part) of the last, were with the same or greater tumult and noise chosen again for this new Parliament; and at their Meeting in *Oxford* on the Twenty First of March, 1681, their former Speaker Mr. *Williams*, Recorder of *Chester*,

ster, and a Counsellour in Gray's Inn, in petulant Rhetorick of the Bar, pertly told his Majesty, *That the House of Commons were no Changelings, having again chosen him their Speaker.* So that from the first the King had no hopes of any good from their Sitting; however, for some days he had the patience to try how their Pulse would beat; but finding that with greater violence they offered at things more unwarrantable than had been attempted before; after a Week's Sitting, he suddenly Dissolved them, *March the Twenty Eighth, 1681;* and on the Eighth of April following, Ordered in Council his Declaration to all his loving Subjects, touching the causes and reasons that moved him to Dissolve the two last Parliaments, to be Published, Printed, and Read in all Churches and Chappels throughout the Kingdom, which was accordingly done.

It is not to be imagined how much this sudden Dissolution of the Parliament stirred the humours, and discovered the measures of the Factious: The extraordinary patience wherewith they had been suffered for so long time to go on in their Seditious Practices, was by them interpreted to be no less than Fear or Connivance in the Government; and therefore they expected that by the Sitting of this Parliament, their active Friends, especially in the Lower House, might either have wrested from Authority, by the Repealing of the Penal Laws, a legal Toleration that might have secured them in pursuing their ends, or have had time and leisure enough to have strengthened the Party by a powerful Combination; such as in case of a Dissolution of Parliament, might have given them a popular Colour of overturning the Government, under pretext of being Associated for the safety and preservation of his Majesty's Person, Religion, and Laws. But their hopes this way being now wholly defeated, they return again to their old tricks and devices: Their Throats were now certainly to be Cut, their Religion altered, and their Estates at the mercy of Arbitrary Power and Tyranny: Insomuch, that an eminent Demagogue in

the

the City, deplored the condition of the Times, was heard gravely to say, That things were now brought to such a state, *That honest Men when they went to Bed, were not sure but that they might rise again with their Throats Cut:* Whereby it may appear how fearful and unavoidable the danger was represented to be to the People at that time: However, one way they had still left to buoy up their Spirits, till they might hit upon better expedients; and that was to baffle Justice under a colour of Law.

It had been the great endeavour of the Factious in London (especially since the Plotting began) to get men of their own Principles chosen Magistrates; which the Loyal Worthy Citizzens, who, minding nothing but their own Affairs, and to live Peaceably under a Happy Government, did not at first oppose, as not foreseeing the danger of it, or, perhaps, because the Persons came to be chosen in course: And such were the two Sheriffs of London and Middlesex for part of this Year, Cornish and Bethel, who agreed in nothing but Factio-

These had been promoted purposely the Year before, that if the Law should take notice of the notorious and treasonable Practices, which they well knew would be acted by many of their Party, and any brought to Tryal for them in London, they might by the help of their Under-Sheriffs, pack such Juries as should not scruple at Oaths and Duty to help their Friends at a dead lift. And, indeed, a great many men who pretended to be of tender Consciences, took to themselves a strange Latitude at this time, and bogled not at all at Oaths and Sacraments, which could qualify them for places wherein they might endeavour the Subversion of the Established Government, that they had Sworn to Maintain and Support.

Several instances of notorious Partiality in the London Juries appeared this year; but two particularly which deserve to be named: The first of one Colledge, a Joyner by Trade, and commonly called The Protestant Joyner,

*Foyner*, a Turbulent and Factious Enthusiast, who being Indicted of High Treason, and a Bill accordingly delivered to the Grand Jury of *London*, which was Sworn to by *Dugdale* and *Smith*, Evidences of great Credit against those who were Accused of the Popish Plot, could not be brought to a fair Tryal for it in *London*, because the Jury shamefully brought in the Bill *Ignoramus*. Nevertheless, a Bill being brought in against him before the Grand Jury at the Assizes of *Oxford*, where part of his Treason had been spoken and acted; it was found by them, upon the same Evidence; and he being in *August* tried for the same, notwithstanding the bold efforts of *Oates* and others, who went on purpose to Vouch for the Honesty of the Man, he was Condemned and Executed at *Oxford*.

An other and more remarkable instance was in the Case of the Earl of *Shaftsbury*, called commonly by his Admirers, *The Protestant Earl*: He had been committed to the Tower of *London* for High Treason, and a Bill of Indictment was accordingly brought in against him, November the Fourth, before all the Judges of *England*, who then sat with the Mayor and Aldermen of the City, at the Sessions House in the *Old-Bayley*; but a Grand Jury Empanelled by influence of *Pilkington* and *Shute*, the then Sheriffs, of which Sir *Samuel Barnadiston* was Foreman, refused obstinately to find the Bill, though the Treason therein contained was openly Sworn to by *Turbeville* and *Smith*, both mighty honest men when the Tables were turned, and an original Draught of a Treasonable and an Accursed Association, which was seized amongst the Earl's Papers, produced in Court. No sooner came the News of the *Ignoramus* to the Ears of the numerous Rabble that waited about the Sessions House, but presently they raised a shout of Triumph, and broke out into so great Insolencies, that the King's Witnesses being in danger of their Lives from them, the Sheriffs, as they had been commanded by the Judges, were forced to wait upon them till they were in Safety: Bonfires were made by the Factious to express their great

great Satisfaction that their Godly Protector was out of Danger; and at them, instead of *God save the King*, nothing was to be heard amongst the Rout, but loud shouts of a *Monmouth*, a *Shaftsbury*: In which Chorus, if honest men who accidentally past that way, did not freely joyn, they were instantly set upon and abused by the Rabble.

These *Ignoramusses*, in the mean time, opened the Eyes of all Honest and Loyal men, and fully convinced them who were the Enemies of the Government, and the Plotters most to be feared: So that Addresses from all parts were presented to his Majesty, thanking him for his gracious Declaration, and expressing their just abhorrence of all Treasonable and Seditious Associations; such as that which was found amongst the Papers of the Earl of *Shaftsbury*.

The Parliament which Sate also in *Scotland*, July the Twenty Eighth, under the Direction of the Duke of *York*, his Majesty's Commissioner there, had shewn very seasonable Loyalty in Enacting several Laws, and appointing a Test for securing the Government Established both in Church and State, and for Asserting the Unalterable Right of Succession to the Imperial Crown of that Kingdom: Points that were too apparently struck at by Disloyal and Factious Parties at that time in *England*. They had likewise in their Answer to his Majesty's Letter, which was Read to them at the opening of their Sessions, with all expressions of Duty and Loyalty, acknowledged the Honour his Majesty had been graciously pleased to do them, by sending his Royal Brother to Preside as High Commissioner amongst them; and how sensible the whole Kingdom was of the Advantages they received from his extraordinary Care and Conduct. But how acceptable this was to the Stubbourn and Implacable Party here, may appear in that about the latter end of this year, A rude and barbarous Hand did spightfully cut and disfigure his Royal Highness's Picture, which, with his Majesty's, was excellently well done in length, and hung at the upper end

end of *Guild-hall*; and, without doubt, would have done as much or more to his Royal Person, had it been as easy and safe to have approached him. This Villainous Action extremely displeased the Loyal Lord Mayor and Court of Aldermen of *London*, who thereupon published a Declaration, wherein they protested their deep Resentment of so base an Act, and promised a Reward of Five Hundred Pounds, besides the Thanks of the City, to any that should discover the Author of it. The Author was never discovered; however, his Royal Highness was so well satisfied with the Lord Mayor and Court of Aldermen, for their Respect, and the Justice they had shewn to his Cause, that he sent a Gentleman expressly from *Scotland*, to Complement and Thank them for it in his Name.

1682.

On the Twelfth of *February* this Year, 1682, there happened a very sad Accident in this manner: *Thomas Thynn* of *Longleat Esquire*, a Gentleman of a great Estate, (which he had endeavoured to increase by the Marriage of the Countess Dowager of *Ogle*, sole Daughter and Heir to the last Earl of *Northumberland*, of the Family of *Percy*, who, nevertheless, upon some Discontent, had privately withdrawn into *Holland*, and left her Husband;) was set upon in his Coach near the *Hay-Market*, by three *Ruffians*, of whom one firing a Blunderbuss at him, discharged two brace of Bullets into his Belly; whereof he Died soon after. The Murderers were *Christopher Vratz*, *George Boroski*, and *John Stern*, all three *Forraigners* and Dependants on *Count Cimings-mark*, a *Swedish* Lord, who had incited them to the Attempt: They were all Apprehended, the three *Ruffians* in Town, and the Count in Disguise at *Gravesend*, endeavouring to make his Escape beyond Sea; and being brought to a Tryal for the Murther, the principal Agents were Condemned to be Hang'd, but *Cimings-mark* was brought in not Guilty by his Jury: They were accordingly Executed in the *Pall-Mall*, near to the place where they had committed the Fact, and *Boroski*, a *Pole*, who fired the Blunderbuss, was afterwards Hang'd up in *Chains* at *Mile-End*.

Nor

Not long after another unexpected Accident was like to have occasioned a far more considerable los to the Kingdom: His Royal Highness, the Duke, set Sail from *Scotland* in a *Yaught*, without any other Vessels to attend him, and after a very dangerous Passage, having Landed at *Yarmouth*, on the Tenth of *March*, 1682, came to wait on the King at *Newmarket*; some short stay he made in *England*, and then, in the beginning of *May* following, Embarked in the *Gloster Frigate*, attended with several Persons of Quality, and some other Ships and *Yaughts*, and set Sail for *Scotland*, with design to bring his Duchess and Family from thence; the Affairs of that Kingdom requiring his Presence no longer; but when he was out at Sea, and off of *Yarmouth Roads*, the Ship wherein he was, early in the Morning, struck upon the *Lemon-Ore Sands*, though the Weather was fair, and one *Aires*, reckoned the best *Coaster* in *England*, his Pilot: His Royal Highness being awaked out of Sleep, and perceiving the danger, staid as long as he could safely on Board still, until, having notice given him, that there was above Seven Foot Water in the Hold, he put off in his Pinace, with some Persons of Quality, and saved himself on Board of a *Yaught*; where he had not long been, before, to his unexpressible sorrow, he saw the *Frigat* sink to the bottom; in which above an Hundred and Fifty Persons perished, and some of them Gentlemen of Quality, as the Earl of *Roxborough*, in *Scotland*, the Lord *Obryan*, the Laird of *Hopton*, Lieutenant *Hide*, Brother to the Earl of *Clarendon*, and others: He afterward arrived safely in *Scotland*; and on the Twenty Seventh of the same Month of *May*, with his Duchess and the Lady *Ann* his Daughter, returned to *White-hall*.

It is commonly found to be true, that when the Estates of a good Conscience cannot, the Fear of Restraint and Punishment will keep those who are obnoxious to the Laws, from wilful perverting of Justice: But the case was otherwise with the Factious of these times, especially in *London*, where by the arbitrary and corrupt Practices

## CHARLES II.

Practices of Juries, no Justice could be had against any man who was known to be a Favourer of the Faction, nor for those who maintained their Loyalty, and stood firm to the Government. This visibly appeared by the Conduct of the Earl of Shaftesbury, who let fall two Actions, one of *Scandalum Magnum*, and the other of *Conspiracie*: The first against one Cradock, a Loyal Citizen of *London*; and the other against Mr. Graham, Principal of *Clifford's Inn*; because the Court of *King's Bench* had ordered them to be Tried by a Jury taken out of any County of *England*, but not in *London*; which he refused to submit to. *Wilmore* also, the Foreman of *Colledge's Ignoramus* Jury, being Indicted in *London* for Man-Stealing, was repaid with an *Ignoramus*, and the Bill not found; and yet for the same Fact he was afterwards Tried at the *King's Bench*, and by a *Kentish* Jury found Guilty. One *Harris* also, in like manner, being Tried in *Guild-hall* for Dispersing a most infamous and dangerous Libel; though the Evidence was full, and the Direction of the Court clear against him, yet he was brought in not Guilty. These and several other such insufferable Proceedings of the Factious in the City, moved the King to order a *Quo Warranto* to be brought against the City of *London*, of which more hereafter.

And now the Twenty Fourth of June, 1682, was come, the usual Day for Election of the Sheriffs of *London* and *Middlesex*, and cretical time when the Factious of all Parties resolved to unite their Force to have the Election go on their way, as for some years past it had done, and get such Sheriffs chosen, as by the former Methods of making Juries, might Protect them from the Prosecution of the Law. The Lord Mayor had Summoned the several Companies of *London* to meet at the *Guild-Hall* for the Confirmation of the Honourable *Dudley North* Esquire, (whom, according to the Ancient Custom and Priviledge of the Mayors of the City, he had Nominated Sheriff, by Drinking to him at the *Bridge-Feast*) and for Chusing of any other to be

his

## CHARLES II.

his Colleague. Accordingly the Companies did meet, and made a very numerous Assembly; but the design of the Phanaticks was to lay aside the Lord Mayor's Election of *North*, being a Gentleman not at all for their turn; and to proceed to the Election of two, out of four proposed; to wit, *North* and *Box* on the one side, and *Papillion* and *Dubois* on the other: It was to no purpose to represent to this head-strong *Mobile*, that the Lord Mayor's Right of chusing a Sheriff in that manner, was an ancient Priviledge of the Chair, and an Honour to the City, and that it had been put in practice by Sir *Patience Ward*, Lord Mayor the year before, when upon the like occasion he Drank to *Pilkington*, who was then made Sheriff Elect; for they went on in their own way, and their zeal for the grand Interest of the Faction, being spurred on, by their angry Teachers, and Ringleaders, led on by the two Sheriffs, and countenanced by the Presence of some Lords and eminent men of the Party; they valued the Dignity of the Court, Reputation of the Assembly, the Gravity and Decency of the Livery-Gown and Hood they appeared in, as little as the Awe of the Government; and with Multitude and Tumult, Clamour and Noise, not sparing Elbows to keep back, nor Tongues to revile and bespatter, such as approached to oppose them; fell to Polling, with such notorious Partiality, for their two beloved Candidates, *Papillion* and *Dubois*, that the Lord Mayor, perceiving the Disorder, Adjourned the Court to another day, and departed out of the Hall; but not without Indignities and Assaults from the rude Hands of some of the incensed Zealots, who notwithstanding the Adjournment, staid still with their Sheriffs, and Pollled on till Night.

For this Riotous Proceeding the two Sheriffs, *Pilkington* and *Shute*, were by the King and Council committed to the Tower of *London*, where they lay from Monday to Friday, that by a *Habens Corpus* they were brought to the *King's Bench Bar*, and their Bailecd out. After their enlargement they still persisted in their former

## CHARLES II.

mer Courses, and there having been several Halls about this Busines of Chusing Sheriffs, held at several times, the Factious Citizens, right or wrong, would needs have *Papillion* and *Dubois* to be Sheriffs for the ensuing year; and the present Sheriffs were as ready to declare the Election good and lawful; but, notwithstanding all their efforts, the Lord Mayor adhering to his right of Nominating one Sheriff, and admitting of a Pole for the other, *Box*, *Papillion* and *Dubois* Polled for it, and *Box* having the greater number of Votes in his Lordship's Books, he declared *North* and *Box* duly Elected Sheriffs for the next year. The Factious, however, Petitioned the Court of Aldermen, That *Papillion* and *Dubois* might be called forth to give Bond to Serve as Sheriffs for the next year: But they had no Answer from that Loyal Court, but in general terms, That they would maintain the Rights and Priviledges of the Chair and whole City; and that they would take care that such as were lawfully Elected, should take upon them the Office of Sheriffs; referring the matter to Law if the Petitioners thought they did otherwise.

All the bustle was not yet over, for in September following, a fresh struggle happened, first about Chusing a Sheriff in place of Mr. *Box*, who had Fined; and then on *Michaelmas* Day about the Election of a Lord Mayor: When the Election of another Sheriff was proposed, it was rejected by the Factious, who cried out No *North*, no *North*, no Election: Nevertheless, the Lord Mayor proceeded to one, which by the majority of the Voices of the Honest and Loyal Citizens, fell upon *Peter Rich* Esquire, who was thereupon declared Sheriff, and the Court Dissolved; but notwithstanding that, the two present Sheriffs staid still with their Party, and again confirmed their former Choice, declaring *Papillion* and *Dubois* Sheriffs Elect: However, the Spirit and Metal of the Faction appeared far more conspicuous on *Michaelmas* day, when without any respect to Justice, and the ancient and constant Custom of the City in Chusing

## CHARLES II.

Chusing him to be Lord Mayor who came next in course; they not onely opposed Sir *William Pritchard*, whose turn it was, by letting up *Gould* of far later standing, and *Cornish* also who had been Sheriff but the year before, against him, but were very like also to have put him by, had it not been detected, that a great many had Voted for *Gould* who had no right to do so, whose names being struck out, the Election went as it ought to do in course, and by very small odds in Voices, rested upon Sir *William Pritchard*.

It was no small blow to the Factious that the Magistracy of *London* was at length, after much ado, settled again in the hands of Men of Integrity and known Loyalty; and as an instance of this, the Earl of *Shaftesbury*, whose Authority was so great amongst all sorts of Dissenters, that he thought the Government too weak to Resist him, and bragged to his Confidants, That he would leisurely Walk his Majesty out of his Dominions; being conscious of his own Treasonable Practices, and out of hopes of Protection from other *Ignoramus* Juries, was glad, soon after the instalment of the new Magistrates, to run as fast as he could, and make his escape into *Holland*, where, not long after, he Died in Disgrace and Exile: And, indeed, it was high time for him then to be gone, seeing he and his Indefatigable Party had before that failed in the accomplishment of a far more horrid and villainous Project for undoing the Government, that could not long be kept hid; and which we shall mention in its proper place.

However, there was no yeilding so long as there was a stroak to be struck; and seeing the ends of the Party could not be compassed by Tumults and Riots, they tried what might be done by Law; for about the end of *Michaelmas-Term*, after the new Mayor and Sheriffs had been Sworn, and in actual Administration of their Offices; a motion was made in the Court of *King's Bench* for a *Mandamus* to be directed to Sir *John Moor* and the Aldermen of *London*, to Swear either *Gould* or *Cornish* into the Office of Mayor of *London*:

1683.

don: But this being lookt upon as ridiculous, and accordingly rejected by the Court. In April following, 1683, they attempted the highest piece of Insolence, and Affront to the Government of the City, that ever was acted or thought on in *London*; one *Broom*, Clark of Skinners Company, having at the Suite of *Papillion* and *Dubois*, two private Citizens, but pretendedly Elected Sheriffs, Arrested the Lord Mayor, Sheriff *North*, and some Loyal Aldermen, upon a Publick and City Concern, as it was given out, and for some time detain'd them Prisoners in *Skinner's-Hall*.

This will appear to be the bolder, that now they had occasion to observe that Faction was no longer to out-dare the Government, nor the Supporters and Lovers of it, to be run down with Impunity; and they could not forget, that in November before, *Pilkington*, the late Sheriff, was at the *King's Bench Bar*, cast in an Action of *Scandalum Magnum*, at the Suite of his Royal Highnes the Duke of *York*, who had an Hundred Thousand Pounds Damages given him by the Jury. Nor, indeed, did *Papillion* come off scot-free neither, having been cast in an Action brought against him by Sir *William Pritchard* for that illegal Arrest, and Sentenced to pay 10000*l.* Damages to the Plaintiff: But this was after the great Riot committed at the last Election of the Sheriffs of *London*, was tried at the *Guild-Hall* of the City, on the Eighth of *May*, 1683, when Fourteen of the chief Rioters were found Guilty; to wit, The two Sheriffs, *Pilkington* and *Shute*, the Lord *Gray of Wark*, Sir *Thomas Player*, *Cornish*, *Bethel*, *Zinks*, *Goodenough*, *Deagle*, *Zekel*, *Freeman*, *Wickham*, *Keys*, and *Swinock*, who were all severally Fined.

Sir *Patience Ward* also, one of the Aldermen, and who had been Lord Mayor of the City of *London*, was on the last Saturday of *Easter-Term* this year, Tried for Perjury, and convicted at the *King's Bench Bar*, for giving false Evidence upon Oath in the Causē before Tried betwixt the Duke and *Pilkington*. This shews what Principles the men were of, who at that time set up

up for the greatest Purity of Religion: But for the Honour of the Famous City of *London*, it should not have been mentioned here, had not some worthy Aldermen of the *Bench*, who derested such damnable Prevarication, asserted both the Loyalty and Integrity of that Honourable Court, by giving the fullest Evidence against him. In the beginning of *Trinity-Term*, likewise, Judgement was given in the Court of *King's Bench*, in the *Quo Warranto*, brought against the City of *London*, when after long Pleadings on both sides, the Court unanimously declared their Opinion, *That the Liberties and Franchises of the City of London be Seized into the King's Hands*. However, the Judgement was not Entered till sometime after.

All things were now quiet, and the just animadversion of the Laws seemed to have stilled the restless Rage of the People; when, of a sudden, the Nation was again terrified and allarm'd with the sound of a fresh Storm of Plots and Conspiracies.

Whilst the Duke of *Monmouth* had leave to Roam and Scamper about the Kingdom, and in several Countries make his Court to the Mobile, by all the ways of an obliging Familiarity that might gain or confirm a Party; there was no great necessity of out-running the Constable, nor of Poasting into Rebellion; whilst Faction long born with in several Houses of Commons, made Sedition in a manner Exemplary, and the Seditious hopeful to compass their ends by drawing Condescents from the Government; nay, and whilst such Magistrates could still be had in *London*, as might not onely connive at, but even Protect Seditious Criminals from the Prosecution of the Laws, by means of Juries who were resolved, whatever they Swore, never to find any thing to the Detriment of their Party and Cause: Whilst, I say, the Kingdom was under such circumstances, and the Illusions of *Oates's Popish Plot*, were not as yet fully dispersed, some hopes still remained amongst all the Stubborn Parties, that by their usual perverse Arts and Refractorines, they might tire out the

H h 2

Con-

Constancy of their Rulers, and without evident risk of Lives or Fortunes, at long run slyly attain to what they drove at : But no sooner was their chief Fort in danger of being Stormed by Re-setling the Magistracy of the City of *London*, upon the true and solid *Basis* of Honesty and Loyalty, then they began to Despair of being able to under-mine the Government by cunctation, or to secure themselves from Punishment for their repeated violations of Duty and Obedience, any other way than by a speedy and brisk Rebellion.

Much about the time then of the Riots and Turnults in *London* about the Election of Sheriffs, the year before 1682, many who foresaw themselves and interests to be in all probability undone, if men true to the Established Government should be put into place in that City, began to consult together in Clubs and Cabals, and soon stated a formed Conspiracy, which, like Wild-fire, in a moment, flew over most of the Counties of *England*, that of a long while had been prepared to receive any the least sparks of a Rebellion. But it seemed necessary also that *Scorland* should be drawn into the common Concern, and the Discontents and Divisions of that Kingdom, which were grown to a great height, easily made way for a Coalition, as will hereafter appear : In the mean time, it is not to be expected that a full Account of all the Parts, Passages, and Intrigues of that deep Conspiracy, can be deduced at large within the bounds of this small Manual, the Actors having been so many, and the Scenes so various, it required an ample Description by it self ; and that has been done by Authority, in a Book called, *A True Account and Declaration of a Horrid Conspiracy against the late King, &c.* to which the Reader is referred for a genuine and true Narrative of the whole Plot, and an ingenious and impartial Character of all the chief Conspirators, whom we shall onely name, in relating the chief Heads of the Hellish Design, which in short was this :

A general Insurrection was to be made in most Counties of *England* at the same time ; either beginning in

In some remote Country, as *Shaftsbury* advised it should be in *Cheshire*, where the Rebels were to declare for a free Parliament ; or else in *London* where the Force was most united, and by the Assistance of some Horse from the adjoining Counties, his Majesty and the Royal Family might easily be secured and disposed off at the pleasure of the Conspirators ; and that was the Opinion which most prevailed. This train was laid before any Confederacy was settled with the *Scots*, because the imminent Peril they lay under, if the Sheriffs then declared Elect, should peaceably enter into place, would not admit of any long Treaty, though it had been set on foot before ; which was partly the reason also that some proposed the Assassination of the King and Duke, as the most compendious way of bringing about their Designes : but that Proposition was then only started, though afterwards it came to be more seriously Debated, and villainously Resolved upon. The chief Persons who have been clearly proved to be most notoriously Guilty of this Damnable Treason, either in one or both parts of the Conspiracy, the Insurrection and Assassination, are these that follow :

In the first place, *Anthony Earl of Shaftsbury*, who, as being supreme Moderator and Director of the chief Councils of the Conspirators, whilst he lived, may very well deserve the first place in this Seditious Catalogue, after him the Duke of *Monmouth*, the Lord *Gray of Wark*, the Earl of *Essex*, the Lord *Howard of Escrick*, the Lord *Russel*, Eldest Son to the Earl of *Bedford*, Colonel *Algernoon Sidney*, Mr. *John Hambden* the Younger, Sir *Thomas Armstrong*, Lieutenant Colonel *Walcot*, an Officer in *Cromwell's Army*, Colonel *John Rumbold*, Thomas *Shepheard*, a Merchant in *London*, Richard and Francis *Goodenoughs*, Brothers, Major *Holms*, another old Officer of *Cromwell's*, Richard *Rumbald*, a Maltster, one of the same Oliverian Gang, William *Rumbald* his Brother, *Aaron Smith*, a Lawyer, William *Hone*, a Joyner, John *Rouse*, Zachary *Bourn*, a Brewer, John *Ayloff*, Joseph *Teyley*, Edward *Norton*, Edward *Wade*, Richard *Nelthorpe*,

*throp, Robert West, &c.* These had brought the Work pretty forward on in *England*, and the *Scots* no farther concerned in it as yet, than some Overtures made to the Earl of *Argyle*, (who having demanded Thirty Thousand Pounds to provide necessary Preparations for an Insurrection in *Scotland*, and finding no likelihood of obtaining so great a Sum, withdrew into *Holland* for his safety;) when contrary to hope, and perhaps the expectation of the Conspirators, the new Sheriffs, whom *Shaftsbury* particularly dreaded, fairly, and without any opposition, entered into their Office on *Michaelmas* Day, being the usual time. This so allarmed *Shaftsbury*, who well knew what the consequences of that might prove, that he presently absconded, and did what he could to terrifie the rest into speedy Action, by the horrour of the present imminent dangers: However, some Jealousies betwixt him and *Monmouth*, who mutually suspected one another, and not without reason, of carrying on separate Designs, clogg'd the Expedition; until these being seemingly removed, several Days, and at last the Nineteenth of November was fixed on for the Rising, the several Assemblies and Clubs having taken care both in City and Country, that all things should be in readiness; and the Duke of *Monmouth*, Lord *Gray*, and Sir *Thomas Armstrong*, having Viewed the Posture of the Guards, and reported to the rest, the feasibility of Surprising and Seizing them. But before the day arrived, *Shaftsbury* being informed by the great Council of the Conspirators, that their Friends in the *West*, especially in *Taunton* and *Devonshire*, could not so soon be in a readiness; he began then to despair, and removing down to *Wapping*, where he and the Cause had many Friends, he privately took Shipping for *Holland*, leaving his Friends with this ominous Prognostick, That their Design could not long be concealed, there being so many acquainted with it. Which proved, indeed, true, though he lived not to see it fulfilled.

After *Shaftsbury's* Death, the conduct of the Conspiracy moved upon other Hinges; for whilst he was alive

alive and in *England*, all the Deliberations of the Conspirators seemed to receive life and vertue from his Direction and Approbation: But now he is gone, they thought fit to mould themselves into several Cabals and Committees: There was a Supream Council, made up of the Persons following, viz. The Duke of *Monmouth*, the Earl of *Essex*, the Lord *Gray*, the Lord *Russel*, the Lord *Howard*, Colonel *Algernon Sidney*, and Mr. *John Hambden*, Junior; amongst whom, upon some special occasions, *Romzey*, *Armstrong*, *Ferguson*, *Shepheard*, and some others, were admitted: These met at Mr. *Hambden's* House, the Lord *Russel's*, but most frequently at Mr. *Shepheard's* in *Abchurch-Lane*; whilst other inferior Junto's Assembled at Mr. *West's* Chamber in the *Temple*, and several publick Houses, in and about *London*, to consult and communicate their Resolutions one to another.

Amongst several Expedients proposed and debated in the grand Council, who had the universal Inspection of the Affair; it was thought necessary to send into *Scotland*, and call from thence some Gentlemen who had been before invited by *Shaftsbury* to come up, under pretext of settling a Plantation in *Carolina*; at what time Colonel *Walcot* was also sent for from *Ireland*, in order (as it was given out) to be Governour of the Place: So that the *Scottish* Conspirators came now to be named in their turn; and they were these:

First, The Earl of *Argyle*, the *Scottish Shaftsbury*, who having made his Escape out of the Castle of *Edinburgh*, where he lay under a Sentence of Death for Treason and *Leasing-making*, was now in *Holland*; Sir *Hugh* and Sir *John Campbell*, Father and Son, Relations of the said Earl's; Sir *John Cochran*; Mr. *William Baillie*; and Commissary *Monroe*, who were the Commissioners invited up to Treat with their Brethren in *England*; James *Stewart*, a Lawyer; the Lord *Melvill*, Married to the Duchess of *Monmouth's* Sister; Sir *Patrick Hume of Polnart*; —— *Pringle of Torwoodlie*; —— *Denham of East-Sheels*; —— *Montgomery* of *Hill 4*

of Lenshaw; Hugh Scot of Gallow-Sheels; James Murray of Philiphaugh; with some other inferiour Agents, as William Castares, a Conventicle-Preacher at Theobalds; William Spence, Servant to the Earl of Argyle; and John Risbet, who were employed in carrying to and fro the Traitorous Correspondence betwixt the Conspirators of both Kingdoms, and Argyle in Holland: all men notoriously known to be Disaffected to the Government, some out of Interest and Revenge, and the greater part through a furious Zeal of Enthusiasme. But of all the Conspirators, whether English or Scots, no man deserved better to be Shaftsbury's Darling, nor acted with more envenomed Malice in promoting both parts of the Conspiracy, the Insurrection, and Assassination, than Robert Ferguson, a bloody minded Independent Preacher about London, who is here named last amongst his Country men, though he went before them all as well in order of time, as in the degree of Traitorous Villany.

Both parts of the Conspiracy were now carried on with more vigour than ever; for though it doth not appear that the Assassination came upon the Carpet, and was formally debated amongst those of the Supream Council, yet the harmony and consent of all the Cabals, and the free Communication of the most secret Resolutions that past amongst them, by means of Ferguson, and some other Harbingers, put it past all doubt, that they were acquainted with it.

The most active Sticklers had many times occasion to speak of the matter, before those who were Strangers to it; and therefore they invented a Jargon whereby they veiled their Treason under canting Terms and borrowed Words: The King they sometimes called Church-Warden of White-hall; the King and Duke the Black-bird and the Gold-finck; the Captain and the Lieutenant. Blunderbusses, Muskets, and Pistols, went by the names of Swan-quills, Goose-quills, Crow-quills; the Insurrection was stiled the General point, the Assassination the Lopping point, and striking at the Head,

with

with several other names borrowed from Terms of Law.

As to the point of the Insurrection: The City of London was to be divided into Twenty Parts, each part being to furnish a competent number of Men, who in time of Action were to be commanded by some of the old Officers of Oliver's Army, that were in Town purposely for that end: The Counties were also to be in readiness at the nick of time, and the Rebels in every one of them to be Commanded by a trusty and experienced Head. In the mean time active Agents were employed in London to advance the Work by encouraging their Friends that were privy to the Design, and bringing in such as they knew to be Disaffected, by starting the matter first in general and ambiguous Terms, according to instructions given them, and then as they found them susceptible, coming closer home, and laying open the whole Intrigue. Ways were also conserfed for bringing in the Sea-men about Wapping, who, they thought, might be Discontented for want of Pay. And when all things should thus be in a readines, it was resolved that the Tower of London should be attempted by Stratagem, the Savoy forced, the Guards surprized, and the King and Court beset in White-hall; which was to be Assaulted on all Hands, both by Water and by Land; not doubting but there to make sure of the King, his Brother, and Friends, or at least if they should attempt to flie, to intercept them by men Posted purposely upon all the Roads about, to hinder their Escape: And all things thus succeeding, that they might not want any necessary means for pursuing their Treason to the utmost point, they projected the seizing the King's Money in the Custom-House, Excise-Office, Chimney-Money, the Plate of Lombard-Street, and the Cash of the Wealthy Citizens, who, if they seemed unwilling to part with it, Ferguson the Tygre, advised that soine of them should be Hanged up for a Terroure to the rest: But, once for all, let it be observed, that the execution of all these and many more Treasons and

Cry-

## CHARLES II.

Cruelties was proposed before they had agreed upon any form of Government to be set up in place of that which they Traitorously designed to pull down.

At the same time the *Lopping Point*, as they called it, the Assassination was as briskly agitated in the inferior private Cabals : The Politicians amongst them lookt upon it as the more compendious and expedite way of compassing their Designs ; and the tender Conscienced, such as *Richard Rumbald* and *Goodenough*, affirmed the Killing the King and Duke to be the more Pious, in that they thereby obeyed a Commandment, and would prevent the shedding of Christian Bloud : Many ways were, therefore, proposed for effecting this heynous Parricide ; some were for having them set upon in St. James's Park, as they were going privately and ill attended to St. James's ; others for Sinking their Barge when they went down the River for their Diversion ; others again were for Shooting them with Pocket-Blunderbusses in the *Play-House*, (which extreamly pleased *Ferguson*, who thereupon said, That then they would die in their Calling;) or else to do it in their return to *White-hall* by the Wall in *Covent-Garden* ; others were for undertaking it between *Windfor* and *Hampton-Court*, in their going to *Winchester* ; or if they should both come to the *Bull-Feast* in *Red-Lion-Fields*.

But that which pleased all best, and was concluded upon, was to attempt it upon his Majesty and the Duke's return this Year from *Newmarket* ; the place to be at *Rye-House* in *Hartford-shire*, within two Miles of *Hodsdon* ; the manner, By a Party of Forty Desperadoes armed with Blunderbusses and Pistols, and Commanded by *Rumbald* and *Walcot*, who were privately to Muster at the said *Rye-House*, against the Day of the King's coming back ; and whilst the King's Coach should be pestered by a Stop made with a Cart, purposedly overturned in a narrow passage of the Way, some should Fight the small Guard that might attend his Majesty, and others Fire with Blunderbusses into the

## CHARLES II.

the Coach, kill both the Royal Brothers at the same time, and then make their Escape the best way they could : One-eyed *Rumbald* undertook to be the Marksman with the Blunderbus, which he profaenly said *Ferguson* should Consecrate ; and *Walcot*, who stood upon a point of Honour, not to Kill any man basely, was to Charge and Fight the Guards.

Every thing being accordingly adjusted, Arms provided, and the List of the Forty Miscreants almost compleated ; the glad hopes of Succes began to appear in the looks and carriages of the hellish Conspirators ; and as if the Shedding of Innocent and Royal Bloud had been the Offering of an Acceptable and Meritorious Sacrifice to the Almighty, by whom Kings Reign, they sported themselves in their inhumane Cruelty and Barbarous Revenge ; not onely Drinking merry Healths to *Rumbald and his Boys* ; by whom they meant, *Rumbald* and his Bloud-Hounds ; *Confusion to the two Brothers, Popery and Slavery* ; meaning his Majesty and his Royal Brother ; but Triumphantlly entertaining one another with the new invented Punishments, which were to be inflicted upon the true Friends of the King and Kingdom, who had nobly withstood their Treasonable Practises, and were therefore designed by them for a Massacre.

Some of the more eminently Loyal Citizens, Judges, and Parliament men were to be Hanged and Flea'd, their Skins Stuffed and Hung up as Scare-crows to terrifie all Loyal men, in *Guild-hall*, *Westminster-hall*, and the House of Commons ; and the Lord Keeper *North* was to be Hanged on *Colledge's Gallows* at *Oxford*.

But whilst with strange Presumption and Diabolical Remoslesness they are thus feeding their accursed Hopes, it pleased God Almighty to defeat all their pernicious Counsels in a trice, by suffering an auspicious Fire, (which they themselves could not but call a *Providential Fire*) to break out at *Newmarket*, that obliged the King and Court to return from thence some days sooner

sooner than his Majesty had intended, whereby their Traitorous Ambuscado was rendered wholly ineffectual.

The Traitors were at first stunn'd with the happy news of this unexpected Delivery, and their resentments of it appeared both in their looks and words ; for amongst others, *Walcot* said, *He thought it an Expression of God's disapproving the undertaking* ; which shewed somewhat more of Relentment, than the saying of Implacable *Ferguson*, *That he perceived God had reserved his Majesty for his own Judgement*. But as Rebellion and Treason are like the Sin of Witchcraft, seldom repented of ; so this plain testimony of God Almighty's disliking their Designs, instead of breaking them off, made them pursue them with as great eagerness as ever.

And now the Treaty with the *Scottish* Commissioners advances apace ; for no sooner were the *Scots* at *London* informed by their Correspondents in *Scotland*, that the People of that Kingdom were in a greater readiness for a Rebellion than they had at first imagined ; but they strike in with the *English*, and agree, upon some conditions, that the hot-headed *Scots* shall rise first, the *English* upon speedy notice given, immediately second them ; that the Rebellion in both Kingdoms shall be before Harvest ; that Arms and Ammunition shall be transported out of *Holland* into *Scotland*, whither *Argyle* should hasten to head the Insurrection.

These things in the main were quickly concluded, but other matters stuck, and were like to have spoiled all : The *English* would have had the *Scots* declare presently for a Commonwealth and the extirpation of Monarchy : But the *Scots* would not, affirming, *That the generality of their People would never hearken to that at first*.

Next, *Thirty Thousand Pounds* was demanded by the *Scots*, to be by them laid out for Arms, Ammunition, &c. but the *English*, after much ado, and many Expostulations from *Argyle* and his Agents, could be brought

brought to no more than *Ten Thousand*, and many delays and scruples interposed too for the raising of it ; which made the *Scots* talk high, and tell the *English*, *That they were onely good at Fire-side Plotting* ; whereas, for their part, they were resolved to Rise, though they had nothing but their Claws to Fight with. However, at length they came to an Agreement, *That the Ten Thousand Pounds should be raised, and put into the hands of Shepheard, who was to return the Bills for it by Ferguson or Baillie, to Amsterdam*.

So far was this Hellish Conspiracy carried on, (as by the Printed History of it appears) when a timely Discovery stopt it in its Career : *Josiah Keeling*, Citizen and Salter of *London*, a man whom perverse Principles, as to Religion and Government, had transported into horrid undertakings ; for he was one that assisted at the sawcy Arresting of the Lord Mayor of *London* ; and was also to have been one of the Forty Assassins, who, with *Rumbald* and *Walcot*, were to have Murthered the King and Duke at the *Rye-house* ; this man, I say, having for some time laboured under great disquiet of Mind, and the lashes of a tormenting Conscience, for being concerned in the heynous Guilt of this Damnable Conspiracy, on the Twelfth of June, 1683, appeared voluntarily before Sir *Lionel Jenkins*, principal Secretary of State, and there made open confession of the whole matter, and Swore to his Depositions : But the horridnes of the Treason making the King and Council for some time suspend their belief and acting, till the truth was confirmed by *John Keeling* the Brother of the first Discoverer ; it gave opportunity to many of the Conspirators to make their Escape, and save themselves beyond Seas : the rest either absconded at first, but afterwards came in and confess, or were apprehended ; and of these, some also had their Lives respited, and confessed, and others suffered.

The first that was brought to Tryal was Colonel *Walcot*, on the Twelfth of July, at the *Old-Bayley* : The chief Evidence against him were, Colonel *Rumsey*, *Josiah*,

## CHARLES II.

*Siba Keeling, Zachary Bourn, and Robert West*; and upon clear Evidence he was found Guilty. Next day *William Lord Russel* was Arraigned at the same place, during whose Tryal, sad News was brought into Court, that the Earl of *Essex* had Cut his own Throat in the *Tower of London*; the Evidence against the Lord *Russel* were, *Colonel Rumsey, Mr. Shepheard, and the Lord Howard of Escrick*. The same day also *Hone* and *Rouse* were Tried, and all three upon clear Evidence found Guilty: *Walcot, Hone, and Rouse*, were according to Sentence pronounced against them, on *Friday* the Twentieth of *July*, Drawn, Hang'd, and Quartered at *Tyburn*; all confessing their Crimes at their Death: And next day being *Saturday*, the Lord *Russel* was Beheaded on a Scaffold purposely erected in *Lincolns Inn Fields*, where, before he suffered, he put a Paper, as his last Speech, into the hands of one of the Sheriffs of *London*, wherein, by affecting a vain popularity to the last, in mincing and extenuating his Guilt, he dishonoured his Memory more, than if by a plain confession of the Truth that was fully made out against him, he had given Glory to God, and taken the Shame that was due to himself.

The rest that suffered in *England* for this Conspiracy, were *Colonel Algernoon Sidney*, who was Beheaded on *Tower-hill* the Seventh of *December* following, Dying in his own whimsical Opinion, a Martyr to the good Old Cause; *James Holloway*; and *Sir Thomas Armstrong*, who being Out-law'd, were both taken, the one in *Mavis in the West-Indies*, and the other in *Leyden in Holland*, brought over to *England*, and the year following, Drawn, Hang'd, and Quartered; *Holloway* confessing all, and *Armstrong* braving Heaven, and belying men by an impudent kind of justifying himself to the last.

None suffered in *Scotland* except *William Baillie of Jerswood*; but all the Conspirators of that Kingdom, who were taken, fully confess, and confirmed the truth of what the *English* Discoverers had Sworn to.

And

## CHARLES II.

And thus you have the sum of what this horrid Phantastical and Republican Plot produced in this King's Reign; who, for His, and the Kingdoms happy deliverance from it, appointed a Day of Thanksgiving to be kept both through *England* and *Scotland* on the 9th of *September*; at which time his Majesty's Declaration to his Subjects, giving an Account of the Horrid Conspiracy, was publickly to be Read in all Churches; and accordingly both were Solemnized and performed. But it is time now to mind other occurrences.

About the time of the Discovery of the above-mentioned Plot, *Prince George*, Brother to the King of *Denmark*, arrived in *England*, and on the Twenty Eighth of *July* following, was, late in the Evening, Married to the Lady *Ann*, second Daughter to our present Gracious King *James the Second*.

*Tangier in Africa*, a place which had cost the King an infinite Treasure in maintaining a Garrison, and building Fortifications, and a Mole, as it did many brave Subjects their Lives in defending it against the *Mores*; and which the Factious in Parliament would have had annexed to the Crown, though some of the same Character, afterwards, would not part from a Farthing of Money for Succouring it when it was straightly Besieged; was this year flighted, Demolished, the Mole blown up, and the Harbour, as much as could be, spoiled; that it might not be useful to any other Nation, since, after long and expensive Experience, it was found, that it could not answer the ends for which it had been designed by the *English*.

This was doing abroad with a Fleet of Ships under the Command of the Lord *Dartmouth*, when the voluntary coming in of the Duke of *Monmouth*, the supposed Head of the Conspiracy, seemed to confirm the Calm the Nation now enjoyed at home, and ease the People of their Fears of any more intestine Broils, as the other did the King's Exchequer of unnecessary Charges.

## CHARLES II.

Charges. November the Twenty Fourth, he surrendered himself to Mr. Secretary Jenkins, made an ample Confession of the Conspiracy, seemed submissively to implore the King's Mercy, and his Royal Highness's Pardon for all his Crimes and Miscarriages, and was received into Favour; but no sooner had he got his Pardon, which, with all diligence, was expedited under the Great Seal, and importuned back from his Majesty a Letter which he had Written, by way of Confession, under his own hand, but by an unaccountable piece of conduct, he retracted all, fell again into Disgrace, and was Banished the Court, where, so long as he lived, he never after appeared.

This year was shut in with such an extraordinary Frost, as History can hardly parallel in this Kingdom; it lasted from the middle of December to the Fifth of February, during most part of which time the Thames was Frozen over so hard, and the Ice was so strong and solid, that Shops and Tradesmen were set up upon the River, and Coaches plied as confidently from the Temple-Stairs to Westminster, as if it had been by Land.

It was now high time that innocent Persons, who had survived the Persecution and Oppression of turbulent Times, should be relieved; that the causes of such disorders should, as much as might, be removed for the future; and that Factious and Restless People, who had contributed thereto, be punished for their Sedition: In accomplishing of those just ends, the last year of this King's Reign and Life, was wholly employed.

And first, the Lords who for Six years time had been detained Prisoners in the Tower, and the Earl of Tyrone, who had lain very near as long in the Gate-house, and often, but in vain, moved that they might be Bailed out, were now in Hilary Term, 1684, admitted to Bayl by the Lord Chief Justice Jefferys, and the rest of the Judges of the King's Bench. The Names of the

1684.

## CHARLES II.

the Lords were, the Earl of Danby, whose Case differed from the rest; the Earl of Powis; the Lord Arundel of Warder; the Lord Bellasis; and the aforesaid Earl of Tyrone: which Four, with the Lord Peters, who in January before died in his Confinement, were committed upon the account of Oates's Plot.

In the next place, it being evident, that the Seed of Sedition was sown most in Incorporated Towns and Societies, it was thought fit for rooting of it out, to have their Priviledges Tried by a Quo Warranto: but the Loyal Corporations being willing to have their Ancient Priviledges Confirmed, and new ones Granted them, and the others not daring to stand it out, after that the City of London had Forfeited theirs, prevented the trouble and charge, by a voluntary resignation of their Charters into the King's hands.

And lastly, several busie men in the Nation were for Seditious words and actions brought to Tryal, Sentenced, and punished according to their demerit; of whom I shall onely instance one for all.

*Titus Oates*, the two Edged Tool of Swearing, whose hellish Tongue cut both ways, for, or against the King, as it was set on by Faction or Interest, had been ever since August 1681, that he appeared for Colledge against the King at Oxford, turned out of White-hall and his Pension; but living amongst his bountiful Benefactors in London, he was in May 1684, Arrested in the Amsterdam Coffee-House in an Action of *Scandalum Magnatum*, at the Suit of his Royal Highness the Duke of York, for calling the said Duke Traitor, and other scandalous Names: He removed himself from Wood-street Counter to the King's-Bench, where upon his suffering Judgment to go against him, by Default, a Jury for Inquiry of Damages, upon hearing the Evidence, gave 100000*l.* Damages; for which, and other Crimes, he hath lain there in Prison ever since.

I i

In

## CHARLES II.

In Michaelmas Term following, he, the said *Oates*, was Indicted for Perjury in the King's-Bench Court; and afterwards in December, another Indictment of Perjury was brought against him at the Sessions House in the Old-Bayley; both which Indictments were to have been Tryed in the King's-Bench Court next Term, but the Death of the King intervening, respite him till the Reign of his present Majesty; when he was Tryed, Convicted, and Sentenced for notorious Perjury, for which he hath already suffered in part, and must suffer more as long as he lives.

Monday Morning, February the Second, 1684, the King was suddenly taken with a Fit of an Apoplexy, but upon Bloud-Letting, and the use of other proper Remedies, he came to his Senses again, and continued so, but in a weak and languishing condition, till Friday the Sixth of the same Month, when about Noon he Died.

His Death was exceedingly bewailed by all Persons of all Parties, and of all Ranks and Conditions; but by none more than by his Dearest Brother and Successour, our present most Gracious Sovereign, who signalized his Love to him at his Death, as he had done his Duty and Allegiance during the whole course of his Life.

He was Buried privately in King Henry's Chapel, in Westminster, where he has a lovely Effigies of Wax placed among those of many of his Predecessors. He left no Lawful Issue by his Queen Catherine of Portugal; but many Natural Children of both Sexes, by several Women; of all whom he was extreamly fond.

This Prince deserves an ample Character, which, doubtless, will be given Him in a larger Volume, and by a better Pen: In the mean time it may be truely said of him in general, That he was a Prince who saw Fortune in all her Aspects, and though he

tasted

## CHARLES II.

tasted abundantly of her Favours, yet he may be called a King of Sufferings; having unhappily suffered two things too long, Banishment in the beginning of his Reign, and Plots in the latter end of it.

F I N I S. Ex<sup>a</sup>.

## ERRATA.

Page 433, line 14. for Sence, read Scene. p. 434, l. 12.  
r. direct. p. 437, l. 29. r. Chancellour. p. 440, l. 11.  
for fresh r. Irish, ibid. r. Militia. p. 450, l. 9. r. import,  
ibid. l. 14. for discovering, r. disowning. p. 472, l. 5. r.  
John Wisbet. p. 475, l. 17. r. Hannibal instead of Rum-  
bald.